



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

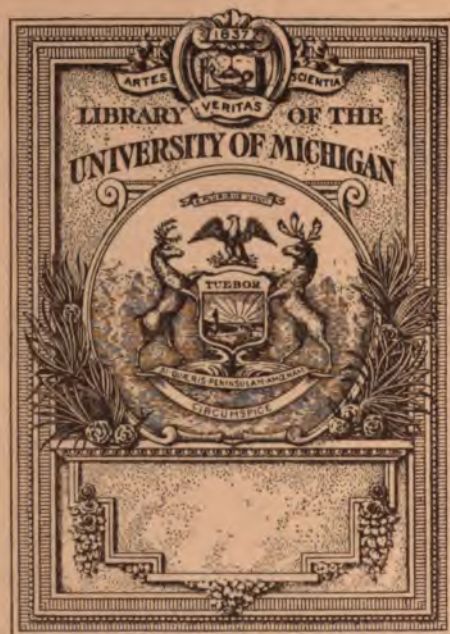
About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

A

451081

DUPL



JN
505
.A15
1751

6568

THE
PARLIAMENTARY
OR
CONSTITUTIONAL
History of England;
BEING A
FAITHFUL ACCOUNT

Of all the
Most remarkable TRANSACTIONS
In PARLIAMENT,
From the earliest TIMES,
TO THE
Restoration of King CHARLES II.

COLLECTED

From the RECORDS, the JOURNALS of both HOUSES, original MANUSCRIPTS, scarce SPEECHES, and TRACTS; all compared with the several Contemporary Writers, and connected, throughout, with the History of the Times.

By SEVERAL HANDS.

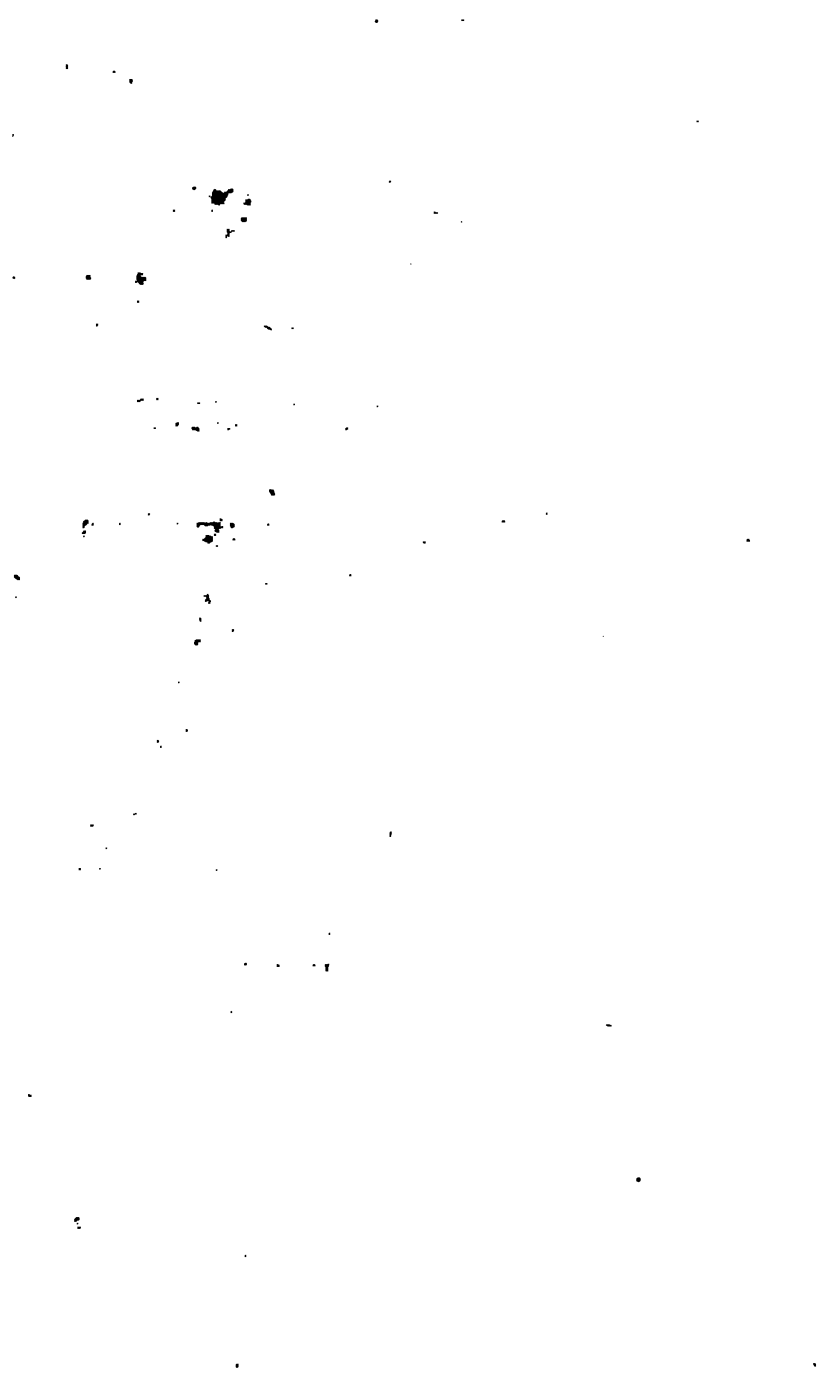
—*Juvat integros accedere Fontes.*

VOL. XVI.

From June 23, 1647, to Feb. 10, 1648.

L O N D O N,

Printed, and sold by WILLIAM SANDBY, against St. Dunstan's Church, Fleet-street. MDCCCLV.





T H E
Parliamentary History
O F
E N G L A N D.

ON the 23d of *June* the Lords pass'd An. 23. Car. I.
an Ordinance, sent up by the Com-
mons, for raising Moneys for the
Service of *England and Ireland*.
This was laying a Tax of 60,000*l.*
a Month, to continue for one Year,
viz. from the 25th of *March* then
past, to the 25th of *March* ensuing: A heavy Load,
after all their former Pressures, on this miserable
Kingdom.

1647.

June.

An Ordinance
for a monthly
Assessment of
60,000*l.*

The respective Sums, charged upon each County by the said Ordinance, were as follows:

	<i>l.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>
<i>Bedfordshire,</i>	673	13	11½
<i>Berkshire,</i>	683	15	9
<i>Buckinghamshire,</i>	815	8	0
<i>Cambridgeshire,</i>	1462	16	6½
<i>Isle of Ely</i>	490	18	0½
<i>VOL. XVI.</i>	<i>A</i>		<i>Cheshire</i>

2 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

			<i>l.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>
An. 23. 1647. June.	Car. 1.	<i>Cheshire,</i> — — —	345	4	11½
		<i>Chester City and County thereof,</i> — — —	39	13	11
		<i>Cornwall,</i> — — —	1228	5	6½
		<i>Cumberland,</i> — — —	342	9	4
		<i>Derbyshire,</i> — — —			
		<i>Devonshire,</i> — — —			
		<i>Exeter City and County thereof,</i> — — —	117	9	2½
		<i>Dorsetshire,</i> — — —	935	10	10½
		<i>Poole Town and County,</i> — — —	9	16	7
		<i>Durham,</i> — — —	159	2	0
		<i>Essex,</i> — — —	4547	9	5
		<i>Gloucestershire,</i> — — —	1212	2	5
		<i>Gloucester City and County } thereof,</i> — — —	134	13	9
		<i>Hertfordshire,</i> — — —	1638	15	5½
		<i>Herefordshire,</i> — — —	168	2	3
		<i>Huntingdonshire,</i> — — —	687	3	5½
		<i>Kent and Canterbury, with the } Cinque Ports,</i> — — —	4763	1	1
		<i>Lancashire,</i> — — —	529	3	2
		<i>Leicestershire,</i> — — —	467	9	10½
		<i>Lincolnshire,</i> — — —	153	8	1½
		<i>Lincoln City and County thereof,</i> — — —	64	12	9½
		<i>Middlesex and Westminster,</i> — — —	1521	17	9
		<i>London,</i> — — —	3907	19	2½
		<i>Monmouthshire,</i> — — —	192	19	1
		<i>Northamptonshire,</i> — — —	591	11	11½
		<i>Nottinghamshire,</i> — — —	353	19	3
		<i>Nottingham Town and County } thereof,</i> — — —	11	14	6
		<i>Norfolk,</i> — — —	4763	1	1
		<i>Norwich City and County } thereof,</i> — — —	246	11	5½
		<i>Northumberland,</i> — — —	100	16	10½
		<i>Newcastle Town,</i> — — —	29	17	0
		<i>Oxfordshire,</i> — — —	779	13	11½
		<i>Rutlandshire,</i> — — —	128	1	0½
		<i>Shropshire,</i> — — —	553	19	9½

Staff-

▪ The Sums assessed upon *Derbyshire*, *Devonshire*, and *Torkshire* are omitted.

Of ENGLAND. 3

	<i>l.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>	
Staffordshire, — — —	454	15	4 $\frac{3}{4}$	An. 23. Cap. 1. 1647. June.
Litchfield, — — —	10	14	8	
Somersetshire, — — —	2050	11	5	
Bristol City and County thereof,	112	12	10 $\frac{1}{2}$	
Southampton County, — — —	1514	4	5 $\frac{1}{2}$	
Southampton Town and Coun- ty thereof, — — — }	62	8	8 $\frac{1}{2}$	
Isle of Wight, — — —	208	2	6 $\frac{1}{2}$	
Suffolk, — — —	4763	1	1	
Surrey and Southwark, — — —	1347	8	0	
Sussex and the Ports, — — —	2646	2	9 $\frac{3}{4}$	
Warwickshire, — — —	621	3	0 $\frac{3}{4}$	
Coventry City and County thereof,	679	10	0	
Worcestershire, — — —	704	18	0 $\frac{1}{2}$	
Worcester City and County thereof, — — — }	43	5	6 $\frac{1}{2}$	
Wiltshire, — — —	1421	18	9 $\frac{3}{4}$	
Westmoreland, — — —	66	9	2 $\frac{1}{2}$	
Yorkshire, — — —				
Kingston upon Hull — — —	50	18	9	

W A L E S.

Anglesey, — — —	50	17	10
Brecknockshire, — — —	50	10	0
Cardiganshire, — — —	122	9	10 $\frac{3}{4}$
Carmarthenshire, — — —	100	15	6
Carnarvonshire, — — —	42	6	5 $\frac{1}{2}$
Denbighshire, — — —	54	6	10
Flintshire, — — —	33	9	4 $\frac{1}{2}$
Glamorganshire, — — —	131	15	10
Merionethshire, — — —	31	11	6
Montgomeryshire, — — —	123	2	8 $\frac{1}{2}$
Pembrokeshire, — — —	116	4	7 $\frac{1}{2}$
Haverford-West, — — —	10	2	6 $\frac{1}{2}$
Radnorshire, — — —	73	2	7 $\frac{1}{2}$

June 24. A Packet was presented to the House of Lords, from the Earl of Nottingham, one of their Commissioners residing with the Army, addressed to the Earl of Manchester, containing

4 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 23. Car. 1. *An HUMBLE REMONSTRANCE from his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax and the Army under his Command, concerning the present State of Affairs in relation to themselves and the Kingdom, with their Desires and present Resolutions thereupon.*
 1647.
 June.

St. Alban's, June 23, 1647.

A second Remonstrance from the Army to the Parliament,

OUR Desires, as Soldiers, in behalf of ourselves and other Soldiers that have faithfully served the Parliament in this Kingdom; as also our remaining Dissatisfactions, in relation thereunto, may be clearly collected out of our several Papers that have formerly been presented to the Parliament concerning the same, to which Particulars we have not yet received any further Satisfaction.

In our late Representation it may appear what our Desires are, as Members of the Commonwealth, in behalf of ourselves and all others, for the clearing, settling, and securing of the Rights, Liberties, and Peace of the Kingdom; for the Justice, Reasonableness, Necessity, and common Concernment whereof unto all, we dare appeal to the whole Kingdom and the World; yet we have hitherto received no Answer thereunto, nor can we hear of any Consideration taken thereupon, to put the Things contained therein into any Way of Resolution or Dispatch.

We have since that, in pursuance of the first and second Heads of our Desires in the said Representation, delivered in a Charge^d against divers Persons, Members of the House of Commons, for divers Designs and Practices to the Abuse and Dishonour of the Parliament, the unsufferable Injury of the Army, the Infringement of the Rights and Liberties both of Soldiers and Subjects, the Breach or Hazard of the Peace of this Kingdom, and the Hindering of the Relief of Ire-

^b Printed for George Whittington, at the Sign of the Blue Anchor in Cornhill, near the Royal Exchange, London, 1647. This Remonstrance is not entered in the Journals of either House.

^c Vol. XV. p. 455. ^d Ibid. p. 470.

land, &c. Upon which, though the main Things charged, with the mischievous Effects and further dangerous Consequences of them, as also the constant and continued Activity of all or most of the Persons charg'd, in relation to those Things, for the most part are sufficiently and notoriously known, especially to the Parliament itself; yet we find neither any Thing done upon what is so known, nor any Way resolved on or admitted by the Parliament, for the Examination or Discovery of what is less evident unto them; but rather (as if neither the Things charged, nor the present sad Effects, nor future ill Consequences thereof, were at all considerable) the whole Business seems to be slightly passed over, or set aside.

Lastly, We did, with these, deliver in another Paper, whereof here is a Copy annex'd, containing divers just and necessary Things, which we did desire might be provided for and done for the better Proceeding in the Premises, with more Safety to ourselves and the Kingdom, and with more Assurance or Hopes of a timely and happy Issue: To which Things desired (which we think all Men will judge reasonable, just, and necessary) we have yet receiv'd no Answer or Resolution; nor can find any Consideration at all had of them, save that a Month's Pay is sent down for the Army; whilst those that have deserted the Army receive, at London, much more; and that some Votes have been passed for annulling the Orders of the pretended Committee of Safety about lifting Men and drawing of Forces together; which Votes we find rendered but vain and delusive by the continued under-hand Practices of those whom we have charged, and their Accomplices, in lifting and engaging Men for a new War; and, by a later Day's Votes, not admitting that the Forces so lifted or engaged should, by publick Order, be dismissed or discharged; which, with other Things, we cannot but attribute chiefly to the prevalent Influence of the same Persons.

A 3

Now,

Vol. XV. p. 473.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

6 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

‘ Now, whereas we find that our first Desire in
‘ the Paper last mentioned, for present suspending
‘ the Persons impeached from sitting in the House,
‘ is judged, by some, to be against the Course and
‘ Privilege of Parliament; or of ill Consequence in
‘ the Precedent of it, the Charge being but general,
‘ and no particular Proofs as yet produced to
‘ render the Proceeding legal; we cannot but remind
‘ the Parliament,

1. ‘ That as the most and main Things charged,
‘ with the sad Effects and Consequences of them,
‘ so the constant and continued Activity of all, or
‘ most of the Persons charged, in relation thereunto,
‘ in misinforming, deluding, abusing, or surprising
‘ the House, and otherwise, are sufficiently
‘ known to the Parliament itself; so as the House
‘ might, upon their past and present Cognizance of
‘ the same, most justly proceed to suspend them;
‘ as in many other Cases, upon far less Occasions,
‘ which never could have produced such sad Effects
‘ to the Kingdom, they have done many other of
‘ their Members, meerly for Words spoken, or
‘ Things moved in the House, alledged to be but
‘ against Order or Custom of the House; and this
‘ without any Trial, Proof, or Charge, but meerly
‘ upon the Houses own Cognizance of the Things,
‘ as we could instance in many Cases since this Parliament
‘ began.

2. ‘ Whereas many of the Things to which the
‘ Charge relates, are Things spoke, moved, or
‘ done in the House, so as we have yet no clear
‘ Way opened particularly to charge or mention
‘ them, or produce Proofs to them, without some
‘ Pretence against us of Breach of Privilege; and
‘ therefore (though we think no Privilege ought to
‘ protect evil Men in doing Wrong to Particulars or
‘ Mischief to the Public, yet) we have been hitherto
‘ so tender of Parliament Privileges, as that we
‘ have only remonstrated the Evil of such Things
‘ done; and supposing the House to have been (as
‘ we did and do believe, and if the Way were open
‘ without Breach of Privilege, should not doubt to
‘ prove

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

June,

* prove it was) some ways misinformed, deluded,
 * surprized, or otherwise abused in those Things
 * by evil Members, we have frequently, in former
 * Papers before the Charge, put the Parliament
 * upon it, who, without Colour of Breach of Pri-
 * vilege, might do it, to find out and discover who
 * they were that had so abused them, and to disen-
 * gage the Honour of Parliament from the evil
 * Practices and Designs of such Incendiaries. Now
 * since the same Difficulties or Prejudices be yet in
 * our Way, as to the particular Charge or Proof
 * of those Things against the Members; and the
 * Parliament (though so often put upon it in our
 * former Papers, yet through the powerful Inte-
 * rest of the Persons guilty) hath not taken any
 * Cognizance what Members or others have so
 * abused them, to draw the Parliament to such Dis-
 * honour and Inconveniences; we cannot but again
 * more fully and clearly assert, (as we have in for-
 * mer Papers, and shall yet more particularly, if
 * Need be, remonstrate) that divers Things lately
 * done and passed from the Parliament against this
 * Army (as particularly the Order for suppressing
 * the Petition^r, that high Declaration against it, and
 * against all that should proceed in it, putting the
 * faithful Servants of the Parliament and Kingdom
 * out of the Protection of Law, and exposing them
 * as Enemies to the State, &c. to the Forfeitures
 * of the Estates, Liberties, Life and all, but for
 * going about in an humble, peaceable, and inof-
 * fensive Way to desire what was undeniably their
 * Due and dearly earned, and many other such like
 * Proceedings, both against the Army and others)
 * do carry with them such a Face of Injustice, Op-
 * pression, Arbitrariness, and Tyranny, as, we
 * think, is not to be paralleled in any former
 * Proceedings of the most arbitrary Courts against
 * any private Men; but have brought in insuf-
 * ferable Dishonour upon the Parliamentary Au-
 * thority and Proceedings (which we are, and
 * others ought to be, deeply sensibly of); hath tend-
 * ed to disoblige all Men, especially Soldiers, from

* the

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

June.

the same; to destroy all just Freedom either of Soldiers or Subjects, and hath conduced to all other the sad Effects and worse Consequences expressed in the Charge; and gives us and others Cause to conclude that those Worthies who have formerly acted and carried on Things in Parliament for public Good, Right, and Freedom, are now awed or overborne by a prevailing Party of Men of other private Interests crept in; and that neither we nor any other can reasonably expect Right, Freedom, or Safety, as private Men, or to have Things acted in Parliament for public Good, while the same Persons continue there in the same Power to abuse the Name and Authority of Parliament, to serve and prosecute their private Interests and Passions; and, under the Privilege of Parliament, to shelter themselves under the worst of Evils or Mischiefs they can do, though to the Ruin of the Kingdom.

We are in this Case forced, to our great Grief of Heart, thus plainly to assert the present Evil and Mischief, together with the future worst Consequences of the Things lately done, even in the Parliament itself, which are too evident and visible to all; and so, in their proper Colours, to lay the same at the Parliament's Doors untill the Parliament shall be pleased, either of themselves to take Notice and rid the Houses of those who have any ways misinformed, deluded, surprized, or otherwise abused the Parliament, to the vehement pressing and passing of such foul Things there; or shall open to us and others some Way how we may regularly, and without the Scandal of breaking Privileges, come to charge and prosecute those particular Persons that, in Truth, have so abused the Parliament, as well as ourselves, even for those Misinformations and other evil and indirect Practices or Proceedings in Parliament, whereby they have so abused the same, as in our said Charge and former Papers is set forth.

And here, if we may, we should humbly offer to Consideration, whether it were not a necessary

Ex-

Expedient, for Prevention or Remedy of such An. 23. Car. 1.
 Evils in future, that, in Things so clearly de- 1647.
 structive to the common Rights and Liberties of
 the People and Safety of the Kingdom, there
 be a Liberty for dissenting Members in the House
 of Commons, as it is allowed in the House of
 Peers, to enter their Dissent, and thereby acquit
 themselves from the Guilt or Blame of what
 Evils may ensue; that so the Kingdom may re-
 gularly come to know who they are that perform
 their Trust faithfully, and who not: And this
 Provision for the future, as also our Desires for
 Remedy in the present Cases, as it were clearly
 good and necessary in the Respects premised, so,
 we think, the same may well be without future
 Prejudice or Discouragement, in any other Re-
 spects, to succeeding Members of Parliament;
 provided always, that no Man shall be questioned
 or censured for any Thing said or done in Parlia-
 ment, any further than to Exclusion from that
 Trust, which is all that in the present Case we
 should desire upon any such Grounds. And that
 future Liberty of entering Dissents we do not
 here propose as a Thing we any way insist on to
 the Prejudice of Parliament Privileges; we only
 offer it to Consideration, and that from good
 Wishes to the Privileges of Parliament, to render
 them more lasting by being less nocent. And,
 indeed, whoever most adores or tenders those Pri-
 vileges will best express his Zeal towards them in
 taking Care they be not abused, or extended, to
 private Wrongs or public Mischiefs; for we clear-
 ly find, and all wise Men may see it, that Parlia-
 ment Privileges, as well as Royal Prerogative,
 may be perverted and abused, or extended to
 the Destruction of those greater Ends for whose
 Protection and Preservation they were admitted
 or intended, viz. the Rights and Privileges of the
 People, and Safety of the whole; and in case it
 be so, the Abuse, Evil, or Danger of them is
 no less to be contended against, and a Remedy
 there-

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

thereof no less to be endeavoured, than of the other.

And whereas the Injustice in that Particular of the Declaration against the Army, for their just and innocent Petition, may seem to have been recompensed in the late Expunging thereof out of the *Journal Books*, we confess it hath been so in great Measure, as to the particular or present Injury done the Army therein; and we cannot but acknowledge, so far, the Justice that lies in those Votes for expunging thereof; but for our own or the Army's particular Reparation, we should never wish more, nor scarce have insisted on so much, to any Dishonour of Parliament in future; we should rather have been satisfied with the Parliament's declaring how, and by whom, they have been misinformed, surprized, or otherwise abused in framing the Proposal, or passing thereof, as it was: But as to that Particular, or any other of that Nature, we say as followeth:

1. We never did, nor do, value or regard our own Injury or Reparation in any Comparison to the Consequence of the one, or the Prejudice of the other, but to the future Security of the common Right and Freedom of this Nation; and accordingly we do not account any Reparation considerable that extends but to ourselves in the present Case, and does not, in some sort, secure ourselves and all others from Danger of the same or worse Injuries or Oppressions, as private Men, from the Wills or Passions of the same Persons that have offered and acted such Things against us while an Army.

2. We cannot but imagine and consider, according to general Report, how the Expunging of that Declaration was carried and obtained, and upon what Grounds and Intentions it was given Way to; but had those that procured it been all for expunging it, and that freely, yet how can we expect better but that the same Men, who at one Time carried such a Declaration, and another Time expunged it, may the next Day obtain the

the like or worse, upon any Occasion wherein it
may serve their private Ends or Interests, if they
continue in the same Power and Sway, and be
let pass in deluding and surprizing the Parliament,
as they have done in the past Particulars?

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

3. The apparent Dishonour and Prejudice
brought upon the Parliament, in having such a De-
claration so passed, as that they should soon after,
without any Alteration in the pretended Ground
of it, find Cause, for Shame of the World, to
expunge, we think should engage those Mem-
bers that love Parliaments, in point of Honour,
to find out and discover how, and by whom, the
Parliament had been abused or otherwise brought
into such an Inconveniency. And the Parliament
may in this see the Temper, as Bye-standers do
the Prevalence, of those Members that abused
the Parliament in that Declaration, who will and
can make the Authority of Parliament still lie un-
der the Dishonour of it, in a bare expunging or
retracting, rather than admit of any Consideration
to acquit the Authority of Parliament, that would
tend to fix the Blame on those particular Members
that had deserved it: And this certainly would be
admitted and done, rather than to slight it over
with a bare expunging, were not some Men more
tender of, and more swayed with, such Considera-
tions and Consequences as may tend to the Pre-
judice of Persons, than such as tend to the gene-
ral Prejudice and Dishonour of Parliaments.

As to those Particulars included in our Charge,
which do depend upon Things done without
the Parliament, we are ready, and should most
willingly proceed in the particular charging and
proving thereof, if first (from the Justice of the
House in a present Proceeding against the Persons
charged for the Things that are already known to
the House to have been done in it) we could find
Encouragement to expect any good Issue upon
those other Things; and did we not, on the con-
trary, find that (notwithstanding what is so known
to the House, as before expressed) the same Per-
sons

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

sons continue in such Power and Prevalence, both in the House and in all Committees of the highest Trust, as leaves little Hope of Right or Satisfaction to the Army or Kingdom in other Things, and much less in any just Proceedings against themselves, while they continue Judges of their own and our Concernments; so as we cannot, while they remain in the same Power, expect any Thing but a continued perverting and making Advantage of all Things, (and especially of those Delays which a regular Proceeding against them would necessarily induce) altogether to our own and the Kingdom's Prejudice and Danger, to disable or weaken us for those Things which the Safety and Settling of the Rights, Liberties, and Peace of the Kingdom requires: And to strengthen themselves, by under-hand Practices and Preparations both at home and abroad, the better to oppose us and engage the Kingdom in a new War; thereby to accomplish their Designs, or at least to save themselves from Justice in a common Confusion: We say, were it not for these and such other Considerations, that leave little Hopes of Justice to ourselves or the Kingdom, while they continue in the same Power, and render all Delays dangerous and destructive to ourselves and the Peace of the Kingdom, we should be contented that the Business concerning the Members we have charged should be laid aside till those other Things were first settled, which our Declaration does propound for the common Rights and Liberties of the Kingdom.

But finding Things still so carried as they are, and as we have before expressed, and that while they are Judges in their own Causes they, with that Party which they make, will do what they please, and yet render it a Breach of Privilege to be accused for it; we cannot but, upon all these Considerations, and for all the Reasons before expressed, insist upon it that the Members charged may first be forthwith suspended from sitting in the House; otherwise we cannot expect
any

any fair Proceedings against them upon a more particular Charge, nor think there is any Good intended to ourselves or the Kingdom.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

As to our Desires of having the Army presently paid up equally with those that have deserted it, we appeal to all Men for the Justice, Reasonableness, and Necessity thereof.

The Justice; in that the former Service, for which these Arrears are due, hath been, at least, as faithfully and diligently performed by the Army as by those late Deserters of it; and in our present Posture, tho' they have appeared indeed more officious and serviceable to the Interest and Will of particular Men than we, yet we are sure the Army is, and we hope will at last appear to be, more faithful to the true Interest of Parliaments and the Kingdom, which we were at first called out and engaged for, than they in deserting the Army have hitherto appeared.

For the Reasonableness of our Desires; tho' we have Ground to claim more than they, or rather that they, or some of them, should forfeit their Arrears, yet we ask, for present, but equal; nor should we at present insist on that so much, as to our Officers, if our Soldiers were but first paid up. Our Necessity to insist on that is obvious to every Man; and therefore, unless we should betray our own and the Kingdom's Cause, we cannot but positively insist upon it that the Army should forthwith be paid up, at least equally to those Deserters of it; which, if denied or delayed, we shall be thereby inforced upon present Ways of Remedy and Right to the Army therein.

And whereas the Parliament hath lately ordered and publicly declared, that all that shall desert the Army shall have present Satisfaction in their Arrears, (the Officers three Months' Pay, the Soldiers all their Arrears, deducting for free Quarter) which still continues unrecalled; we cannot but look upon it as a most clear Evidence of the continuing Malice and Prevalence of our

and

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

‘ and the Kingdom’s Enemies. And we must and
 ‘ do insist upon it, that that Order or Declaration
 ‘ may forthwith be publickly recalled; otherwise
 ‘ we cannot believe that any Thing but Ruin and
 ‘ Destruction is designed to ourselves and all others
 ‘ in the Kingdom, who every where call upon us
 ‘ not to disband till we see the Rights, Liberties,
 ‘ and Peace of the Kingdom settled, according to
 ‘ the many Declarations by which we were first
 ‘ called forth, and invited to engage in the late
 ‘ War.

‘ Next we cannot but take Notice, (instead of
 ‘ granting or answering our Desires in the last Pa-
 ‘ per) in order to the better and more safe proceed-
 ‘ ing to a Composure and Settlement of all Things
 ‘ for the Good and Peace of the Kingdom, and
 ‘ for the Prevention of a new War, the Army be-
 ‘ ing first commanded to forty Miles Distance from
 ‘ *London*, his Majesty’s Person is demanded imme-
 ‘ diately to *Richmond* House within eight Miles of
 ‘ *London*; which, as we cannot but impute it to
 ‘ the prevailing Interest of the same Enemies to
 ‘ our and the Kingdom’s Peace, so all Men may
 ‘ easily discern, with us, how directly it tends (in
 ‘ pursuance of their former private Designs upon
 ‘ the King e’er he came from *Holdenby*) to put his
 ‘ Majesty within Reach of those Men’s Power,
 ‘ who have already under-hand listed about *Lon-*
 ‘ *don* a very considerable Number both of Horse
 ‘ and Foot, and are daily listing and engaging
 ‘ more, both there and in many Parts of the King-
 ‘ dom, to serve their Designs; and therefore we
 ‘ appeal to all unengaged Men, whether we can
 ‘ in this give way to have the King put so far with-
 ‘ in those Men’s Power, without giving them the
 ‘ long-sought-for Advantage of his Majesty’s Per-
 ‘ son; thereby to embroil the Kingdom in a new
 ‘ and bloody War, and to strengthen themselves
 ‘ in their mischievous Designs, the better to up-
 ‘ hold and establish their Faction and intended Do-
 ‘ mination; so that, in this Case, we cannot but
 ‘ importune the Parliament, (as they tender the
 ‘ Peace

Peace and Quiet of the Kingdom, and the avoiding of Jealousies or worse Inconveniences in the Army) that they would resume the Consideration of that Business concerning the Person of the King, and not propose any Place for him nearer to London than they would have the Quarters of the Army to be.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
June.

And whereas (by Procurement of the same Persons, or others of their Party) there hath been scandalous Informations presented to the Houses, and industriously published in Print, importing as if his Majesty were kept as a Prisoner amongst us, and barbarously and uncivilly used; we cannot but declare that the same, and all other Suggestions of that Sort, are most false and scandalous, and absolutely contrary, not only to our declared Desires, but also to our Principles, which are most clearly for a general Right and just Freedom to all Men: And therefore, upon this Occasion, we cannot but declare particularly, that we desire the same for the King and others of his Party, so far as can consist with common Right or Freedom, and with the Security of the same for the future: And we farther clearly profess we do not see how there can be any firm or lasting Peace to this Kingdom, without a due Consideration of and Provision for the Rights, Quiet, and Immunity of his Majesty, his Royal Family, and his late Partakers; and herein we think that tender and equitable Dealing, (as supposing their Cases had been ours) and a Spirit of common Love and Justice, diffusing itself to the Good and Preservation of all, will make up the most glorious Conquests over their Hearts, if God in his Mercy see it good, to make them and the whole People of the Land lasting Friends.

Now to draw to a Conclusion: Since we can yet obtain no Satisfaction or Answer to the Things desired as before, but, contrarywise, find all Things carried on by the prevailing Interest of those our Enemies, to the Prejudice and Danger of ourselves and the Kingdom; since (notwithstanding some

Votes

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

' Votes of Parliament against the late Orders of
 ' the Committee of Safety for lifting of Forces,
 ' and notwithstanding the earnest Desires and En-
 ' deavours of the City, concurrent with our own,
 ' to have the same prevented or remedied, yet the
 ' Committee of Safety being still continued in the
 ' same Power) we find that, by the Appointment
 ' or Contrivance, and under the Protection or
 ' Countenance, of the same Persons whom we
 ' have charged and their Accomplices, there are
 ' still manifold Practices under-hand, to lift and
 ' raise new Forces; and, notwithstanding the Dis-
 ' covery thereof to the Parliament from the City,
 ' yet the same Persons have prevailed so far in the
 ' House as not to admit the Question for discharging
 ' of them, but the same Practices still continue,
 ' and with double Diligence are enforced; since also
 ' divers Forces, pretended to have been engaged
 ' for *Ireland*, are, by the same Persons, ordered to
 ' rendezvous about *Worcester*, there to lay the
 ' Foundation of a new Army; and to that Purpose
 ' their Emisseries and Correspondents in all Coun-
 ' ties are busy and active to raise Forces for them.
 ' And though for these Things the Actors of them
 ' have no present public Authority, yet they have
 ' some way such Countenance and Assurance to be
 ' justified in Parliament, if questioned for it, as that
 ' they have the Confidence to act openly: Since
 ' they have likewise their Emisseries or Agents
 ' abroad in *Scotland*, *France*, and other Countries,
 ' very active to draw in foreign Forces for their
 ' Assistance: Since, in the mean Time, they are
 ' endeavouring, by Spies and secret Agents in all
 ' our Quarters, to inveigle and invite the Soldiers
 ' of this Army to desert their Officers and come to
 ' *London*; and, for that Purpose, do improve the
 ' Advantage of the Order or Declaration of Par-
 ' liament afore-mentioned, for Satisfaction of Ar-
 ' rears, to such as shall desert the Army: And we
 ' find they have the public Purse so much at their
 ' Disposal, as to make good that and other their
 ' Undertakings of that Nature; and yet such as
 ' have

have so deserted the Army and received their Ar-
 rears, are not discharged or dispersed, but con-
 tinued together in Bodies, and under Command,
 in and near the City, as in particular, some of
 Sir Robert Pye's Men, Col. Greaves's, Capt. Far-
 mer's, and others still quartered upon Kent:
 Since, likewise, they have their Agents and Cor-
 respondents labouring with the King to make
 Contracts with him to draw his Majesty to en-
 gage and declare for them, or at least to declare
 himself a Prisoner amongst us, thereby to stir
 up and engage his Party against us; since, in all
 these Respects, we find all dilatory Ways, which
 they industriously devise, to be designed and
 made use of only to our Disadvantage, Weaken-
 ing, and Ruin; to the Kingdom's Prejudice, and
 to their own Advantage, and strengthening their
 Designs; the better to prepare for a new War.

An. 23. Car. 1.
 1647.
 June.

And, lastly, considering the Multitudes of Re-
 formadoes and other Soldiers swarming about the
 City, whom the Persons we have charged, and their
 Accomplices, have at their Beck to bring up to
 Westminster when they please; and that, by their
 frequent tumultuous Confluences thither (beset-
 ting, and sometimes blocking up, the Parliament's
 Doors, threatening and offering Violence to the
 Persons of the most faithful Parliament-Men)
 the just Freedom of Parliament seems to be taken
 away, or at least, for the present, abridged; in-
 somuch that those Members who have served the
 Kingdom hitherto with most Faithfulness, Di-
 ligence, and Integrity for the Public Good, ma-
 ny of them dare scarce come to the House; or,
 if they do, they come in Fear and Peril of their
 Lives; and, when they are there, are awed, dis-
 couraged, or disabled from discharging their Con-
 sciences, or doing their Duties to the Kingdom.

Upon all these Considerations, we are clearly
 convinced and satisfied that both our Duty and
 Trust for the Parliament and Kingdom calls up-
 on us and warrants us, and an imminent Necessi-
 ty (for our own and the Kingdom's Safety, and

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

Prevention of a new War) enforceth us, to make
 or admit of no longer Delays; but, upon those
 Foundations God hath given us, with Vigour and
 Speed to endeavour, in some extraordinary Way,
 the Vindicating of Parliament Freedom from tu-
 multuous Violence, the Breaking of those Designs
 and Preparations that otherwise threaten a pre-
 sent Embroilment of the Kingdom in more Blood
 and War, and a future perpetual Enslaving of it
 under Faction and Tyranny: And so, if God see
 it good, to put the Parliament into a Freedom
 and Capacity, with his Majesty's wished and
 hoped-for Concurrence, to settle the Rights, Li-
 berties, and Peace of the Kingdom.

Upon all these Grounds, and for all these Ends
 premised, we shall be enforced to take such Courses
 extraordinary as God shall enable and direct us
 unto, to put Things to a speedy Issue; unless, by
 Thursday Night next, we receive Assurance and
 Security to ourselves and the Kingdom, for a
 more safe and hopeful Proceeding in an ordinary
 Way, by having those Things granted which,
 in order thereunto, we have before insisted on;
 and shall here, for more Brevity and Clearness,
 repeat as followeth:

1. That the Declaration, inviting Men to de-
 sert the Army, and promising their Arrears in
 case they do so, may be annulled.

2. That the Army may be presently paid up
 equally to those that have deserted it.

3. That his Majesty's Coming to *Richmona*
 may be suspended untill Affairs be better settled
 and composed; and, in the mean Time, no Place
 may be appointed for his Majesty's Residence
 that may be any nearer to *London* than the Parlia-
 ment will allow the Quarters of the Army to be.

4. That the Members charged may be forth-
 with suspended or sequestered the House.

5. That those that have deserted the Army
 may be instantly discharged and dispersed, and
 receive no more of their Arrears till the Army
 be first satisfied.

6. That

6. ' That both Parliament and City may be, An. 21, Car. I.
1647.
' speedily and effectually, freed from those Multi-
' tudes of Reformadoes and other Soldiers before-
' mentioned, that flock together about *London*, by June,
' a speedy Dispatch and Discharging of them from
' the City.

7. ' That all such Listings or Raisings of new
' Forces, or Drawing together of any, as is before-
' mentioned, and all Preparations towards a new
' War, may be effectually declared against and
' suppressed; as also all Invitations or Endeavours
' to draw in foreign Forces.

8. ' That the present perplexed Affairs of the
' Kingdom and those concerning the Army, as
' also all the Things desired in our late Represent-
' tation in Behalf of the Kingdom, may be put into
' some speedy Way of Settlement and Composure.

By the Appointment of his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax and the Council of War.

JOHN RUSHWORTH, Sec^r.

It may be Matter of Surprize who were the principal Penmen that drew up and wrote all these Remonstrances, &c. from the Army, since they are put in much better Dress and Form than could be expected from a Body of Men, mostly Mechanics, and more used to the Sword than the Pen: But Mr. *Whitlocke* informs us, ' That it was Col. *Ireton* who was chiefly employed and took on him this Business: That he had been bred in the *Middle-Temple*, and had learned some Grounds of the Law; and, being of a working laborious Brain and Fancy, he set himself much upon these Affairs, and was therein encouraged by Lieutenant-General *Cromwell*, his Father-in-Law; and by Colonel *Lambert*, who had likewise studied in the Inns of Court, and was also of a subtle and working Brain.'

The same Day that the foregoing Representation from the Army was presented to the Lords, a Letter from the Lord *Montague*, brought by Sir

An. 23. Car. 1.^o *Peter Killigrew*, was also read, with several Papers inclosed.

1647.

June.

For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER, Speaker of the House of Peers pro Tempore.

My Lord, Newmarket, June 23, 1647.

Letters from the Commissioners, &c. attending the King.

I Received your Letters Yesterday by Sir *Peter Killigrew*, who arrived here at Twelve. We forthwith delivered the Letter from both Houses to his Majesty; who, having read it in our Presence, told us that it was a very fair and civil Invitation, that he was glad of it, and confirmed thereby his Resolution of coming to *Richmond*; since he found the Address, we had made to him, was according to the Intentions of both Houses. We have this Day sent Part of his Majesty's Stuff from hence to *Royston*, the King having appointed to lodge there on *Thursday* Night, and at *Theobalds* on *Friday*, resolving to march thence upon *Saturday* to *Richmond*. Upon the Orders we dispatched to the Commanders, on the Place, of Col. *Rossiter's* Regiment, which were received by Major *Twisleton*, near *Grantham*, upon *Monday* last, we had the inclosed in Answer from himself; whereupon we have written to him to attend the King at *Royston* upon *Thursday* Night without Fail, as you may see by these our second Orders, a Copy whereof I have here sent you; and, being encouraged in your Approbation of my Service to be diligent therein, I remain

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

E. MONTAGUE.

Major *Twisleton's* Letter mentioned in the foregoing.

For the Right Hon. the COMMITTEE of PARLIAMENT at Newmarket.

June 21, 1647.

May it please your Honours,

I Have received your Letter, with the Orders inclosed from the Parliament. There is not any shall be more observant of their Commands
than

than myself; but it is altogether impossible for
me to be with the Regiment at *Newmarket* on
Wednesday, altho' we are now upon our March,
and intend to quarter this Night not far from
Grantham. The Occasion of our present March
is, that I have received Orders from the General
to march with the Regiment up to the Army with
all convenient Speed. I humbly entreat you to
give Notice to the General of the Parliament's
Order concerning my Colonel's Regiment, that
we may have Orders from him to observe your
further Commands. I intend to march with all
the Speed I can, and hope to be with the Regiment
at *Huntingdon* on *Wednesday* about Noon, where
I shall be glad to receive your further Orders,
which shall be carefully observed, and punctually
obeyed, by him who is

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
June.

Your Honour's most humble,

and faithful Servant,

PHILIP TWISLETON.

P. S. 'I received your Honour's Letter about
Eleven upon the Road not far from *Grantham*.'

The Orders given to Major-General *Twisleton*
by the Committee thereupon.

For our loving Friend Major PHILIP TWISLETON,
Major to Col. Roslitter's Regiment of Horse at
Huntingdon.

S I R, *Newmarket, June 22, 1647.*

THE King intends to begin his Journey on
Thursday, and will be that Night at *Row-
ston*; we therefore desire you, if you cannot be
at *Newmarket* on *Wednesday* with your Regi-
ment, according to our former Orders, that you

An. 23. Car. I. 1647. do not fail to be at *Royston* on *Thursday* Night,
 to attend his Majesty thence the next Day; and
 we remain,
 Your loving Friends,

E. MONTAGUE.
 J. COKE.
 JO. CREW.
 RICH. BROWN.

Which, with the foregoing Remonstrance, being read, the Lords desire his Majesty not to come towards Richmond,

After reading the foregoing Letters, the Lords resolved themselves into a Committee, to read the Representation from the Army again; and the House being resumed, a Motion was made, That a Letter be sent to his Majesty, to desire him for some Time to make a Stay at *Royston*, or to go to *Newmarket*, as he shall think fit, in regard of some Things that are lately fallen out; which being resolved in the Affirmative, the following Lords entered their Dissent by subscribing their Names;

LINCOLN,	HEREFORD,
STAMFORD,	HUNSDON,
SUFFOLK,	WILLOUGHBY,
RUTLAND,	MAYNARD,
MIDDLESEX,	BERKLEY.

The Speaker having prepared a Draught of a Letter in pursuance of the abovesaid Vote, and the same being read, the Question was put, Whether to send this Letter to the King, or not? and it was resolved in the Affirmative. Against this Resolution all the foregoing Peers entered their Dissent; but their Reasons for it are not given.

And order Letters to be sent accordingly.

Next the Lords ordered a Letter to be written to the General from both Houses, and their Speaker to prepare it; which was done accordingly *in hæc Verba*:

S I R,

THE Lords and Commons have written a Letter unto his Majesty, to desire him that he would be pleased to stay at *Royston*, or to return

turn to *Newmarket*; and they have commanded us to give you this Notice, and to send you here inclosed a Copy thereof. This being all we have in Command, we remain

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
June.

Your Friends and Servants, &c.

The Letter to be sent to the King.

May it please your Majesty,

Y Our Majesty's loyal Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, in respect of some Occurrences lately fallen out, do humbly desire your Majesty that you would be pleased to stay at *Royston*, or to return to *Newmarket* for some Time; and they hope that this Delay of your Majesty's Coming to your House at *Richmond* will be no ways prejudicial to your Majesty, or make any Retardment of the present settling of the Peace of your Kingdoms, which is the Desire of

Your Majesty's loyal Subjects

and humble Servants, &c.

This Letter to the King was ordered to be sent under Cover to the Lord *Montague*, to be presented by his Lordship and the rest of the Commissioners; and a Copy of it was inclosed to them.

Then the foregoing Vote of the Lords relating to the King, the Letter to his Majesty, and to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, being communicated to the Commons for their Concurrence, they agreed to them all immediately.

The same Day (*June 24*) Alderman *Fowke* and others, from the Lord-Mayor, Aldermen, and Common-Council of the City of *London*, presented to both Houses Copies of two Letters which they had received from Sir *Thomas Fairfax*.

24 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 23. Car. I. *To the LORD-MAYOR, ALDERMEN, and COMMON-COUNCIL of the City of London.*

1647.

June.

St. Alban's, June 21, 1647.

Right Honourable,

Letters from Sir
Thomas Fairfax
to the Citizens of
London, enforcing
their late
Remonstrance to
the Parliament.

WE received yours of the 18th of this Instant, whereof tho' all Passages are not so answerable to our Expectation as we hoped, yet we apprehend the same good Affection in you towards this Army as was expressed in your former Letter, that (not only from the Assurance of the worthy Gentlemen your Commissioners, again sent to us, but also from that Information we have received of your extraordinary Endeavours to procure Money for the Army, to prevent further raising or lifting of Soldiers, and to procure those already lifted to be disbanded) some Persons of your Militia only have been active for the raising of them without your Privy; as likewise from that Letter fill'd with Respect, which you prepared and intended to send to us; but being sent to the Parliament, was obstructed by some Persons, who, labouring to embroil the Kingdom in a new War, would not have the Forces already raised to be disbanded; who excepted against your Discovery to the House that some Persons only of the Militia had joined in the raising of the new Forces; who also would prevent a right Understanding between your City and this Army, knowing a firm Correspondence between them would make the Designs of all such Men hopeless: And tho' our taking Notice of these Things seems not regular, yet being so publickly done, we thought fit to mind you of them.

Now, altho' the Confidence we have of the real and clear Intentions of your Lordship, and the Aldermen and Commons of your City of London, to promote the Peace of this Kingdom and just Desires of this Army; also to prevent all Tendencies to a new War, or any further Blood;

and

' and therefore hold ourselves obliged to yield all An. 23. Car. I.
 ' possible Compliance to what you desire of us ; 1647.
 ' yet adding to the former Grounds the many In- June.
 ' formations which daily come to us of the conti-
 ' nued under-hand Workings of some Persons still
 ' to lift Men, that divers Agents are sent into se-
 ' veral Parts of the Kingdom to levy Forces, and
 ' Worcester the Place appointed for a general Ren-
 ' dezvous, whither the Troops design'd for Ire-
 ' land, that were Part of this Army, are, by some
 ' of the Committee at Derby-house, ordered to
 ' march ; and several of those Companies that
 ' went from us for the Service of Ireland having
 ' it intimated to them, and, by divers Carriages,
 ' perceiving they were intended as a Foundation for
 ' a new Army, and of a new War, they so much ab-
 ' horred the Thoughts of it, as both the Officers and
 ' Soldiers of divers Companies are of late entirely
 ' returned to the Army ; likewise that no Means is
 ' left unattempted to bring in Forces from Ireland,
 ' France and Scotland, against the Peace of this
 ' poor Kingdom : We, upon the whole Matter,
 ' offer to your and all Men's Consideration, whe-
 ' ther with your, our, or the Public Safety, we
 ' can remove further backwards, untill, upon your
 ' and our joint Endeavours with the Parliament,
 ' those Things of immediate and pressing Necessi-
 ' ty be provided for, which we desired in our
 ' Paper last given in to the Parliament's Commis-
 ' sioners, in order to the better Proceeding upon
 ' the Heads of the Representation and Charge with
 ' more Hopes of Safety, and of a timely and happy
 ' Issue to ourselves and the Kingdom, viz.

' That the Persons impeached by us may not
 ' continue in Power and Capacity to obstruct due
 ' Proceedings against themselves, and, by their own
 ' Escape from Justice, to threaten Ruin to the
 ' whole Nation.

' That all Forces lately raised or lifted, in or
 ' about the City, may be forthwith discharged, ex-
 ' cept the usual Number of Train'd Bands and
 ' Auxiliaries ; and that all Endeavours, publicly
 ' or

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

‘or privately, to raise any further Forces, may cease
 ‘and be suppress’d; And that the same Measure
 ‘may be allowed to this Army, in paying them
 ‘up to the same Foot of Account as is already gi-
 ‘ven to those who have deserted the same.

‘And for the Things express’d in our Repre-
 ‘sentation, though of weighty Importance, yet,
 ‘because they will require much Time, they shall
 ‘be no Occasion to impede our Remove; and,
 ‘in the mean Time, both by Proclamation from
 ‘his Excellency, and all other Ways, we shall en-
 ‘deavour that the accustomed Supplies to your
 ‘City may be speedily sent up.

‘To conclude: We say from our Hearts, That
 ‘as our special Ends are the Glory of God and
 ‘the Good of the whole Land, so our Endeavours
 ‘shall be to prosecute the same, without Prejudice
 ‘to the Being or Well-being of the Parliament in
 ‘general, the Maintenance whereof we value a-
 ‘bove all our own Lives, as we have formerly said
 ‘of this Parliament in particular, but altogether
 ‘in order to the Good and Peace of this Nation,
 ‘and with a most tender Regard to your City; to
 ‘which we profess we shall, by all Actions, make
 ‘good all Engagements tending to the Security
 ‘thereof, in what Way yourselves shall desire,
 ‘consisting with the Good of the whole Kingdom,
 ‘you making good your mutual Correspondence
 ‘with us, and not doing any Thing to our Preju-
 ‘dice, in the Prosecution of our just Desires and
 ‘Endeavours.’

June 22, 1647.

P. S. ‘We hear, even now, since the writing
 ‘of this Letter, that Yesterday divers of the Re-
 ‘formadoes came again in a threatening Manner
 ‘to *Westminster*, the House of Commons then sit-
 ‘ting, to the great Affrightment and Terror of
 ‘divers faithful Members then present, and to the
 ‘Discouragement of others from their Attendance
 ‘there; so that we cannot but perceive that the
 ‘Freedom of this Parliament is no longer; that
 ‘these Members who shall, according to their
 ‘Con-

Conscience, endeavour to prevent a second War, An. 23. Car. 1. 1647.
 and act contrary to their Ways, who for their
 own Preservation intend it, must do it with the
 Hazard of their Lives; which is a Thing indeed
 so destructive to Parliaments and Freedom, that
 we conceive ourselves in Duty bound to endeavour,
 to the utmost, to procure Redress therein.

By the Appointment of his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax, and the Council of War.

JO. RUSHWORTH, Secretary.

For Alderman WARNER, and the rest of the Honourable Committee, sent from the City of London to the Army.

Gentlemen, *St. Alban's, June 23, 1647.*

WE desire, to the end we may keep a right
 Understanding with the City of London,
 that some of your Number may continually reside
 with us in the Head Quarters, untill it shall
 please God to put an End to the present Distractions.
 I shall, as I told you, remove my Head
 Quarters to *Berkhamstead*, expecting to hear from
 you To-morrow Night; being resolved to order
 my Affairs the next Morning, as I may not prejudice
 a Business of such Concernment to the
 Kingdom by the Loss of a Day.

Your assured loving Friend,

T. FAIRFAX.

The Answer given, in the Name of both Houses, Which being read in both Houses, they pass several Votes in favour of the Army.
 by their respective Speakers, was to this Effect,
 That they took well this Respect of the City in
 communicating the General's Letters; and should
 leave them freely to their own Liberty to send
 down what Committee they shall think fit to the
 Army: That they have voted, That if any
 Forces be listed by the Committee of Lords and
 Commons, and Committee of the Militia, or of
 the Committee of Safety, that they be discharged:
 And, as to the Reformadoes and Soldiers about
 the

An. 25. Car. I. the Town, the Houses have put the Business into
 1647. such a Way as they, in their Wisdoms, have
 June. thought fit: And that they return the Citizens
 Thanks for their good Affections expressed upon
 all Occasions.'

June 25. The Lords ordered an Ordinance to be drawn up for sending all Persons out of the Lines of Communication who had ever borne Arms against the Parliament; which, after being read thrice and put to the Question, passed that House; the Lord *Hunsdon*, only, entering his Dissent against it.

Next, the Lords took into Consideration the Desire of the City, in regard to the Reformed Officers; and ordered some Lords to prepare an Ordinance to appoint a Day when they should depart the Town, after their being paid off, and some Distinction to be made amongst them. This also being put to the Question, it was carried in the Affirmative, the Earl of *Stamford*, only, dissenting.

Votes of the
 Commons re-
 lating to the ele-
 ven Members
 charged by the
 Army.

There had been great Debates in the House of Commons for several Days together, about the Army's Charge against the eleven Members.— They had wrote to the General to inform him, That what should be particularly charged against their Members, with Testimony of Witnesses, should be received; and the House would proceed in a legal Way therein. On the 25th, after Debate, they voted, 'That, by the Law of the Land, no Judgment could be given to suspend those Members from sitting in the House upon the Papers presented from the Army, before the Particulars be produced and Proof made; and that it did not appear that any Thing had been said or done in the House by any of those Members, touching any Matters in the Papers sent from the Army, for which the House could in Justice suspend them.' But, on the 26th, upon the Army's Advance nearer to *London*, which they gave out was not to over-awe the Parliament or the City, but only
 to

to see that the Members charged by them should be suspended the House; and that then they would give in a more particular Charge, with the Proofs to make it good against them, the Commons had no other Way left, to save their own Honour, than to suffer these impeached Members, at their own Desires, to leave the House, and thereby escape their Pursuers.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

It is remarkable that the very Day these Members withdrew, a Question for proceeding immediately upon the Desires of the Army was carried by a Majority of 53 against 27: And the next Day another Question in favour of the Army passed by 121 against 85. Which fully justifies an Observation made by Mr. Ludlow[†], 'That the great End of this Charge of Treason being rather to keep these Members from using their Power with the Parliament, in Opposition to the Proceedings of the Army, than from any Design to proceed capitally against them, they resolved rather to withdraw themselves voluntarily than to put the Parliament or Army to any further Trouble, or their Persons to any more Hazard. By these Means the Army, in which there were too many who had no other Design but the Advancement of themselves, having made the Parliament, the Scots, and the City of London, their Enemies, thought it convenient to enlarge their Concessions to the King; giving his Chaplains Leave to come to him, and to officiate in their Way, which had been denied before.'

To return to our *Journals*.

June 26. It being moved in the House of Lords to take the Demands of the Army, in their last Remonstrance, into Consideration; after some Time spent therein, a Message came up from the House of Commons, desiring Concurrence to an Order for giving further Power to their Commissioners residing in the Army. The Question being put, Whether to agree to this Order, as it came from the House of Commons, it passed in the Affirmative,

the

[†] *Memoirs*, Vol. I. p. 197, 8, 9.

30 *The Parliamentary History*

AN. 23. CAR. I. the following Lords subscribing their Names as dissenting,
1647.

June.

LINCOLN,
SUFFOLK,
STAMFORD,
MIDDLESEX,

RUTLAND,
WILLOUGHBY,
HUNSDON,
MAYNARD.

The Order was in these Words:

An Order for giving further Power to the Parliament's Commissioners.

'Ordered by the Lords and Commons, &c. That the Commissioners appointed to reside with the Army shall have Power to treat and debate with the General, and such of the Army as he shall appoint, in such Manner as they shall think best, upon the Papers and Desires sent from the Army to both Houses, and the Votes sent to them; and to let them know, from Time to Time, the Result of their Debates for their Consideration, that a Conclusion thereupon may be more speedily effected.'

The same Day the following Letters were read in the House of Lords: And first,

A Letter from the Commissioners with the Army to the Earl of *Manchester*.

*Berkhamstead, June 25, 1647,
Three o'Clock, post Merid.*

May it please your Lordship,

Letters from them and the General, relating to the Motions of the Army;

'THIS Morning the General acquainted us that the Army intended to be this Night at *Uxbridge*. We desired to know the Reason thereof, and endeavoured to prevent it. The General hath just now given us this Account inclosed, which I thought it my Duty immediately to transmit to your Lordship; and rest

My Lord,

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

C. NOTTINGHAM.

Next,

Next, General *Fairfax's* Letter referred to in An. 23. Car. I.
the foregoing.

Berkhamstead, June 25, 1647.

1647.

June.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

IN Answer to your Desire of a Reason for the
Army's Motion this Day, we thought fit to
let you know that our Quarters are more con-
tracted, but not nearer *London* than before, viz.
at *Watford, Uxbridge*, and the Towns about it,
where we wait for an Answer to our just De-
mands presented to the Parliament. We have
often said, we can not stand as Lookers on, and
see the Kingdom ruined by the Obstruction and
Denial of Justice; and therefore we desire you
to move the Parliament that we may not be
held still in Doubts and upon Disputes of their
Commands, to which we shall yield ready Obe-
dience when we see the Kingdom in a Possibility
of Settlement; which we conceive cannot be, un-
less that the Fountain of Justice be delivered from
those that corrupt it.

*By the Appointment of his Excellency Sir Thomas
Fairfax and his Council of War.*

JO. RUSHWORTH.

Then a Letter from the Commissioners with the
King.

*For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of Peers pro Tempore.*

My Lord,

Roxton, June 25, 1647.

WE received yours this Morning at Six
o'Clock, and have delivered the Letter
from both Houses to the King accordingly: His
Majesty, though much pressed to the contrary,
was fully resolved upon his Journey to *Richmond*;
and had given Orders for his dining at *Ware*,
whither the Provision of his House was gone be-
fore; but he hath now pleased to let us know
that he will stay here this Day, and that we shall
under-

An. 23. Cat. 1.
1647.
June,

understand his further Pleasure hereafter. Col.
‘*Roffiter*’s Regiment is upon their March to the
Army by the General’s Orders; and Col. *Wha-*
‘*ley* commands the same Guards here which at-
tended at *Newmarket*: This is all I have to re-
turn to you at present, remaining,

My Lord,

Your most humble Servant,

ED. MONTAGUE.

Lastly, a Letter from the Commissioners with
the Army.

Uxbridge, June 26, 1647.
Two in the Afternoon.

May it please your Lordship,

WE came hither last Night, where we found
the General with three Regiments of
Foot, the Train of Artillery, and some Horse; four
Regiments of Foot more being quartered at *Wat-*
sford, three at *Colebrook*, and most Part of the
Horse behind and on the Sides of the Foot; and
that, by Order, the Soldiers came provided with
four Days Victuals.

This Morning Sir *Thomas Widdrington* and Mr.
Povey came to us very early, and brought us the
Votes of the Houses that passed Yesterday con-
cerning the Members charged by the Army.
We having some Intimation that the Army was
to march this Morning, went instantly to the
General, and communicated these Votes, and
such other Proceedings of the Houses as came
to our Knowledge in relation to the Army, the
better to let them see the Inclinations of the
Houses towards the Army’s Satisfaction; and
did desire that nothing might arise from them that
might disturb the Houses or their Councils, or
minister further Occasion of Jealousy, which we
told them we very much fear’d the Army’s mo-
ving nearer *London* would do; a Report of which
‘had

' had lately come to us, the Certainty whereof we An. 23. Car. 1.
 ' desired to know, and what their Intentions were 1647.
 ' therein, and of their Removing. We then un-
 ' derstood from the General and his Officers that, }
 ' at Twelve last Night, Orders were given, upon June.
 ' Consideration that the whole Body of the Foot
 ' were so closely contracted, that the Quarters
 ' should be enlarged every Way, as well to-
 ' wards *London* as otherwise, for the mutual Ease
 ' of the Country and Soldiery. Against this Re-
 ' solution we immediately declared our Objections,
 ' and very earnestly expostulated the Business with
 ' the General and Officers, as that which, accord-
 ' ing to our Apprehensions, would minister Jeal-
 ' oucies and Discontent to the Houses, and ob-
 ' struct the Composure of Things, which we found
 ' your Inclinations and Actions leading unto. In
 ' Reply to which the General and Officers prayed
 ' us to represent, that though, in their Proceedings
 ' in this Business, they might have been necessita-
 ' ted to some Actions of this Nature, that might
 ' carry in the Face of them Occasion of Jealousy,
 ' yet in Truth they were done for the Ease of the
 ' Country and Soldiers; and they did also desire
 ' that this Action might be so look'd upon by the
 ' Parliament: But withall, in this Conference, we
 ' so far prevailed with the General and Officers,
 ' that though the Quarter-Masters were gone be-
 ' fore, and some Regiments were on their March
 ' towards *Harrow on the Hill*, and other Places
 ' thereabouts, the Orders were immediately coun-
 ' termanded, and new Quarters were assigned them,
 ' with this Declaration, That none of them are
 ' appointed to be nearer *London* than 15 Miles.

' In this Debate, we labouring to possess them
 ' with our good Intentions for their Satisfaction,
 ' and to draw them to a Certainty that their Re-
 ' moval from hence may be at a further Distance
 ' from *London*, they made this Answer, That there
 ' were some Things unresolved by the Houses,
 ' contained in their late Remonstrance, that were

34 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

June.

of immediate and absolute Necessity to the Being
of the Army, viz. the first Article concerning the
recalling of the Declaration inviting Men to desert
their Army. The second, for equal Pay for the
Army with those that have deserted it. And the
fifth Article, for discharging and dispersing of
such as have deserted this Army; in which, if
they may receive the Houses Pleasure speedily,
they give us Hope of a certain Answer touching
the Motion of the Army to a further Distance
from *London*. These Things I thought fit to
acquaint your Lordship with, finding the Army's
Expectations to be very great upon the Resolutions
of Parliament this Day to be taken. The
General told us that the King was unwilling to
go back to *Newmarket*, and that he would be
this Night at *Hatfield*. Thus I rest,

My Lord,

Your Lordship's most humble,

and faithful Servant,

C. NOTTINGHAM.

After reading these Letters the Lords ordered
all private Business to be put off for ten Days.

June 28. Several more Letters were read, addressed,
as usual, to the Earl of *Manchester*,
Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore*: And
first,

A Letter from the Lord *Montague*.

My Lord,

Hatfield, June 27, 1647.

Others concerning the King's
Chaplains, &c. being admitted to
attend him.

THE King marched hither Yesterday, being
not willing to stay at *Royston*, or to return
to *Newmarket*. The Duke of *Richmond* came
to his Majesty last Night; others in like
Condition are here; Dr. *Sheldon* and Dr. *Hammond*
fol-

‘ followed from *Royston*, and the latter preached before the King this Morning; which Account is all I can give you, remaining

An. 23. Cal. I.
1647.
June.

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

E. MONTAGUE.

Next, a Letter from the Earl of *Nottingham* and the Lord *Wharton*, with a Paper inclosed from the General and his Council of War.

Uxbridge, June 27, 1647.

May it please your Lordship,

THE Letters sent last Night, with the Votes inclosed, we have communicated this Morning to the General, and desired him to put the Business of the Treaty into a speedy Way; which he promised to consider of with his Council of War.

This Afternoon the General sent us, by Commissary-General *Ireton*, and some others of his Officers, this inclosed, in Answer to our Desires, Yesterday, to know what Things they desired to have granted before the Army drew back; upon Perusal of which we told them, That there were some Things expressed in the Paper which the Houses had already granted. To which they gave us this Reply, That the Heads of this were resolved at a Council of War, before your last Resolutions came to their Knowledge; that the Council of War had not since met; and therefore the Paper might contain some Things that the Houses had already answered.

And, upon Conference, they did discover thus much of their Intentions touching their Remove, that they intended to make *Reading* their Headquarters, and that the Body of the Army should lie behind and on the Sides of *Reading*; but that to be their nearest Quarters towards *London*.

We conceive that the Treaty is little likely to advance while the Army remains here; therefore

36 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
June.

your speedy Resolutions as to these Things contained in the inclosed Paper, will speed both the Remove of the Army from hence, and draw on the Treaty; in which, when Things are ready for it, we shall serve you with all Diligence and Fidelity to the utmost of our Power and Interest, as besit,

My Lord,

Your Lordship's faithful

and humble Servants,

C. NOTTINGHAM.
P. WHARTON.

The Paper inclosed in the above was intituled,

A DECLARATION of the ARMY, upon the Parliament's Commissioners Desire to know what they would have.

Whereas the Right Honourable the Commissioners of Parliament have desired to know from us what Things we do desire to be granted before the drawing back the Quarters of the Army to a further Distance from London, upon the granting whereof we will engage to draw back: We do, in Answer thereunto, propose these Particulars following, as what are of present Necessity to us, and we do desire at present to be granted, in order to the Army's and Kingdom's present Safety in the further Debate, Transaction, and Settlement of those other Things contained in our former Papers and Representations, which will require and may admit more Time; upon the granting of which Things we shall willingly draw back as is desired, to have those other Matters debated and transacted at a further Distance with Deliberation, answerable to the Nature and Weight of them.

I. That the Parliament would be pleased to recall the Declaration, inviting Men to desert the Army,

“ Army, and promising their Arrears in case they
 “ so do; and to declare for the future, That who-
 “ soever shall desert their Colours and Charge in
 “ the Army, without the General’s particular Li-
 “ cense and Discharge, shall not have any of their
 “ Arrears paid them.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

2. “ That the Army may be paid up equally
 “ with those that have deserted. This we desire
 “ may be immediately granted or resolved before
 “ we draw back, and to be performed at least to the
 “ private Soldiers fully, and in part to the Officers,
 “ with all convenient Speed.

3. “ That those that have deserted the Army
 “ may be instantly discharged and dispersed, and
 “ receive no more of their Arrears till the Army
 “ be first satisfied.

4. “ That both the Parliament and City may be
 “ speedily and effectually freed from the Multi-
 “ tudes of Reformadoes, and other Soldiers before
 “ mentioned, that flock together in and about
 “ London, by a speedy Dispatch and Discharging of
 “ them from the City.

5. “ That all such Liftings and Raisings of new
 “ Forces, or Drawing together of any, as in our
 “ Remonstrances and Papers are expressed, and all
 “ Preparations towards a new War, may be effec-
 “ tually declared against and suppressed; and also
 “ all Endeavours and Invitations to draw in foreign
 “ Forces, either from Scotland, or other foreign
 “ Parts.

6. “ That the Continuance of the Army in the
 “ Pay of the State for some competent Time,
 “ while the Matters in Debate, relating both to the
 “ Army and the Kingdom, may be concluded and
 “ settled, be at present ordered and declared for
 “ before our drawing back; and the same, with all
 “ Speed, effectually to be put in an established Way,
 “ that the Army may be enabled to pay Quarters,
 “ for the Ease of the Country where it must lye,
 “ and the Soldiery better kept from Abuse to the
 “ Country, and reduced to that good Order and
 “ Discipline which has been formerly happily kept

Ap. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

in this Country; though of late, through Want of Pay, and other just Discontents, with the late Provocations put upon them, unhappily interrupted.

7. That, during the same Space, the Parliament would resolve not to propose any Place for his Majesty's Residence nearer *London* than they will allow the Quarters of the Army to be.

Now, for our former Desire of a present Suspending the impeached Members from sitting in the House:

1. Whereas we understand the House hath voted, That it doth not appear that any Thing hath been said, or done, by the eleven Members, within the House, touching any Matter contained in the Papers from the Army, for which the House can in Justice suspend them; tho' if Way were given and opened, without Breach of Privilege, for us to charge them with, and for others to be examined freely to testify unto such Things, we should not doubt to make such Proceedings and Practices of theirs in the House to appear, for which, according to former Precedents, they justly might and ought to be suspended; yet we are so tender of the Privileges of Parliament, as that we shall, at present, forbear to reply or press further upon that Point, for the Houses Proceedings therein upon their own Cognizance.

2. Whereas the House of Commons hath voted, That, by the Laws of the Land, no Judgment can be given to suspend those Members from sitting in the House, upon the Papers presented by the Army, before Particulars produced and Proofs made; though we think good Reasons may be given, and Precedents found, to the contrary, even in the Proceedings of this Parliament, (as in the Case of the Earl of *Strafford*, the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the Lord-Keeper *Finch*, and others) yet we declare that we have both Particulars and Proofs against them ready to produce; but considering that the Proceedings thereupon will probably take up much Time, and the

present unsettled Affairs of the Kingdom, in relation to those great Matters proposed by us, do require a speedy Consideration: We shall be willing that these greater and more general Matters of the Kingdom be first considered of and settled before the Censure of those Members be determined; and therefore, because they may apprehend it some Prejudice to them to have their particular Charges given in, and lie on them so long undetermined, we shall be willing to forbear the giving in of the Particulars against them, till they may, without Interruption to the general Affairs, be immediately proceeded upon: But, if the House do think fit that the Particulars against them be first delivered in, we shall be ready to do it.

3. 'Whereas we understand that the Members charged have desired Leave from the Houses to withdraw themselves, we cannot but take Notice of the Modesty thereof, so far as that we are contented therewith, for the present more quiet proceeding to settle the perplexed Affairs of the Kingdom (which, without any private Animosities against Persons, is our greatest End in what we do); only we declare that, as we suppose the Gentlemen themselves, from the same Grounds that induced them to offer this, will still forbear to offer the contrary, till the Matters concerning them be heard and determined, or to make any new Interruption or Disturbance to the Proceeding thereupon, or Settlement of the general Affairs of the Kingdom; so we hope, and shall confidently expect, that the Wisdom and Justice of the House will not admit any Things to the contrary, or leave it to an Hazard thereof; but will use sufficient Care and Caution against such Things, and for the bringing those Members to Trial, when the House shall judge it reasonable and safe, as before expressed.'

By the Appointment of his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax and his Council of War.

*Whitehall, June 27,
1647.*

JOHN RUSHWORTH.

The

An. 25. Car. 1.
1647.
June.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
June.

The same Day another Letter from the Earl of Nottingham and the Lord Wharton was read in the House of Lords.

For the special Service of the Parliament.

For the Right Hon. EDWARD Earl of MANCHESTER, Speaker of the House of PEERS.

*Uxbridge, June 27, 1647.
Twelve at Night.*

May it please your Lordship,

WE had, very late this Afternoon, Information given us that Dr. Sheldon and Dr. Hammond, two of the King's Chaplains, Mr. Kirk, Mr. Levingstone, and Mr. Henry Murray, all of the Bed-Chamber to the King, were gone to his Majesty at Hatfield, and had Access to his Person; which we thought ourselves in Duty obliged immediately to know of the General, especially in regard that the two Chaplains were desired formerly, and the Houses forbore to give any Resolution therein. This we have done since our Dispatch this Day by Col. White and Mr. Povey; and the General tells us, That it is very true that the King wrote to him about a Fortnight since about those two Chaplains, and he never gave him an Answer; whereat the King was angry: That he hears they are at Hatfield, but by no Order of his; and that the Commissioners there, who have Power to restrain their Coming, will not direct Colonel Whaley so to do; and Colonel Whaley, on the other Hand, conceives he hath not Power to debar their Access without the Commissioners Order; and thus, between both, they have Freedom: Herewith we thought fit to acquaint your Lordship, as also that the General then told us that a Resolution was taken to draw back some of the Quarters of the Army as far as Wickham, Beconsfield, Okingham, Marlow, and Henley; but the Head-Quarters will remain here, in Expectation of your further
An-

Of ENGLAND. 41

* Answer to their Desires sent up this Day by Co- An. 23. Car. I.
* lonel White and Mr. Povey. Thus we rest, 1647.

My Lord,

Your Lordship's faithful

and humble Servants,

C. NOTTINGHAM.
P. WHARTON.

After a long Debate the Question being put, Whether to inforce the former Vote of the 24th of June Instant, concerning the King's being at *Royston* or *Newmarket*, by a Letter to the Commissioners with the King at *Hatfield* and to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*? it was resolved in the Affirmative; the following Lords entering their Dissents by subscribing their Names:

LINCOLN,	MIDDLESEX,
STAMFORD,	SUFFOLK,
HUNSDON,	WILLOUGHBY.
MAYNARD,	

Then it was ordered that a Letter be written to the Commissioners residing with the King, in pursuance of the abovesaid Vote. This was done, and sent to the Commons for their Concurrence, which that House having immediately given, the Letter was sent to the Commissioners accordingly, *in hæc Verba*:

My Lords and Gentlemen,

* WE are commanded by both Houses to let
* you know the great Danger of admit- Both Houses for-
* ting any such Persons to the Presence of the bid admitting of
* King, as are prohibited by your former Instruc- Delinquents to
* tions. And, for your more positive Direction the King's Pre-
* therein, they have sent you the inclosed Order, sence.
* requiring your utmost Care in the speedy and ef-
* fectual Execution thereof. Thus, having no-
* thing further in Charge, we remain, &c.

A

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
June.

A Letter to the General was also agreed to, for him to command the Guards that attended the King, to be obedient to the Direction of the Commissioners.

Two Resolutions sent up by the Commons were likewise agreed to, and ordered to be sent to the General, *viz.*

They pass several
Votes for satisfi-
fying the Army,

Resolved, &c. ' That they do declare that no Officer or Soldier, from and after the Publication of this Order in the Army, shall leave it without the particular Leave and Discharge of the General.

Resolved, &c. ' That they do declare they own this Army as their Army; will make Provision for their Maintenance; and will take Order, so soon as Money can conveniently be raised, that they shall be paid up equally with those that have left the Army.'

And require the
King to go back
to Holdenby.

June 29. Both Houses agreed in a Vote this Day, that the King should not come from *Hatfield* to *Richmond*, but go back to *Holdenby*; and ordered a Letter to be sent to their Commissioners with another to the General for that Purpose.

June 30. A Letter from Lord *Montague* was read, addressed, as usual, to the Earl of *Manchester*, Speaker of the House of Peers.

Hatfield, June 29, 1647.

My Lord,

A Letter from
Lord *Montague*,
relating to De-
linquents being
admitted to the
King.

WE received this Day your Letter of the 28th Instant, with the Votes inclosed, whereby the Duke of *Richmond*, Dr. *Sheldon*, Dr. *Hammond*, and others in like Condition with them, are to be removed from about the King; for which Purpose we have required the Guards here to obey us, and directed Sir *Thomas Fairfax* to give them Orders therein. Before we had not any Power at all to command Colonel *Whaley*, or the Regiment under him, neither could we assume an Authority which you had not given us; and therefore we hope that this Resort to the
King

King will not, in any ways, be imputed to us, An. 23. Car. I. 1647.
 Upon the Receipt of these new Orders to us
 we have imparted them to Colonel *Whaley*;
 whose Answer to us is, That when he receives
 the General's Orders herein, which, according
 to the Votes, he conceives he is to expect, he
 shall be very ready to observe the Directions we
 shall give him; tho' as yet, having not heard from
 his Excellency, he cannot give us further Satis-
 faction; but shall forthwith send to the General
 and acquaint him therewith, being very ready,
 according to the Orders he shall receive from his
 Excellency, to perform his Duty to the Parlia-
 ment. In the mean Time we are not in a Ca-
 pacity to discharge your Commands, and hope
 you will not expect that which is not in the
 Power of

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

E. MONTAGUE.

A Letter from Sir *Thomas Fairfax* was also read,
 addressed to the Speaker of the House of Peers,
 concerning a Complaint made by the Scots Com-
 missioners of the intercepting a Packet of theirs by
 the Army.

My Lord,

Uxbridge, June 29, 1647.

I Can assure your Lordship I am altogether ig- Another from
 norant of seizing the Packet between *Hun-* Sir Thomas
tingdon and *Stilton*, which was going to *Scotland* Fairfax, concern-
 from the Scots Commissioners; neither was it ing the seizing a
 ever brought to the Head-Quarters that I could Packet of the
 hear: Had I known of any such Thing, I should Scots Commis-
 not have let it pass, without making the Ac- sioners.
 tor in so foul a Business an Example. I shall be
 very careful, as much as in me lies, that none of
 the Army under my Command shall offer any
 Interruption to the Intercourse of Packets be-
 tween the Kingdom of *Scotland* and their Com-
 missioners at *London*; and should be very loath to

44 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

June.

be an Occasion of a Breach of the good Correspondency betwixt the two Nations.

About a Week since there happened a Business at *Ware*, which perhaps is the Thing intended in your Letter: There came one to the Guard, who, being examined, said first he was going to *Scotland*. Being desired to produce his Pass, it was only from Major-General *Webb*, to go to *Roxton*. Then being demanded whither he was to go? he said, To *Newmarket* to Mr. *Maxwell*. Lieutenant-Colonel *Jubb* being then upon the Guard, and finding him in several Stories, sent him, with two Troopers, to the Head-Quarters at *St. Alban's*, with a Bundle of Papers, sealed up in a blank Paper, without any Direction at all; neither had he any Pass from the Commissioners of *Scotland*; yet he no sooner came to the Head-Quarters but he was permitted to go to *Newmarket* accordingly, with the Bundle of Papers he had with him. I thought fit to mention this Particular, lest there should be a Misconstruction had thereof. This being all I have to trouble your Lordship with, I remain

Your Lordship's most humble Servant,

T. FAIRFAX.

A Letter from the Earl of *Nottingham* was read, addressed, as usual, to the Speaker of the House of Peers.

Uxbridge, June 29, 1647.

May it please your Lordship,

More Letters and Papers touching the Negotiations between the Parliament and the Army,

WE have received yours, dated Yesterday, with the Votes of both Houses inclosed, That no Officers or Soldiers should leave the Army without the General's Leave, and of the Houses owning the Army and providing for it. We have this Morning communicated them to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*; and took that Occasion to move him that the Business of the Treaty may be

be put into a Way, and the Head-Quarters to be removed at a further Distance from London; both which the General told us should be taken into speedy Consideration, and that he would give us an Account of their Resolutions with all Conve-
 niency. I am,

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 June.

My Lord,

Your humble and faithful Servant,

C. NOTTINGHAM.

Next was read another Letter from the Commissioners of Parliament residing with the Army.

Wickham, June 29, 1647.

May it please your Lordship,

ON the Way from this Town to Uxbridge, this Afternoon about Six o'Clock, we received this inclosed Paper by a Messenger from the General, which we thought ourselves in Duty obliged to send your Lordship, and rest

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

C. NOTTINGHAM.

P. WHARTON.

The Paper sent by General Fairfax to the Earl of Nottingham and the Lord Wharton.

Uxbridge, June 29, 1647.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

BY the Votes you were pleased to communicate to me this Morning, I find the Parliament hath taken into their Consideration those Propositions of the Army, which necessarily craved some Satisfaction before the withdrawing of it; and that their Progress already made, though but in part, meets with such a Compliance in my Council of War, that it begets in them a
 ge-

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

July.

general Confidence of the Houses speedy and full Answer to their remaining Propositions; and therefore, to testify the Readiness of this Army to observe the Commands of the Parliament, they have resolved to move the Army to a further Distance, and the Head-Quarters to be this Night at *Wickham*; believing this Forwardness on their Part to satisfy both Parliament and City, will not retard but rather hasten the Resolutions of the Houses, with a full Satisfaction to the Particulars not yet answered; and also to acquit this Army of any Jealousies and unjust Aspersions cast upon it.

By the Appointment of his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax and the Council of War.

JO. RUSHWORTH.

July 1. Divers Letters were read in the House of Lords, all directed to the Earl of *Manchester* as Speaker, the Tenor whereof was as follows:

A LETTER from the Lord MONTAGUE.

My Lord,

*Hatfield, June 29, 1647.*And the King's
Removal.

Immediately after we received the Votes concerning his Majesty's Remove to *Holdenby*, we acquainted him therewith. He answered, That he had already resolved to remove to *Wind-sor*, and sent Part of his Stuff thither; and on *Thursday* intends to set forwards to that Place, which he would have done To-morrow had it not been the Fast after his coming hither. If he were moved, he said we should have his farther Answer. Col. *Whaley* hath not yet received any Direction from the General, so as we cannot give you any other Account of the Commands you have laid upon us, either in this of his Majesty's Removal or by your former Votes; but remain

Your Lordship's most humble Servant,

E. MONTAGUE.

A

A LETTER from Col. WHICHCOT, Governor An. 23. Car. 1.
of Windsor Castle.

1647.

Windsor, June 30, 1647.

July.

Right Honourable,

AT this Instant Mr. Dowsett, with others attending upon the King, are come to give me Notice that his Majesty intends to be here To-morrow Night, with the Commissioners of both Houses of Parliament; and that from them they have Orders to hasten the Preparing of his Majesty's House, within this Castle, for his Entertainment; that I shall receive further Directions concerning this from the General, Sir Thomas Fairfax, and Col. Whaley; and that Dinner is to be made ready To-morrow at the Lord Grey's House, near Watford, for his Majesty as he passeth. All which I thought it my Duty to inform the Parliament of, and, as I am obliged, subscribe myself

Your Lordship's most humble Servant,

N. WHICHCOT.

A LETTER from Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX.

My Lord, Wickham, June 30, 1647.

I Received a Letter this Evening from the Governor of Windsor, and also an Intimation from Col. Whaley, who I have appointed for his Majesty's Guard, that the King desires, and intends, to go To-morrow for Windsor, to remain there for four or five Days; having Hopes by your Commissioners, as he himself saith, to see his Children, who he expects shall meet him there; and, after, he is willing to remove to some other convenient Place at a greater Distance from London. I must confess I find myself in a great Strait what to do herein, knowing his Intentions contrary to your late Votes; and not having your further Commands or Directions to advise

AN. 23. CAR. 1.
1647.

July.

‘vise his Majesty herein, I could do no more than
‘give a speedy Account of his Resolutions, and
‘desire you to believe that I shall be very careful
‘to place a very trusty Guard about him for the
‘Security of his Person.

‘I have sent to his Majesty, to desire that he
‘would alter his Resolutions, and go to some Place
‘which might be more convenient to your present
‘Affairs; but do conceive he will scarcely be per-
‘suaded thereunto till four or five Days be past:
‘After that I shall, in pursuance of your Votes,
‘use all Diligence for his safe Remove to some
‘convenient Place further distant from *London*,
‘untill the Settlement of the Affairs of the King-
‘dom and your Commands shall otherwise dispose
‘of him. I remain

Your Lordship's most humble Servant,

T. FAIRFAX.

Another LETTER from the Lord MONTAGUE:

My Lord,

Hatfield, June 30, 1647.

‘THIS Afternoon about Four o’Clock, sup-
‘posing by that Time an Answer might be
‘received from the General, we again desired to
‘speak with Col. *Whaley*, who assured us that he
‘had not as yet received any Order from his Ex-
‘cellency concerning the Removal of such Persons
‘as, contrary to our Instructions, resorted to the
‘King. We replied, That it lay upon us to re-
‘quire the Performance of the Commands laid up-
‘on us by your Votes, which we desired might
‘be done in that Course which we had taken at
‘*Holdenby*; to wit, that when any Person suspected
‘to have been in Arms against the Parliament, or
‘otherwise within the Fifth Article of our Instruc-
‘tions, was discovered to be in the Court, he was in-
‘stantly, by our Directions given to the Chief Com-
‘mander of the Guards present, to be brought be-
‘fore us; and upon Examination, if the Informa-
‘tion

tion proved to be true, he was appointed by us to be removed or committed as the Case required; which was accordingly put in Execution by the Chief Commander of the Guards present, in pursuance of the Orders we gave him. Conformably thereunto we named unto him Dr. Sheldon and Dr. Hammond, to be proceeded against in like Manner. Col. Whaley answered, That he was to obey the Orders of the General, and, by express Authority of the Houses, was questionable at a Council of War for his Life, if he did otherwise; that he was to expect particular Commands from the General, even by the Votes which at present we insisted upon; and that our Orders were not satisfactory to him till he had received his, wherein he supposed the Sense of the Houses would not be otherwise taken; for that they would not impose upon him an Obedience which might involve him in a Contradiction to the General's Orders, which, if he observed not, his Life was at Stake: But it was clear they intended not to ensnare him therein, having positively referred him to Orders which he was to receive from his Excellency first; to whom he should make a speedy Address to that Purpose.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
July.

Hereby your Lordships may well understand that we are in no Capacity of serving you, either in this or what concerns his Majesty's Removal; presuming you will not expect we should take this Employment upon our own Hands, without the Ministry of those you have appointed to obey us. We have now six Months constantly attended upon this Service, and do earnestly wish to be discharged, which shall be taken as a Favour to,

My Lord,

Your most humble Servant,

E. MONTAGUE.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

July.

Both Houses in-
force their Orders
for keeping De-
linquents from
his Majesty's
Presence.

After reading all the foregoing Papers, the Lords resolved that a Letter be sent to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, requiring him to see the two Votes of the 28th and 29th of *June* last put in Execution, and to give Order to the Guards now with the King to observe all Directions they should receive from the Commissioners of Parliament; also another Letter to those Commissioners to put the said Votes in Execution. Two Letters were accordingly drawn up by the Earl of *Manchester*, and sent to the Commons for their Concurrence, who agreed to them without Alteration.

A Complaint being also made that Dr. *Hammond* and Dr. *Sheldon* had oftentimes, of late, used the Common Prayer Book, and officiated before the King with divers superstitious Gestures, contrary to the Directory, thereby incurring the Penalty prescribed by Ordinance of Parliament for the same, the Lords ordered that they do forthwith appear at their Bar to answer such Matters as should be objected against them.

Next, a Letter from the Earl of *Nottingham* and the Lord *Wharton*, with two Papers inclosed, was read.

*For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of PEERS.*

Wickham, July 1, 1647.

May it please your Lordship,

Letters relating
to the intended
Treaty between
the Commissioners
of the Parli-
ament and the
Army.

Y^esterday being the Fast, we put the General in mind of the Treaty, and did earnestly press him thereunto by Letters, a Copy whereof we send you; in Answer to which we received the inclosed about One o'Clock this Morning. This being all at present, we rest

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

C. NOTTINGAM,
P. WHARTON.

A

A Copy of the Commissioners Letter to the An. 27. Car. 1.
General, mentioned in the foregoing.

Wickham, June 30, 1647.

July.

May it please your Excellency,

‘ HAVING received Power from both Houses to
‘ treat with your Excellency, and such of the
‘ Army as you shall appoint, upon the Papers and
‘ Desires sent from the Army to the Houses, and
‘ the Votes sent to us and the Commissioners,
‘ wherewith we acquainted your Excellency on
‘ Sunday last; and did then desire your Excellency
‘ to put the Treaty into a Way, which Desires
‘ we have every Day since renewed :

‘ Forasmuch as the Peace of the Kingdom is
‘ highly concerned in the speedy Dispatch thereof,
‘ and the Expectations of the Houses, the City, and
‘ the Kingdom are much set thereon, your Quar-
‘ ters being now removed at some reasonable Dis-
‘ tance further from the City; we desire to know
‘ from your Excellency with what Persons we are
‘ to treat, and the Time and Place of Meeting,
‘ for the bringing this Business to a speedy Con-
‘ clusion; in this we are the more earnest because
‘ we are very sensible that all Delays herein will
‘ be unacceptable to the Houses, and thus we rest,

S I R,

Your Excellency's humble Servants,

C. NOTTINGHAM,	THO ^r . WIDDRINGTON,
P. WHARTON,	ROB ^t . SCAWEN,
H. VANE,	THO ^r . POVEY.

Sir Thomas Fairfax's Answer to the Parliament's
Commissioners.

Wickham, June 30, 1647.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

‘ I Am very sensible of the great Inconveniences
‘ which Delay in the speedy Settlement of the
‘ Affairs of the Kingdom may produce, and there-

52 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

‘fore I am ready, according to the Parliament’s Desire, to appoint Officers to treat and attend your Lordships for that Purpose with all possible Speed, that Delay may not rest on my Part: But I must needs tell you that the Army is unsatisfied, and do conceive themselves and the Kingdom unsafe, untill their last Proposition delivered into this House be fully answered; which they hope will be the Parliament’s next Care, and therefore desire to know their Pleasure concerning them before they come to a Conclusion in any Thing; which being done, I am confident they will proceed with unanimous Intention to observe their Commands in all Things which may tend to the Good of the Kingdom.’

By Appointment of his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax and his Council of War.

J. RUSHWORTH.

July 2. The Commons sent up a Vote they had passed, and desired their Lordships Concurrence to it, viz. ‘That the King should not reside nearer to London than where the Quarters of the Army shall be allowed to be.’ After some Debate, the Lords, on the Question, passed it also, the Earls of Rutland, Suffolk, and Stamford, only dissenting.

The same Day a Petition from the City of London was presented and read in hæc Verba:

To the Right Honourable the LORDS assembled in the High Court of Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons of the City of London, in Common Council assembled,

A Petition from the City of London, for Payment of the Soldiery, a speedy Settlement of the Nation, &c.

Humbly sheweth,

THAT the Petitioners cannot but call to Mind the Deliverance which they and the whole Kingdom did justly expect from this Parliament, after so many Years Suffering under the Power

' Power of an arbitrary Government, both in their An. 23. Car. I.
 ' Spiritual and Temporal Concernments; and they 1647.
 ' do humbly acknowledge that this Parliament }
 ' hath removed many Obstacles, and are confident July.
 ' would, by this Time, with God's Blessing, have
 ' restored the Kingdom to its just Liberties, and
 ' settled a sure Foundation for its future Happiness,
 ' if they had not been diverted by the great Con-
 ' trivers of the Kingdom's Slavery; who, rather
 ' than submit to the Justice of this High Court,
 ' have raised and maintained a bloody, unnatural,
 ' and long War against the Parliament of England;
 ' in the Suppression whereof as much Blood hath
 ' been spilt, so a great Treasure hath been spent;
 ' and the Kingdom is still left involved in many
 ' Engagements and Debts, both to their Brethren
 ' of Scotland, (who, like true Christian Brethren,
 ' came in to our Aid against the common Enemy)
 ' and also to a Multitude of Officers, Soldiers, and
 ' others the well-affected People of this Land, who
 ' did engage in the Defence and Support thereof.
 ' And although the Petitioners, in the Obligation
 ' which the Cause of God and the Public Safety
 ' did cast upon them, have all this Time both
 ' freely contributed, and chearfully submitted, to
 ' many great and unusual Assessments, which also
 ' could not be levied but in an extraordinary Way;
 ' yet they cannot but be sensible how arbitrary Power
 ' hath been, during these Distempers, exercised by
 ' Committees and others, by whom the good Sub-
 ' ject hath been oftentimes more oppressed than the
 ' Delinquent suppressed; and who have managed
 ' the Receipts and Revenues, which were designed
 ' to maintain the Public Charge, so disorderly and
 ' ineffectually, that the Kingdom cannot but be
 ' unsatisfied concerning the due Employment there-
 ' of; and doubt that much of the public Money
 ' hath been employed to private Ends, and remains
 ' obscured in the Hands of such as were intrusted
 ' with the Collection of those Assessments, and the
 ' Improvement of all Sequestrations to the best Ad-
 ' vantage of the Public. And indeed the Petitioners

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

‘ have Reason to attribute much of the late Disorder and Disorders of divers Officers and Soldiers unto the Want of such Money as, if duly collected and faithfully managed, might have, in good Part, if not fully, satisfied the Soldiery; and do humbly conceive that the Parliament hath so much the more Reason to enquire into the same, because that, from this Defect, hath risen those late Attempts of some of the Soldiery; and there is such Use made of the Vote passed by the Parliament for their Satisfaction, to invite and draw together very great Numbers of Officers and Soldiers from all Parts of the Kingdom, under Pretence of sharing the Money so obtained, that it may very much endanger the Peace and Safety of the City. The Petitioners, therefore, for Remedy of the said Grievances, and Prevention of those Dangers which otherwise may be feared, and for Settlement of this miserable and distracted Kingdom, do humbly pray,

1. ‘ That present Command be given, that no Officers of War nor Soldiers, other than such as are already come in, do enter the Line of Communication, under any Pretence of sharing in the Monies lately appointed by Parliament towards the Satisfaction of any Arrears.

2. ‘ That such Officers and Soldiers, who are already paid according to the late several Ordinances of Parliament in this Behalf made, if their usual Habitation and Employment have been within the Line, be enjoined forthwith to betake themselves to their Calling, or some honest Condition of Living; and be prohibited from their loose and tumultuous Wandering and Meeting within this City, and other Places adjacent, under Penalty of losing their Arrears. And that such Officers and Soldiers as have Dwellings or other Relations in the Country, be required to depart the Line within two Days after Publication, and to return to their Homes or Habitations, and there apply themselves to their several Callings, on the like Forfeiture of their Arrears;

‘ except

except such whose present and lawful Occasions
may require their Continuance, to be approved of
by a Committee for that Purpose to be appointed.
And that the Parliament would please to make
some speedy and certain Provision for the satisfi-
fying of all Arrears unto the Soldiery, who have
served the Parliament, within some short and
convenient Time, to be paid in the several Coun-
ties and Places of their Abode, according to the
Conditions of their Entertainment.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
July.

3. That all Officers and Soldiers, who have
been in Arms against the Parliament, or others
who have assisted or contributed thereunto, be
enjoined, upon Pain of Imprisonment, within
twenty-four Hours after Publication, to repair to
their several Habitations, and to fall to their law-
ful Callings; and that such Officers, Soldiers,
and others, as have no Habitations nearer, be
commanded forthwith to withdraw themselves,
and to continue at least twenty Miles from Lon-
don for the Space of forty Days; except such as,
by a Committee authorized and appointed for
that Purpose, shall have Licence, upon just Cause
by them allowed, to remain in or near London,
so long Time untill they have dispatched such
Busineses as they shall have in or near the City;
which ended, then presently to retire twenty
Miles from the City, upon Pain of Imprisonment
as aforesaid.

4. That such Commanders and Soldiers as,
according to former Orders of the Parliament,
have come in from the Army, having received
their Monies, may be otherwise disposed of as
the Parliament shall think fit.

5. That all Persons whatsoever that are pos-
sessed of any Monies or Goods belonging to the
Public, may be enjoined to bring the same, with-
in one Month after Publication, into such pub-
lic Treasury as is or shall be appointed for that
Purpose; under Penalty to forfeit treble the Value
of that which shall be duly proved to be so con-
cealed, the Half of the Forfeiture to be given
to

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

July.

to such Persons as shall make Proof of such Concealment, and the other Half to be applied to the Service of the State.

6. That all Revenues, as well such as are due by Sequestration or otherwise, be managed under such Commissions, and by such Persons as, notwithstanding any Privilege of Parliament or otherwise, may be held to such Rules as are, or shall be, prescribed therein, by Ordinance of Parliament; and be liable, for Breach thereof, to answer the same in due Course of Law; and that no arbitrary Power may be exercised to the contrary by any Person whatsoever.

7. That the Parliament would, for the present, please to lay aside all Business of lesser Consequence, or private Concernment, and improve their Time and utmost Endeavour that such Laws may be prepared for his Majesty's Royal Concurrence as may settle the Government of the Church, secure the People from all unlawful and arbitrary Power whatsoever in future, and restore his Majesty to his just Rights and Authority, according to the Covenant, without all which the Petitioners can never expect any lasting Establishment; that so this long divided and distracted Kingdom may attain to the Blessings of Peace and Unity in Church and Commonwealth.

8. And, that the People may be the better secured to enjoy the intended Effects of such Laws as shall be so made with the Royal Assent, that especial Care be taken that all Officers of State, and other Ministers of Justice, may be Persons of Honour, of considerable Interest, and of known Integrity to the Parliament and Kingdom.

9. That the Parliament would please to provide for the carrying on of the Affairs in *Ireland*, by a speedy transporting the Forces which lie ready on the Sea-side, and such others as shall be willing to engage in that Service, and by such continual Supplies as are requisite to reduce that Kingdom to the Obedience of the Crown of
Eng-

England, and rescue the good Party left there out of the bloody Hands of those barbarous Rebels. And, for the better Encouragement of the Subjects of this Kingdom to continue their Supplies for that Service, that, with as much Speed as conveniently may be, the Parliament will please to take Care that the People be eased of such extraordinary Charges and Burdens as have long lain, and still remain, upon this Kingdom.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
July.

10. That, by just and good Means, the Correspondence with our Brethren of Scotland may, according to the National Covenant, be maintained and preserved.

11. That this Honourable House would please to give Order for a speedy Examination of all unlawful Elections and Returns of the Members thereof, and purge the House of all such as have been unduly chosen, or have been in Arms or in Action against the Parliament; and provide for the Supply of their Rooms, according to the Laws of the Land.

12. That some speedy Course may be taken for the deciding of all Causes formerly determinable in the Court of Admiralty; the Trade and Navigation of this Kingdom, and the Correspondence with foreign Nations, being very much prejudiced, disturbed, and endangered for Want of due Provision herein, as hath formerly been at large represented unto this Honourable House.

13. And lastly, that Satisfaction being made by Delinquents, according to the Wisdom of Parliament, an Act of Oblivion may be passed, for an utter Abolition and final Reconcilement of all Parties and Differences, and for the quiet settling of Peace, Love, and Unity among the Subjects of this Kingdom. All which the Petitioners submit unto the Wisdom of this Honourable House.

The above Petition was presented also to the Commons, and had only this Answer returned to

it

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

it from both Houses, 'That the Presenters had their Thanks for their constant and good Affections to the Parliament; that the Particulars of the Petition were many and long, and a great Part thereof under Consideration already; and the rest they would speedily consider on.'—Mr. *Whitlocke* observes here, 'That several Members attended the House less when these Matters were in Agitation, being unsatisfied that the Army and City should thus seem to impose upon the Parliament.—This is confirmed by the frequent Instances in the *Journals*, about this Time, of Orders of Leave for Members to go into the Country.

The Commissioners residing with the Army having sent up several Papers to the House of Lords, they were read as follows :

*For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of PEERS.*

Wickham, July 1, 1647.

May it please your Lordship,

Copies of several
Papers preparatory
to the Treaty between
the Parliament and
the Army.

UPON Consideration of the General's Papers, which we sent you this Morning, we have this Day made a further Address to the General, desiring him to make known unto us the Persons who should treat with us upon the Papers and Desires sent from the Army to the Houses, and the Votes sent to us, and the Time and Place of meeting; a Copy of which Letter of ours to the General I send you here inclosed: In Answer to which the General sent unto us this Evening, by Colonel *Fleetwood*, a Commission under his Hand and Seal for certain of his Officers to treat with us, beginning in the Morning at our Lodgings by eight o'Clock; a Copy whereof I also send you. Of our Proceedings herein your Lordship shall receive frequent Account.

We have likewise received this Day, from the General, a Vindication of the Army from a printed Pamphlet, published to the Scandal and Prejudice

judice of the Army, a Copy whereof you receive *An. 23. Car. I.*
inclosed from *1647.*

Your Lordship's humble Servant,
C. NOTTINGHAM.

July.

*COPY of a LETTER from the Commissioners to the
General, mentioned above.*

May it please your Excellency, July 1, 1647.

WE have considered your Letter to us, dated Yesterday, in which we perceive your Excellency is ready to appoint Officers to treat with us upon the Papers and Desires sent from the Army to the Houses, and the Votes sent to us; and therefore we desire again that the Persons, Time, and Place may be made known unto us, the principal of our last Propositions being, to our Apprehensions, already fully answered, and the rest under Consideration; which we hope will be this Day perfected. We are,

S I R,

Your humble Servants,

C. NOTTINGHAM, HEN. VANE,
P. WHARTON, THO. WIDDINGTON.
P. SKIPPON,

*COPY of the GENERAL'S COMMISSION to treat
with the Commissioners of Parliament.*

I Hereby appoint Lieutenant-General Cromwell, Commissary-General Ireton, Colonel Fleetwood, Colonel Rainsborough, Colonel Harrison, Colonel Sir Hardress Waller, Colonel Rich, Colonel Lambert, Colonel Hammond, and Major Desborough; these ten or any five of them, of which the major Part of the five last, to treat and debate with the Right Honourable the Commissioners of Parliament residing with the Army, upon the Papers and Desires sent from the Army to both Houses, and the Votes sent to the Army, according
to

60 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

July.

‘ to the Effect of the Order of both Houses, dated
‘ the 26th of June, 1647; and, for that Purpose,
‘ to attend the said Commissioners at their Lodg-
‘ ings at the *Catherine-Wheel*, To-morrow Morn-
‘ ing at eight o’Clock, and so, from Time to Time,
‘ and Place to Place, as shall be mutually agreed
‘ upon.

*Given under my Hand and Seal at Wickham,
the first Day of July, 1647.*

THO. FAIRFAX.

*COPY of a DECLARATION in Vindication of the
Army.*

Wickham, July 1, 1647.

The latter’s Vin-
dication against
the Report of a
private Treaty
between them
and the King,

‘ **W** Hereas we find a Paper, lately printed
‘ and published, bearing the Title of
‘ *Heads presented by the Army to the King’s Ma-
‘ jesty, on Saturday, June 19, 1647*: Though we
‘ think it will, of itself, appear such a confused
‘ headless Piece, so surreptitiously crept forth, and
‘ in such a pure Pamphlet Dress, as we hope it will
‘ gain little Belief to our Prejudice; yet, to avoid
‘ any Jealousies or doubtful Thoughts which it
‘ might possibly breed in any honest Mind, we can-
‘ not but take Notice of it; and, for the Vindica-
‘ tion of the Army, we do hereby declare that the
‘ said printed Pamphlet is most false, scandalous,
‘ and injurious to us and this Army; neither hath
‘ there been any such Paper presented to his Ma-
‘ jesty by or from this Army: And the same we
‘ profess and declare, with great Detestation, con-
‘ cerning another written Paper, whereof we had
‘ a Copy shewed to us Yesterday by the Commis-
‘ sioners of the City, intituled, *Articles agreed upon
‘ between the Army and the King the 16th of June.*
‘ And we desire all that wish well to this Army,
‘ the King, Parliament, or Peace of the Kingdom,
‘ that they will do their best to find out and disco-
‘ ver the Authors and Publishers of the said Paper
‘ and Pamphlet, or any Thing else of that Na-
‘ ture

ture that may be divulged concerning the Army, An. 23. Car. 1.
to interrupt or prejudice the present Settling and 1647.
Composure of Affairs.

And we hope it will not be further needful, or
expected from us, that we should give particular
Answers to every scandalous Paper which the Ma-
lice of our Enemies may forge against us; but
that what we have published to the World in our
Representation, and other Papers avowed by us,
may serve to clear our Intentions untill we shall
appear to act something to the contrary.

*By the Appointment of his Excellency Sir Thomas
Fairfax and his Council of War.*

JO. RUSHWORTH.

This Vindication of the Army was ordered by
both Houses to be printed, and is in Mr. Rush-
worth's Collections; though neither of the Papers,
which gave so great Disgust to that formidable Bo-
dy, are entered there nor in the Journals: But we
have met with a Copy of the first of them in the
Library of the late Sir John Goodricke. There is
not the Name of the Printer subjoined; nor is it
reasonable to suppose any one would dare to own
it so publickly; but it is printed on a broad Sheet,
and runs thus:

HEADS presented by the ARMY to the KING's
MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTY, on Saturday,
June 19, 1647.

- I. **T**HAT Dominion is in the King, and The pretended
Articles thereof.
Property in the Subject.
- II. That they will restore his Majesty to his
Crown and Dignity.
- III. That his Royal Function doth not take
away his natural Relation; he is to have the
Breeding of his Children, and disposing of them
in Marriage.
- IV. That he will be pleased to invite his Royal
Consort the Queen, that he may have the Com-
fort of her Society; and that she shall have the
Exer-

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

Exercise of her Religion according to the Articles of the Marriage.

V. ' That they will not meddle with the Government of the Church, but leave it *in Statu quo prius*.

VI. ' That he be pleased to call them his Army; and, if this be not sufficient Assurance of their Loyalty and Fidelity, that his Majesty will be pleased to set upon them any other Character, whereby they may be more notoriously known to be his Servants.

VII. ' Whereas there is now a Difference between the Parliament and the Army, that his Majesty will be pleased to be the Umpire; for they will have no other Judge between them but his Majesty.

VIII. ' That his Majesty will be pleased to consent to the Dissolution of this Parliament; and that, by the first of *August* next, Writs be issued out for the calling of a new one.

IX. ' That his Majesty will be pleased to consent to an Act of Oblivion, wherein they may be secured as well as his own Party, with a special Regard had to tender Consciences.

' These Heads are drawn to a Declaration, which is expected to come forth, printed at *Cambridge*.'^g

Whether such a Treaty was actually on Foot or not between the King and the Army, and they might, upon the Discovery thereof, think proper to deny it; or whether it was a Device of the King's Party to render the Breach wider between the Parliament and the Army, is left to the Reader's Judgment: But it is evident from the Letters we have lately given, and other foregoing Circumstances, that the King was treated with much more Respect at this Time by the Army than he had been at *Holdenby* by the Parliament's Commissioners. General *Ludlow's* Account of the Army's

Con-

^g The Army was then at *Newmarket*, and their Remonstrances, &c. at that Time were printed at *Cambridge*, by *Roger Daniel*, the University Printer, of which there are several Instances in our Fifteenth Volume,

Conduct towards the King we have already mentioned: And Lord *Clarendon's* will fall not improperly in this Place. ^h

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

July.

‘The King found himself, when at *Newmarket*, attended by greater Troops and superior Officers; so that he was presently freed from any Subjection to Mr. *Joyce*, which was no small Satisfaction to him; and they who were about him appeared Men of better Breeding than the former, and paid his Majesty all the Respect imaginable, and seemed to desire to please him in all Things. All Restraint was taken off from Persons resorting to him, and he saw every Day the Faces of many who were grateful to him; and he no sooner desired that some of his Chaplains might have Leave to attend upon him for his Devotion, but it was yielded to; and they who were named by him (who were Dr. *Sheldon*, Dr. *Morley*, Dr. *Sanderson*, and Dr. *Hammond*) were presently sent, and gave their Attendance, and performed their Function at the ordinary Hours, in their accustomed Formalities; all Persons who had a Mind to it being suffered to be present, to his Majesty’s infinite Satisfaction; who begun to believe that the Army was not so much his Enemy as it was reported to be; and the Army had sent an Address to him full of Protestation of Duty, and besought him ‘That he would be content, for some Time, to reside among them, until the Affairs of the Kingdom were put into such a Posture as he might find all Things to his own Content and Security; which they infinitely desired to see as soon as might be, and to that Purpose made daily Instances to the Parliament.’ In the mean Time his Majesty sat still, or removed to such Places as were most convenient for the March of the Army, being in all Places as well provided for and accommodated as he had used to be in any Progress; the best Gentlemen of the several Counties through which he passed daily resorted to him without Distinction; he was attended

^h *History*, Vol. V. p. 50. 2nd Edit.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

tended by some of his old trusty Servants in the Places nearest his Person; and that which gave him most Encouragement to believe that they meant well, was that, in the Army's Address to the Parliament, they desired 'That Care might be taken for settling the King's Rights according to the several Professions they had made in their Declarations; and that the Royal Party might be treated with more Candour and less Rigour;' and many good Officers, who had served his Majesty faithfully, were civilly received by the Officers of the Army, and lived quietly in their Quarters, which they could not do any where else; which raised a great Reputation to the Army throughout the Kingdom, and as much Reproach upon the Parliament.'

The same Day that the foregoing Letters and Papers from the Parliament's and the Army's Commissioners were read in both Houses, a Letter was also presented to them from the Elector *Palatine*, signifying his Intentions to visit his Majesty. That unhappy Prince, whose principal Support, at this Time, was a Pension of 8000*l. per Annum* from the Parliament, had taken Part with them against his Royal Uncle, and had even condescended to accept of a Seat in the Assembly of Divines.

The Copy of this Letter, as entered in the *Lords Journals*, addressed to their Speaker, runs thus:

My Lord,

July 2, 1647.

The Elector Palatine desires Leave of the Parliament to visit his Majesty.

THE unhappy Differences between the King and the Parliament being in an hopeful Way of Composure, and his Majesty, for the present, near these Parts, it is look'd upon as what may well become my Duty, in the near Relation I have to him, to make a Journey to kiss his Hands; yet, out of my Respects (which are unalterable) to this House, I thought fit to forbear it, untill I know whether they will approve of it: I do therefore desire your Lordship

‘ to acquaint them therewith, that, in case it stand
 ‘ with their Liking, I may send also to know his
 ‘ Majesty’s Pleasure therein ; thus I rest

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 July.

Your Lordship’s most affectionate Friend,

CHA. LODOVIC.

Both Houses ordered That it be left to the Prince
 Elector to do as he should think fit : That a Com-
 mittee be appointed to acquaint his Highness there-
 with ; and that they took well the Respect he had
 shewn to the Parliament on this Occasion.—A
 few Days after the Elector waited upon the King
 at the Lord Craven’s House, near Caversham.

July 3. In the House of Lords several more
 Letters were read, address’d to their Speaker. And
 first,

A Letter from the Lord Montague.

My Lord,

Windsor, July 2, 1647.

‘ THE King removed Yesterday from *Hatfield* More Letters re-
 ‘ to *Windsor*, where Colonel *Whichcot*, be- lating to the
 ‘ ing Governor, hath the Command of the present King’s Removal,
 ‘ Guard ; and we have given him our Orders to
 ‘ remove Dr. *Sheldon* and Dr. *Hammond* from
 ‘ about the Person of the King, with all others that,
 ‘ by your late Votes and the fifth Article of our
 ‘ Instructions, are not permitted to have Access to
 ‘ his Majesty. These Orders he hath willingly
 ‘ received from us, and undertaken to obey them
 ‘ accordingly.

‘ The Duke of *Richmond* went away from *Hat-*
 ‘ *field* two Days ago. This is all at present we have
 ‘ to acquaint you with, being very desirous, as far as
 ‘ in us lies, to observe your Commands, remaining,

My Lord,

Your Lordship’s most humble Servant,

E. MONTAGUE.

P. S. ‘ The King intends to remove from hence
 ‘ to *Caversham*, near *Reading*, To-morrow.’

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

Next, a Letter from the Commissioners residing with the Army, with several Papers inclosed, was read.

Wickham, July 2, 1647.

May it please your Lordship,

Proceedings on the Treaty between the Parliament's Commissioners and those of the Army.

THIS Day we have entered upon the Treaty. The Commissions on both Parts have been read, and some Propositions touching the Method of our Proceeding in the Treaty mutually consented unto, the Copies whereof we send here inclosed.

We have Notice given us that the General and his Council of War are resolved to remove the Head-Quarters To-morrow to *Reading*; at which Place, they assure us, they will proceed in the Treaty with all Diligence and Expedition, on *Monday Morning* by seven o'Clock; thus we rest

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

C. NOTTINGHAM.
P. WHARTON.

The Papers above-referred to in the Commissioners Letter:

At the Treaty begun at Wickham, July 2, 1647, present, of the Commissioners of the Parliament, the Earl of Nottingham, Lord Wharton, Field-Marshal Skippon, Sir Henry Vane, jun. Sir Thomas Widdrington, Colonel White, Thomas Scawen, Esq; and Thomas Povey, Esq;

Present, of the Commissioners of the Army, Commissary-General Ireton, Sir Hardress Waller, Col. Rich, Col. Lambert, Major Desborough.

FOR the Method of Proceedings, it is offer'd by the Commissioners of Parliament, that seeing the Treaty is to be had upon the Papers and Desires sent from the Army to the Houses, and the Votes of the Houses sent to their Commissioners residing with the Army,

I. ' That

1. ' That in all Matters to be treated on, there
' shall be a free Debate had by Conference.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
Joly.

2. ' That the Results of such Debates, in Points
' that relate to the Desires of the Army, shall be,
' by the Commissioners of Parliament, delivered to
' the Commissioners of the Army in Writing, to
' be presented to the Council of War for their
' Consideration, that a speedy Conclusion may be
' thereupon had.

3. ' That in this Treaty nothing shall be taken
' for the Desire, Opinion, or Resolution of the
' Commissioners, on either Part, but what is given
' in Writing, signed by their respective Secretaries.

4. ' That in the managing of the Treaty, and
' for the more speedy Expedition, at any Time,
' Papers signed as aforesaid may be sent and re-
' ceived betwixt the Commissioners upon emer-
' gent Occasions.

5. ' That we shall be desirous to hear from the
' Commissioners of the Army the Way and Me-
' thod wherein they intend to proceed in the ma-
' naging of the Desires of the Army; wherein we
' shall not doubt but that they will take such
' Course as may tend to the greatest Expedition.

6. ' That Meetings of the Commissioners shall
' be, from Time to Time, by mutual Agreement
' of the Commissioners, or upon the Desires of ei-
' ther Party respectively, at such Place within the
' Head-Quarters as the Commissioners for the Par-
' liament shall appoint.

*Signed by the Appointment of the Commissioners of
Parliament.*

GEO. PYKE, Secretary.

Wickham, Catherine-Wheel, July 2, 1647.

' **T**O the Offers of the Right Honourable the
' Commissioners of Parliament, for the Me-
' thod of Proceeding, the Commissioners of the
' Army do answer:

' To the first we agree fully. To the second
' we agree. To the third we wholly agree. To

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

‘ the fourth we agree. To the fifth we shall willingly perform what is desired, at least in Parts, from Time to Time as there is Occasion; but we desire that there may be no Stop to the Proceedings in the Treaty, upon any Part of the Things to be treated on, in Expectation of a general Method for the Whole. To the sixth we wholly agree.

Sign'd by the Appointment of the Commissioners of the Army.

WILL. CLERKE.

The Lords received Advice this Day, that a Messenger had been sent to *Windsor* to enquire after Dr. *Sheldon* and Dr. *Hammond*, and to serve their Lordships Order upon them, requiring them to appear before that House, but that they were gone from thence.

July 6. A Letter from the Lord *Montague* was read, directed as usual.

*My Lord,**Caversham, July 4, 1647.*

‘ Y^Esterday the King removed from *Windsor* to *Caversham*, where now he is. Dr. *Sheldon*, Dr. *Hammond*, and others in like Condition, have the same Liberty of Access as they had before his Majesty came to *Windsor*. This is all the Account I can give you, remaining,

*My Lord,**Your Lordship's most humble Servant,*

E. MONTAGUE.

A Letter from the Earl of *Nottingham* was read.

*Reading, July 5, 1647,**Eleven at Night.**May it please your Lordship,*

‘ W^E acquainted you, by our last, that this Morning, at Seven, we were again to meet the Commissioners of the Army, to make farther

farther Proceeding upon the Treaty; in Expectation whereof we continued untill past Twelve of the Clock this Day, when we had Notice given us by Commissary-General Ireton, Sir *Har- dres Waller*, and some others of the Commis- sioners, that the Business of the Charge concern- ing the eleven Members, and some other inter- vening Occasions, had taken up so much Time that they could not possibly come to us sooner; but they assured us that this Afternoon, about Two o'Clock, they would give us a Meeting; about which Time they came accordingly, and, in the first Place, propounded for our Debate some Things which they affirmed to be wanting in the late Votes of the Houses, in relation to the Desires of the Army sent from *Uxbridge*, June the 27th, 1647. At this Meeting also Intima- tion was given unto us, that they have several Things of Weight to offer, very much condu- cing, as they say, to the preserving of the Peace and Safety of the Kingdom: Unto which we re- plied, That if the Things they had to offer were contained within the Papers and Desires of the Army, to which our Commission refers, we should then be ready to debate upon them when they were communicated to us.

An. 23. Car. 1.
 1647.
 July.

We are in continual Expectation to have what they have to offer to us hereupon; but it is so late at Night that we cannot hope to come to any Debate thereof till To-morrow Morning; and therefore hold it our Duty to give you this Ac- count at present, and rest

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

C. NOTTINGHAM.
 P. WHARTON.

The same Day, July 6, a particular Charge of Impeachment, for high Crimes and Misdemeanors, was presented, by several Officers of the Army, to the House of Commons against the Eleven Mem-

An. 23. Car. I. bers, whom we have lately mentioned, and shall have Occasion to do more frequently hereafter.

1647.

July.

The Officers being withdrawn, the impeached Members, (who, at their own Desire, had Leave to absent themselves from the Service of the House on the 26th of last Month) being sent for, and call'd in, the Charge was read; and they gave a general Answer to the Particulars they were respectively concern'd in. A Day was also appointed for taking this Matter into farther Consideration.—Thus far the *Journals*: But the Articles of this Charge are not entered there, nor in Mr. *Rushworth's Collections*, although subscribed by himself, as Secretary to Sir *Thomas Fairfax* and the Council of War, and printed by their Appointment at the Time; from which Edition the following is a Copy ^a.

A particular CHARGE or IMPEACHMENT, in the Name of his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax, and the Army under his Command, against Denzil Holles, Esq; Sir Philip Stapylton, Sir William Lewis, Sir John Clotworthy, Sir William Waller, Sir John Maynard, Knights, Major General Massey, John Glynne, Esq; Recorder of London, Walter Long, Esq; Colonel Edward Harley, and Anthony Nicholl, Esq; Members of the House of Commons.

A particular Charge of Impeachment, presented to the Commons, in the Name of the Army, against Eleven Members of that House.

‘ **W** Hereas on the 15th Day of June last, the Heads of a Charge were delivered, in the Name of the said Army, unto the Commissioners of Parliament, to be sent up to the Parliament against the Persons above-named: Now, in Prosecution and Maintenance thereof, and according to the Power thereby reserved, it is, in the Name of the said Army, more particularly charged against the said Persons as followeth:

I. ‘ That the said Mr. *Denzil Holles*, during the late War, in Prosecution of the evil Designs

‘ ex-

^a Printed for George Whittington, at the Blue Anchor in Cornhill, near the Royal Exchange, 1647.

expressed in the general Heads or Articles formerly exhibited, contrary to the Trust reposed in him, contrary to his Oath taken in *June 1643*, and contrary to the Ordinance of Parliament, dated in *October 1643*, hath assisted the King in the late unnatural War, and held Correspondence and Intelligence with the Enemy against the Parliament, in Manner following, *viz.* He, being one of the special Commissioners for the Parliament, to present Propositions of both Houses to the King at *Oxford*, did privately, and contrary to his Instructions, at several Times, make his Addresses unto the King's Party there, then in Arms against the Parliament, namely, to the Earl of *Lindsey*, the Earl of *Southampton*, the Lord *Saville* and others; and did secretly plot and advise with them against the Parliament; and did intimate unto them, or one of them, that the said Propositions, then sent unto his Majesty by the Parliament, were unreasonable: And being demanded what Answer he would advise the King to make to the said Propositions, he did advise that the King should demand a Treaty however, and then declare how unreasonable the Propositions were; and that yet, for the Peace of the Kingdom, his Majesty would treat upon them; but withall wished the Treaty might be in *London*, whither the King himself should come upon Security: Adding, That there was nothing in the World that the violent Party (meaning the well-affected Party to the Parliament against the Enemy) did so much fear as his Majesty's coming to *London*, which would be a certain Dissolution of their Authority and Power: And the said Mr. *Holles* bad those said Persons, or one of them, assure the King, That if his Majesty knew as much as he knew, his Majesty would take his Horse and be at *London* the next Day, or Words to that Effect.

And it being again demanded, Whether (if the King should be willing to come) it would be accepted

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
July.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

cepted of? He thereto answered, That certainly
 it would be much opposed, but yet he was confident that he and his Party (meaning some of the Members above-named, and others) should carry it, and wished the King to put it upon that Trial. And the said Mr. *Holles* was desired by the Earl of *Lindsey*, Earl of *Southampton*, and Lord *Saville*, or one of them, that he would be pleased to draw such an Answer in Writing to the said Propositions, as he desired the King should send; and the said Earl of *Southampton*, who was that Night to lie in the King's Bed-Chamber, would persuade the King to condescend unto it; and thereupon he withdrew, and, either the same Day or the next, accordingly carried unto the said Lords, or one of them, a Paper ready written; which, as he said, was such an Answer to the said Propositions as he had drawn for the King to send to the Parliament; which was taken by the said Lords, or one of them, and carried to the King to be considered of; and so much thereof as advised the King's Coming to *London* was laid by, the King fearing to adventure himself, but the rest of the said Paper the Lord *Digby* (who wrote the King's Answer to the Propositions) made use of, in the same Words as Mr. *Holles* had set down; who, to ingratiate himself with the King's Party, did, about the same Time, revile the well-affected Members of the House of Commons, declaring unto the King's Party at *Oxford*, or some of them, that those well-affected Members (which, to render them the more odious as he conceived, he named the violent Independent Party) had ill Intentions, and great Averseness to Peace; and that nothing would be more pleasing to them than for the King to refuse the Propositions, how unreasonable soever the same were: And he also then said, That the Commissioners of *Scotland* were very weary of that violent Party; and that they, being desperate to establish their Presbytery here as in *Scotland*, made their Addresses

‘dresses to him and his Party. All which tended An. 23. Car. I.
‘to the protracting of the said late War, and to 1647.
‘the Hinderance of an happy Peace.

‘And the said Mr. *Holles* did also, after that,
‘receive from the Earl of *Lindsey*, at *Oxford*, a
‘Letter written in white Ink, concerning some se-
‘cret Design; and kept it from the Knowledge of
‘the House from *February* till about *July* after,
‘when it was discovered by him that brought it;
‘but the Letter itself was by Mr. *Holles*, after he
‘had read it, burnt; and the Earl of *Lindsey* mo-
‘ved the King for a Pass for Mr. *Holles* to go to
‘*Oxford*; but the King refused to grant it, saying,
‘That *Holles* did him better Service in the Parlia-
‘ment than he could do him at *Oxford*.

July.

II. ‘That the said Mr. *Holles* and Sir *Philip*
‘*Stapylton*, during the said late Wars, when the
‘Earl of *Lindsey* went from the *Tower of London*
‘to *Oxford*, sent several Messages of Intelligence
‘to the Earl of *Dorset* and Lord *Digby*; thereby
‘assuring them, that they did better Service for
‘the King here in Parliament than they could do
‘him if they were at *Oxford*; and Sir *Philip* *Sta-*
‘*pylton* desired that the Earl of *Dorset* would pre-
‘serve him and his Friends in the good Opinion of
‘the Party at *Oxford*, which was then the King’s
‘Garrison, and he would do as much for his
‘Lordship and his Friends here with the Parlia-
‘ment.

‘And the said Mr. *Holles* and Sir *Philip* *Stapyl-*
‘*ton*, the more to ingratiate themselves into the
‘Favour of the Enemy, did, of their own Accord,
‘without any Direction of the Parliament, draw
‘up other Propositions than those mentioned in
‘the preceding Articles, which they affirmed were,
‘in their Judgments, fit for the King to grant, and
‘for the Parliament to desire; and being so drawn
‘up, sent them privately to his Majesty, without
‘any Authority of Parliament to warrant the
‘same.

III. ‘That the said Mr. *Holles*, Sir *Philip* *Sta-*
‘*pylton*, Sir *William Lewis*, Sir *John Clotworthy*,
‘Sir

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

‘ Sir William Waller, Sir John Maynard, Major-General Massie, Mr. Glynn, Mr. Long, Col. Edward Harley, and Anthony Nicholl, in March, April, May, and June last past, and at other Times, in prosecution of the evil Designs in the several general Heads mentioned, have frequently assembled and met together at the Lady Carlisle’s Lodgings in *Whitehall*, and in other Places, with divers other Persons disaffected to the State, (without any Authority of Parliament) for holding Correspondency with the Queen of *England* now in *France*, and her Participants; with an Intent, by such secret and clandestine Treaties amongst themselves, to put Conditions upon the Parliament, and to bring in the King upon their own Terms; and having a great Power upon the Treasure of this Kingdom, have therewith maintained and encouraged, by Pensions and otherwise, the Queen’s Party in *France*, thereby to beget a second and more bloody War in this Kingdom: And they, or some, or one of them, assured the Queen of 40,000*l.* per Annum, if she would assist them in their Design; and that they would do more for the King than the Army would do; and that they would find out some Means to destroy the Army and their Friends.

IV. ‘ That in further Pursuance of the same evil Designs, the said Mr. Holles, Sir Philip Staplton, Sir William Lewis, Sir John Clotworthy, Sir William Waller, and Major-General Massie, by the Combination aforesaid, within three Months last past, without any Authority of Parliament, invited the *Scots* and other foreign Forces to come into this Kingdom in a hostile Manner, to abet and assist them in the prosecuting and effecting of their said Designs.

‘ And the said Mr. Holles very lately sent to the said Queen of *England*, then and still in *France*, advising her, amongst other Things, speedily to send the Prince into *Scotland*, to march into this Kingdom at the Head of an Army; and did send

‘ a special Messenger to her for such Ends and Pur- An. 23. Car. I.
‘ poses. 1647.

‘ And the said Mr. *Holles*, Sir *Philip Stapylton*,
‘ Sir *William Lewis*, Sir *John Clotworthy*, Sir *Wil-*
‘ *liam Waller*, Sir *John Maynard*, Mr. *Glynne*, Ma- }
‘ *Major-General Massie*, Mr. *Long*, Col. *Edward*
‘ *Harley*, and *Anthony Nicholl*, have under-hand,
‘ of their own Accord, without Authority of Par-
‘ liament, lifted, or caused or procured to be lift-
‘ ed, divers Commanders and Soldiers, endeavour-
‘ ing thereby to levy and raise a new War in this
‘ Kingdom, to protect themselves in their unjust
‘ Oppressions and factious Designs; and have, at
‘ several Times within two Months last past, in-
‘ vited, encouraged, abetted, and counselled Mul-
‘ titudes of Reformado Officers and Soldiers, and
‘ other rude Persons, tumultuously and violently
‘ to gather together at *Westminster*, to affright and
‘ assault the Members of Parliament in their Pas-
‘ sage to and from the House; to offer Violence to
‘ the House itself, by locking the Door thereof
‘ upon them, and so imprisoning them; and, by
‘ such Violences, Outrages, and Threats, to awe
‘ and inforce the Parliament.

V. ‘ That the said Mr. *Holles*, Sir *Philip Sta-*
‘ *pylton*, and Mr. *Glynne*, have been, and are, Ob-
‘ structers and Prejudgers of several Petitions to
‘ the Parliament for Redress of public Grievances.
‘ And the said Mr. *Holles* and Sir *Philip Stapylton*,
‘ in *May* last past, did abuse and affront divers Pe-
‘ titioners, who, in a peaceable Manner, then
‘ attended the Committee, whereof Col. *Lee* was
‘ Chairman; not only reviling and reproaching
‘ them, but violently haling and boisterously as-
‘ faulting them, and offered to draw their Swords
‘ upon Major *Tuleday* and others of the said Peti-
‘ tioners; and, without any Power or Authority,
‘ committed *Nicholas Tew*, one of the said Peti-
‘ tioners; and, soon afterwards, by the Procure-
‘ ment of Mr. *Holles* and Sir *Philip Stapylton*, and
‘ upon their Misinformation to the House, the said
‘ Major *Tuleday* and *Nicholas Tew* were imprison-
‘ ed,

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

July.

ed, not being permitted to speak for themselves.
And Mr. *Glynne*, about three Months since, caused the said *Nicholas Tew* to be imprisoned in *Newgate*, and to be detained a long Time there, for no other Cause but for having a Petition about him which was to be presented to the House.

VI. That the said Sir *John Clotworthy*, Sir *William Waller*, and Major-General *Maffie*, have lately, in prosecution of the said Designs, in the said general Heads mentioned, (against the known Laws of this Realm, and Rules and Articles of War made by the Parliament) by an arbitrary Power imprisoned some Members of the Army without any Authority; particularly Ensign *Nichols*, whose Pockets they, without Authority, caused to be searched, and several Papers to be taken from him, contrary to the Liberty of every Subject; and caused him to be sent a Prisoner from the Head-Quarters to *London*, without the Authority or Privy of the General, or the chief Officers of the Army commanding in his Absence.

VII. That in or about *March* last, there being a Petition intended from the Officers and Soldiers of the Army to their General, for such Things only as were justly due unto them, and concerning them meerly as Soldiers, the said Sir *William Waller*, Sir *John Clotworthy*, and Col. *Edward Harley*, a Member of the Army, having gotten into their Hands a Copy of the said Petition, by Combination with the other Members above-mentioned, and with an Intent to abuse the Parliament into Prejudices and Jealousies against the Proceedings of the Army concerning the said Petition, (they well knowing that the said Army stood in their Way, and hindered them from bringing to pass the Designs in the said general Charge expressed) did untruly and maliciously inform the House, That the said Petition was contrived and promoted to debauch and disoblige the Army from the Parliament; and that it was managed and carried on by divers principal Officers in the Army; that Orders were given

‘ given out for reading of it in the Head of every Regiment, and whosoever would not subscribe it should be put out of the Musters, and cashiered the Army; and, by those and other Aggravations, did represent it to the House as a Design against the Parliament: Further adding, That some Regiments, which were remote, were sent for to join with the rest of the Army for that Purpose; by which Misinformation they did, the same Day, procure a peremptory Order to the General to suppress the said Petition.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
July.

VIII. ‘ That, some few Days after, Col. *Edward Harley*, by the Combination aforesaid, and in pursuance of the same Designs, did produce to the House a Letter, supposed to be written from within the Quarters of the Army to him, by a Person not named; whereby it was informed, That Colonel *Harley's* Lieutenant-Colonel had drawn his Regiment to a Rendezvous, and had caused the said Petition to be read at the Head of it; and that he threatened to cashier and put out of the Musters all that would not subscribe it; and that the Design of the Army therein was to enslave the Parliament and Kingdom, if the Parliament proceeded not to some high Resolutions, or to that Effect, as by the said Letter, Relation being thereunto had, may appear. And although the Substance of the said Letter was most untrue, and no Author thereof appeared, nor could be produced, although a Committee was appointed for Examination thereof, and it was much pressed the Author should be discovered; yet the said Col. *Harley*, Sir *John Clotworthy*, and Sir *William Waller* did so avow the Reality of the said Letter, and that the Contents thereof would be made good, as that thereby, and by other false Suggestions of theirs against the Army, they procured the House (upon long Debate, which held till about Eight at Night) to order, That a Committee of five Members, whereof the said Mr. *Holler* was one, should prepare a Declaration to be brought into the House the next Morning; signi-
fying

An. 27. Car. I.

1647.

July.

‘ fying the Houfe’s Diflike of the Proceedings of
 ‘ the Army upon that Petition, as by the faid Or-
 ‘ der, dated the 30th Day of *March* laft, may ap-
 ‘ pear; upon which fettling of the faid Buſinefs
 ‘ for that Night, moſt of the Members departed,
 ‘ as conceiving nothing would be done thereupon
 ‘ till the next Day, and that then they might have
 ‘ a free Debate concerning the ſame; but the
 ‘ Houſe ſtill continuing to ſit upon Diſpatch of ſome
 ‘ Letters formerly ordered, the ſaid Mr. *Holles*, by
 ‘ the ſame Combination, and in farther Proſecu-
 ‘ tion of the ſaid evil Deſigns, having of himſelf,
 ‘ without the Committee, prepared a Declaration
 ‘ againſt the Petition itſelf, contrary to the Inten-
 ‘ tion and Direction of the ſaid Order, and con-
 ‘ trary to the Rules of Juſtice and uſual Courſe of
 ‘ Parliament, did, the ſame Night, about Ten of
 ‘ the Clock, on purpoſe to ſurprize the Houſe,
 ‘ preſent the ſame Declaration to the Houſe, where-
 ‘ by the ſaid Petitioners were, without being heard,
 ‘ declared Enemies to the State, and Obſtruſters
 ‘ of the Relief of *Ireland*, if they ſtill perſiſted
 ‘ therein, as by the ſame Declaration, whereto
 ‘ Relation being had, may appear; and did procure
 ‘ it to be then paſſed accordingly, to the great Diſ-
 ‘ honour of the Parliament and their Proceedings;
 ‘ to the inſufferable Injury, the juſt Provocation,
 ‘ Diſcouragement, and Diſcontent of the Army;
 ‘ to the Trouble and Danger of the whole King-
 ‘ dom; to the hindering of the Relief of *Ireland*,
 ‘ and other the evil Conſequences in the ſaid gene-
 ‘ ral Charge expreſſed.

IX. ‘ That, by the ſame and the like falſe In-
 ‘ formations and Suggeſtions, the ſaid Col. *Harley*,
 ‘ then a Member of the Army, Sir *John Clot-*
 ‘ *worthy*, Sir *William Waller*, and the ſaid other
 ‘ Perſons, did, ſhortly after the ſaid Declaration
 ‘ ſo made as aforeſaid, procure divers eminent and
 ‘ faithful Officers of the Army, namely Lieut.
 ‘ Gen. *Hammond*, Col. *Hammond*, Col. *Lilburne*,
 ‘ Lieut. Col. *Pride*, and others, to be ſent for from
 ‘ their Charges in the Army, to appear at the Bar
 ‘ of

of the House, to make Answer in relation to the said Petition; against whom, when they came thither, they could charge or prove nothing at all; inasmuch as the House thought fit immediately to discharge them.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
July.

And whereas there was a Committee appointed to examine and consider of the Truth or Falshood of them, and the said Members informing were appointed to produce their Proofs and Evidence to the same before the Committee; though they have since then been often urged, called upon, and demanded to produce their Proofs and Evidence thereto, if they had any, and have been plainly told, That if they did not proceed effectually to do it, they should be accounted the Authors and Devilsers of the said Falshood, and Reparation would accordingly be demanded against them; yet they have not to this Day produced any Proofs or Evidence to any of the said Informations or Suggestions, whereby the Parliament and the Army were so much abused as before is declared; nor could they, or any of them, be hitherto persuaded to give into the said Committee any Charge against the said Officers of the Army, which they had then or since procured to be sent for as aforesaid; but have held divers of them in a long and chargeable Attendance upon the House, without any Thing laid to their Charge, untill the House was pleased to discharge them.

X. That the said Mr. *Holles*, Sir *Philip Stapylton*, Sir *William Lewis*, Sir *William Waller*, Sir *John Clotworthy*, and Major-General *Massie*, in further Pursuance of the Designs mentioned in the general Heads charged against them, have been great Instruments in the obstructing the Relief of *Ireland*; and, within two Months last past, did untruly inform the House, That, by their Procurement, there were fifty Companies of Foot and ten Troops of Horse of this Army engaged for *Ireland*, upon the Terms and under the

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

the Conduct then by the Parliament propounded; and, the more to delude the Parliament therein, they, or some of them, by the Combination aforesaid, did procure divers Officers then in this Army, namely Col. *Butler*, Lieut. Col. *Jackson*, Maj. *Goody*, and others, to let the said Members give in the said Officers Names, as listing themselves for *Ireland* on the said Terms and Conduct propounded; when as those Officers did at the same Time declare themselves unwilling thereunto, and resolved not to go to serve in *Ireland* on any Terms whatsoever, tho' they the said Members under-hand assured them, That though they made use of their Names, yet they should not go for the Service.

They have likewise untruly informed the House, and given in the Names of many considerable Officers of this Army, namely Capt. *Pennyfather* and Capt. *Burges* of Col. *Butler's* Regiment, Capt. *Clarke*, and four or more Commission-Officers of Sir *Hardress Waller's* Regiment, and others, as having been subscribed for *Ireland*, who did not so engage or subscribe, nor give any Consent thereunto; but did then, and have ever since, utterly disavowed and denied the same.

And about the same Time they also reported to the House the Name and Offer of Lieut. Col. *Farrington*, as being then Lieutenant-Colonel of this Army, and engaging for himself and his Regiment for *Ireland*; whereas the said *Farrington* had been cashiered the Army a Year and an half before. By which, and other their untrue Informations and Reports of that Nature, the Parliament was abused and misled into a Conceit and Confidence of a Strength out of the Army, then supposed to be engaged and ready for *Ireland* on their own Terms; when as, in Truth, the same was but a meer Delusion, and which was so contrived on purpose to occasion a slighting and neglecting of the Army, as supposing no further Use for them.

XI. 'Where-

XI. 'Whereas Part of three Regiments of An. 23. Car. I.
'Foot, viz. Col. *Herbert's*, Col. *Kemp's*, and
'Col. *Grave's*, were, by Order of the House, ad- 1647.
'vanced towards the Relief of *Ireland* as far as
'*Bromesgrave*, in the County of *Warcester*; the
'said Sir *Philip Stapylton*, Mr. *Holles*, Sir *John*
'*Clotworthy*, Sir *William Lewis*, Maj. Gen. *Mas-*
'*sie*, Sir *William Waller*, and Mr. *Glynne*, by Com-
'bination aforesaid, did, of their own Accord,
'without the Knowledge or Direction of the House,
'on the 6th of *June* last, (being Sabbath-Day,
'and without summoning a Committee) command
'those Forces back again as far as *Reading*, with
'an evil Intent to draw Forces together to beget
'a new War in *England*.

XII. 'That the said Sir *John Clotworthy*, in
'prosecution of the Designs in the said general
'Charge expressed, hath, in the Years 1642, 1643,
'1644, and since, converted several great Sums
'of Money (which, by several Orders of Parlia-
'ment, and of the *Irish* Committee, were designed
'for the Relief of *Ireland*) to his own particular
'Use; namely the Sum of 280*l.* which, by Or-
'der of both Houses, dated the 11th of *February*
'1642, was to be paid for twenty Butts of Sack
'for *Ireland*; 700*l.* which the same Day was also
'ordered for 2000 Swords; 300*l.* which, by Or-
'der of the said *Irish* Committee, dated the 5th of
'*April* 1643, was designed for 120 Pair of Pistols;
'and divers other Sums of Money, upon several
'Orders, which he, from Time to Time, received
'for the Use and Relief of *Ireland*; but were not
'employed to the Uses by the said Orders intended
'and directed, but to his own private Use as afore-
'said: And that he hath, within two Years last
'past, received several Sums of Money, Arms,
'and other Provisions for a Troop of Horse, which
'he pretended he had raised in *Ireland*; whereas
'he had not, nor did raise or furnish any such
'Troop as he pretended. And that he, for Mo-
'ney and other Rewards, hath preferred *John*
'*Davis*, *William Summers*, and others, to be in-
VOL. XVI. F 'trusted

82 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

‘ trusted with the *Irish* Affairs, who have kept
‘ Correspondency with the Enemy, and have de-
‘ frauded the State of other great Sums of Money;
‘ and he hath been privy to, and a Sharer in, such
‘ their Actions.

XIII. ‘ That, about *November* last past, the
‘ said Sir *John Clotworthy* being, by the Parlia-
‘ ment, sent a Commissioner, with others, into
‘ *Ireland*, who all had a joint Power and Authority
‘ to treat with the Earl of *Ormond* for the Space of
‘ four Days, and no more; he, contrary to the
‘ special Trust reposed in him, held secret Intelli-
‘ gence with the said Earl of *Ormond*, by Cypher
‘ or Character, without the Consent or Know-
‘ ledge of those others in Commission with him,
‘ many Weeks after the Time so limited was
‘ expired; and about the same Time he held the
‘ like secret Intelligence with the Lord *George*
‘ *Digby*, then in *Ireland*, beyond the Time pre-
‘ fixed, and without the Consent of the said other
‘ Commissioners; and, in order thereunto, the
‘ Lords *Ormond* and *Digby* lately employed one
‘ *Slingsby*, who pretends a Design about the Prince,
‘ to come into this Kingdom.

XIV. ‘ That the said Sir *John Clotworthy*, Mr.
‘ *Holles*, and Sir *Philip Stapylton*, by Combina-
‘ tion with the rest of the Members before-named,
‘ in further Prosecution of the Designs mentioned
‘ in the same, well knowing that the Lord *Lisle*,
‘ late President of *Ireland*, was both faithful and
‘ vigilant while he was trusted in the same King-
‘ dom, and had now this last Spring made Provi-
‘ sions ready to march into the Field; and that the
‘ Lord Baron of *Brogbill*, General of the Parlia-
‘ ment’s Horse in *Munster*, and Col. Sir *Arthur*
‘ *Loftus*, Persons of Honour and Reputation, and
‘ of great Fortunes in the said Kingdom, lately
‘ came purposely into this Kingdom to exhibit,
‘ and did exhibit, many Articles of High Treason
‘ against the Lord *Inchequin*, for betraying the Par-
‘ liament’s Army to the Enemy, as formerly he
‘ had done; yet, by the great Power and violent
‘ In-

Interposition of the said Sir *John Clotworthy*, Mr. *Holles*, and Sir *Philip Stapylton*, by the Practice and Combination aforesaid, the said Articles have been obstructed, and the Business not suffered to come to a Hearing, and the said Lord *Lisle* hastily called out of *Ireland*, and the Power and Command of the Parliament's Forces in that Kingdom committed to the said Lord of *Inchequin*, to the Loss of this Summer's Service, and the Expence of much Treasure to make new Preparations of War. And whereas the said Lord *Lisle*, being so suddenly called from thence as aforesaid, did design and depute Sir *Hardress Waller*, Knight, Major-General of the Forces there, a Man of known Integrity and Courage both for his Service in *England* and in *Ireland*, and of considerable Fortune there, to take Care of the said Lord *Lisle*'s Forces till the Pleasure of the Parliament might be further known, the said Lord *Inchequin*, upon the Receipt of a Letter from the said Sir *John Clotworthy*, Mr. *Holles*, and Sir *Philip Stapylton*, or one of them, or from some other Person by their, or one of their, Direction, Privy, or Procurement, did express that he had an Order or Direction from *London* that no Man that favoured the *Independents* (under which Name the said Lord of *Inchequin* hath comprehended all Men that have shewed themselves opposite to Tyranny and arbitrary Government) should have any Trust or Command there; nay, though they were of another Judgment, yet if they would not prosecute the *Independents*, they should not be employed there, or Words to that Effect; and, under Colour thereof, the said Sir *Hardress Waller*, and all others that formerly had held their Commissions from the said Lord *Lisle* while he commanded, were displaced, to the Discouragement of those and other faithful Persons to the Parliament, and to the great Diservice and Danger of losing that Kingdom.

XV. That whereas a Committee of the House of Commons hath been lately appointed by the

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
July.

84 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

Parliament, to consider of Propositions for the settling and Preservation of *Wales*, whereof the said Sir *William Lewis* and Mr. *Glynne* were and are Members, and to report the same to the House; they, the said Sir *William Lewis* and Mr. *Glynne*, with others of the said Committee, did, on the 30th of *April* now last past, without any Authority of Parliament, before any Report made to the House, of their own accord (instead of settling and preserving *Wales*) order that all Committees for Sequestration should forbear all Proceedings of Sequestration against all, or any, of the Inhabitants of *Wales*; and although some few Persons were upon general Heads excepted, yet, by Virtue of that illegal Order, all the Commissioners of the Peace and Commissioners of Associations, who were as active in raising Money and pressing Men to serve against the Parliament as any others; all the Commissioners of Array, that did or should at any Time come in and submit to the Parliament, or their Commanders in Chief, without any Limitation of Time; all that had borne Arms against the Parliament, unless they were Governors, and other Officers of War, that held out some Town, Castle, or Fort against the Parliament; all disaffected and scandalous Ministers, though in their Sermons they usually reviled and scandalized the Parliament and their Proceedings, calling them Rebels and Traitors, and not only incensing the People against the Parliament, but usually taking up Arms, and leading their Parishioners in Arms upon any Alarm against the Parliament; and many other desperate Delinquents have been, and still are, taken off and freed from Sequestration; and the said Order was sent to every Committee in *Wales*, in several Letters, contrary to several Orders and Ordinances of Parliament, and contrary to the Rules of Justice and Equity, which should impartially be administered as well in *Wales* as in others Places of this Kingdom; whereby the ill-affected Gentry and Ministry of that Country are
grown

grown so high and insolent, that honest Men dare scarce live amongst them; so as that which was intended by the Parliament, to settle and preserve *Wales*, is, by the Practice of the said Sir *William Lewis* and Mr. *Glynne*, perverted to the Danger and Destruction of it.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
July.

XVI. That the said Sir *William Lewis* and Mr. *Glynne* have further ingratiated themselves with the Delinquents of *Wales*, and prepared them for their said Designs in Manner following, viz. He the said Sir *William Lewis* hath, within two Years last past, countenanced and protected many of the most notorious and dangerous Delinquents within the several Counties of *South-Wales*; namely, the Lord *Carbery* and others in *Caermarthenshire*; Mr. *Carew*, and others in *Glamorganshire*; Mr. *Morgan*, late Knight of the Shire, Mr. *John Herbert*, and others in *Brecknockshire*; Mr. *Gwyn*, Mr. *Lewis*, and divers others in *Radnorshire*; by freeing some of them altogether from Compositions, tho' sequestred; by labouring with divers Members of the House and of Committees to be favourable in compounding with others, and to admit of such to their Compositions as were incapable thereof; and he hath animated and encouraged some of the said Persons to continue their Fidelity to the King's Cause, promising them, that if they would engage their Friends with the King for him, he and his would be their Friends in the Parliament; in so much as his Friends, the Delinquents in those Parts, have lately looked upon him as a rising Man when the King shall come to *London*; which hath lately been their constant Boasting.

And the said Sir *William Lewis* hath, within two Years last past, caused divers that had been Commissioners for the King, and pressed Men and raised Money to promote the late War against the Parliament; namely his Brother, Mr. *Thomas Lewis*, Mr. *Gwyn*, Mr. *Charles Watwyn*, Mr. *Meredith Lewis*, Mr. *Edward Williams*, and

many

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

many others, to be Commissioners of the Peace, and also Committee-Men for the said County of *Brecknock*; insomuch as those that have been most active and faithful to the Parliament, have been, and still are, out-voted in those Places, and can do no considerable Service for the Parliament; and the rather for that he hath also procured one *Edward Williams*, his own Kinsman, and one much disaffected to the Parliament, to be Solicitor of Sequestrations in the said County, who is, and hath been, very remiss and corrupt therein.

And the said Sir *William Lewis* hath, by the Means aforesaid, lately procured Mr. *Edward Lewis*, his Son, though unfit for that Employment, to be chosen and returned Burgess for *Brecknock*; which that he might the better effect, he kept the Writ for Election of the said Burgess above eight Months in his own Custody before it was delivered to the Sheriff of the said County.

And likewise that the said Mr. *John Glynne*, within two Years last past, hath procured several Persons, that have lately been Commissioners of Array, and in Arms against the Parliament in *North-Wales*, to be named in the Commissions of the Peace for the Counties of *Denbigh* and *Caernarvon*, and other Counties there, and to be put in other great Places of Trust and Command there; and, amongst others, Col. *Glynne*, his Brother, who was lately a Colonel in the King's Army, is, by his Procurement, become Governor of the Town and Castle of *Caernarvon* and Admiral or Vice-Admiral of the *Irish Seas*; to the endangering of those Counties lying upon the Coasts towards *Ireland*, and to the Fear and Discouragement of the well-affected Inhabitants of those Places.

XVII. That the said Sir *William Lewis*, being heretofore, during these Troubles, Governor of *Portsmouth*, a Garrison for the Parliament,

(in

(in which Time he received much of the Public An. 23. Car. 1.
Treasure, for which he hath not yet given an 1647.
Account) did, while he was Governor there, }
frequently hold Correspondence and Intelligence July.
with the King's Party, about the Delivery up
of the said Garrison; insomuch as, although Sir
William Waller, and divers others in that Gar-
rison, were proclaimed Traitors to the King,
yet he, by the King's special Command, was
spared; the King affirming he was his Friend,
and that he was confident he would do him good
Service, or to that Effect: And although he then
was a Parliament Man, and Governor of Portf-
mouth as aforesaid, and was three Years in the
King's Quarters, yet his Estate in the County
of Brecon, being of the Value of above 600 l.
per Annum, was never sequestred. And since
the Parliament hath prevailed, Colonel Herbert
Price (having been Governor of Brecknock for
the King against the Parliament) being seque-
stred, the said Sir William Lewis, by his Solici-
tations to the Committee, procured the personal
Estate of the said Colonel Price (which the Com-
mittee of the County had found out, and cau-
sed to be brought to Morgan Aubrey's House in
Brecon) to be restored unto him without any
Satisfaction to the State; and hath caused the
said Colonel Price's Lands in the said County of
Brecon, being worth about 300 l. per Annum, to
be lett to a Friend of the said Colonel Price, to
his Wife's Use, at 50 l. per Annum, contrary to
the Directions of several Ordinances of Parlia-
ment made in that Behalf.

XVIII. That the said Mr. John Glynne, or
some other Person or Persons by his Direction,
Consent, or Privy, or to his Use, hath, during
his being a Member of the House of Commons,
taken Rewards of several Persons for Services
done them in the House; as namely, amongst
others, divers Drovers from Wales, who, by his
Means and Procurement, had an Allowance, by
Order

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

Order of the House, for 3000 *l.* in Satisfaction of Losses they had sustained by the Enemy, and did pay unto the Wife of the said Mr. *Glynne* the Sum of 100 *l.* as a Reward for his said Service.

XIX. That the said Mr. *John Glynne*, as he hath been most active to bring into the Commissions of Peace, and into other Places of Authority, divers notorious Delinquents in *North-Wales* as aforesaid, so he hath been as active, as much as in him lies, to put out, and keep out, of the Militia and Common Council of the City of *London*, and out of the Commission of the Peace for *Middlesex*, many eminent and faithful Men that have laid out their Estates, and adventured their Lives for the Defence of the Parliament and City in the Time of their greatest Necessity; namely, Alderman *Pennington*, Colonel *Tichborne*, Mr. *Eastwick*, Mr. *Meyer*, and others, contrary to the Declaration of both Kingdoms; which hath assured all lawful Favour and Encouragement to those that have been faithful, and shall so continue, to the Parliament; which Doings must needs tend to the giving a fresh Occasion and Power to the Enemy against the Parliament's best Friends, to the Dishonour of the Parliament, and the Endangering of the Kingdom.

XX. That the said Sir *Philip Stapylton*, Mr. *Holles*, and Sir *William Lewis* have, by their Power and Countenance, as Members of the House of Commons, both jointly and severally, used Means to obstruct the Course of Justice, and have interposed themselves in several Causes, and, by Word of Mouth, moved and persuaded Judges and other Officers on the Behalf of such as they conceive to be their Friends; amongst others, in the great Cause that was lately depending in the House of Lords, between Alderman *Langham* and Captain *Lymery*, when Counsel was met for the pleading thereof, they did repair to the Earl of *Rutland* about the same; and the said Sir *Philip Stapylton* told him that they were fully

ly satisfied concerning the Justness of *Langham's* Cause, and therefore, as the said Earl did respect them, he should give his Vote for *Langham*, or used Words to that Effect; which also was seconded by the said Mr. *Holles* in Words, and agreed unto by the said Sir *William Lewis*, as appeared by his Presence and Gesture; and the said Sir *William Lewis* did exercise the same Power in a Cause of *John Gunter* and others.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
July.

XXI. That the said Mr. *Anthony Nicholl*, although, about four Years since, he was, by the Committee of Privileges, voted not a fit Member to sit in the House, by reason his Election was void; yet the said Mr. *Nicholl* doth not only sit and vote there as a Member, but, by his Power and Threats in the West Countries, and by his Sollicitations and indirect Practices, hath brought in, or procured to be brought in, about 28 Members more out of *Cornwall*, on Purpose to carry on the Designs and Practices before-mentioned, and to make a Faction in the said House; and, notwithstanding the Self-denying Ordinance, he doth still hold a Place in the *Tower*, formerly conferred upon him by the House, and receiveth the Profits thereof to his own Use.

XXII. That the said Mr. *Nicholl* hath, since his sitting in the House as aforesaid, taken Rewards for Service done there; namely, whereas Sir *William Uvedall*, Knight, for deserting the Parliament, and going to *York* with the King, was suspended the House; he, for the Sum of 100 *l.* or 150 *l.* paid unto him, or to his Use, did, by Misinformations to the House, procure the said Sir *William Uvedall* to be re-admitted a Member. And the said Mr. *Nicholl*, while he was a Member of the Committee for Safety, he and others of the said Committee having issued forth a Warrant for searching *Greenwich-House*, did, underhand, acquaint one of the Queen's Officers therewith; and thereby prevented the Design of the said Committee, to the great Disservice of the Parliament and Kingdom.

XXIII.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

XXIII. ' That the said Mr. Long, at the Beginning of the late Wars, not having Courage sufficient to perform his Duty in Military Affairs, did, out of Covetousness, or other unworthy Ends, procure a Command of a Troop of Horse under his Excellency the late Lord-General the Earl of *Essex*; but whenever his said Troop came upon any Service, he, out of Fear or Treachery, unworthily absented himself, and never was seen or known to charge the Enemy in Person, though his Troop often engaged; namely, at the Battle of *Edge-hill*, when he saw there were like to be Blows, he left the Field, and never charged before his Troop; and at the Battle or Fight at *Brentford*, though his Troop were there, yet he staid at *London* till the Danger was past and Fighting done: And when his Troop was sent into the West, he took no other Notice of it, but to receive his Pay; and in the mean while he repaired into the County of *Essex*, and procured a Commission to be a Colonel of Horse, and, instead of fighting against the Parliament's Enemies, he betook himself to plunder and oppress the Parliament's Friends there; and, contrary to Order, and without any Authority, or Exigencies of War compelling him thereunto, enforced great Sums of Money, and many Horses and other Provisions from the Country; namely, from Mr. *Thomas Manwood*, a Man well affected, who had the General's Protection, and whose Horses were taken from the Plough, and others; to the great Losses and Oppression of the People, and to the great Dishonour of the Parliament, whose Service he nevertheless neglected, and hath not hitherto given an Account of the great Sums of Money and other Things that he so exacted from the Country as aforesaid.

XXIV. ' That the said Mr. Long afterwards, upon Pretence of some Losses sustained by the Enemy, and some great Service he had done for the State, did procure of the House a great Office

‘ fice in the Chancery; namely, to be the chief
 ‘ Register of that Court, wherein his Skill was
 ‘ little, and whereof he was, and still is, altoge-
 ‘ ther incapable; and although for a Time, upon
 ‘ the Self-denying Ordinance, he was displaced,
 ‘ yet, upon the Motion, or by the Power and
 ‘ Means, of the said Mr. *Holles*, he hath obtained
 ‘ the said Office again; to the great Prejudice of
 ‘ skilful Clerks that have been bred up in the said
 ‘ Court, to the Disservice of the Common-wealth
 ‘ and the Dishonour of the House.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 July.

XXV. ‘ The said Mr. *Long*, on purpose to drive
 ‘ on the Designs in the said several Charges expref-
 ‘ sed, hath, for two Years last past, usually pres-
 ‘ sed and urged several Members to give their Votes
 ‘ such Ways as he pleased; and, to that End and
 ‘ Purpose, doth constantly place himself near the
 ‘ Door of the House; and, when any Debate is
 ‘ concerning any Design wherein his Party is en-
 ‘ gaged, he hath used such Tamperings and Vio-
 ‘ lence to such of his own Party as would go out
 ‘ of the House, and hath persuaded them to con-
 ‘ tinue there for their Votes; and he, in case any
 ‘ such have gone out of the House, hath been
 ‘ very inquisitive where they might be found, that
 ‘ so he may go for them when the Business in De-
 ‘ bate comes near to be put to the Vote; and,
 ‘ when they come not according to his Expecta-
 ‘ tion, doth ordinarily and speedily run out of the
 ‘ House himself to call them and drive them in
 ‘ again, so that he hath been commonly called (by
 ‘ those that are without the House, and have ta-
 ‘ ken Notice of his Actions) *the Parliament-Driver*;
 ‘ whereby the Freedom of the Members is
 ‘ taken from them, the Manner of the Parliament’s
 ‘ Proceedings much scandalized, and many Times
 ‘ evil and dangerous Designs drove on in a Fac-
 ‘ tion by Votes, to the great Prejudice of the
 ‘ Common-wealth.

‘ All which Matters and Things the said Ar-
 ‘ my will be ready, in convenient Time, to make
 ‘ good, by Proof upon Oath, as this Honourable
 ‘ House

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

House shall direct. And for that by reason of the Straitness of Time, and other more weighty Affairs of the Army, they could not so fully finish and accomplish the said Articles; therefore the said Army still reserve further Liberty to add other Articles against the said Members, or any of them, at any Time before their Trial, as Occasion shall serve.

By Appointment of his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax, and the Council of War.

JO. RUSHWORTH, *Secretary.*

Thus far the Articles of this most remarkable Charge, which we have given at Length because omitted by all the Contemporary Writers: For the same Reason the Answer of the Eleven Members to it will appear at large under its proper Date. Besides the general Motives to this Transaction of the Army (arising from its being at this Time guided entirely by *Cromwell* and the Independent Party, as the House of Commons, thro' the Influence of these Members, was by the Presbyterian) there were not wanting private Resentment among Particulars: For

Lord *Clarendon* writes^a, 'That Mr. *Holles* had one Day, upon a very hot Debate in the House, and some rude Expressions which fell from Commissary *Ireton*, persuaded him to walk out of the House with him; and then told him, 'That he should presently go over the Water and fight with him.' The Commissary replying 'His Conscience would not suffer him to fight a Duel,' Mr. *Holles*, in Choler, pull'd him by the Nose; telling him, 'If his Conscience would keep him from giving Men Satisfaction, it should keep him from provoking them.' His Lordship adds, 'This Affront to the third Person of the Army, and to a Man of the most virulent, malicious, and revengeful Nature of all the Pack, so incensed the whole Party, that they were resolved, one Way or other, to be rid of him, who had that Power in the House, and that Reputation

^a *History*, Vol. V. p. 58.

putation abroad, that when he could not absolute-
ly controul their Designs, he did so obstruct them
that they could not advance to any Conclusion.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
July.

This Anecdote of the Noble Historian is, in
some Measure, confirmed by the Authority of the
Commons Journals; wherein we find 'That the
House having been informed that some Matters of
Difference had happened between Mr. *Holles* and
Commissary *Iretton*, the Speaker, by Command,
laid an Injunction upon them not to proceed any
further thereupon.'

An Anonymous Writer of these Times^c, fre-
quently quoted by Lord *Holles* in his *Memoirs*^d,
informs us, 'That *Cromwell* confessed he had no-
thing against Sir *John Maynard*, another of the
impeached Members, but that he was put up a-
mongst the rest, because he was a busy Man against
the Lieutenant-General and his Faction.'

Thus much by way of Digression, as to the pri-
vate Motives to this famous Charge in the House
of Commons, proceed we now to the Transactions
of the House of Peers.

July 7. A Letter from the Earl of *Nottingham*
and the Lord *Wharton* was read :

To the Rt. Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.

Reading, July 6, 1647.

May it please your Lordship,

WE have this Day been in continual Ex-
pectation to hear from the Commis-
sioners of the Army what it is they have to offer

Letters from the
Parliament's
Commissioners
residing with the
to Army.

^c *Commons Journals*, April 2, 1647.

^d The Grand Design; or a Discovery of that Form of Slavery
intended and in part brought upon the free People of England, by
a powerful Party in the Parliament, and Lieutenant-General *Crom-*
well, Commissary-General *Iretton*, and others of that Faction in the
Army, tending to the utter Ruin and Enslaving of the whole Nation.
Written by *Sittahniho*, not an invective, but moderate and impartial,
Observer of the Transactions of Parliament and Army. Printed in
the last Year of England's Slavery. 1647.

^e *Memoirs*, p. 97, and 115.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July:

to us of Weight, intimated by their Papers sent unto us last Night. They have been in Consultation amongst themselves all this Day, and now they inform us by Sir *Hardress Waller*, that they find the Matters under their present Consideration of that Difficulty, that they hold it necessary to consult the General and the Council of War before they present it to be debated on, and do intend to come to us again this Night: But fearing it may be very late, we thought fit at present to give you this Account, and rest

Your Lordship's

Humble and faithful Servants,

C. NOTTINGHAM.
P. WHARTON.

A Letter from the *Scots* Commissioners was read, relating to the intercepting of their Packets by the Army, address'd to the Speaker of the House of Peers.

Worcester-House, July 6, 1647.

Right Honourable,

WE received your Lordship's civil Letter, in answer to ours of the 28th of *June*, concerning the Intercepting of our Letters by some of Sir *Thomas Fairfax's* Army, and are very sensible of your Lordship's Care there expressed to find out the Person, and to prevent the like Abuse for the future; only, in Obedience to the Direction of the Committee of Estates of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, we have this to add to what we formerly represented in that Particular, that the Messenger who was intercepted informed their Lordships, that those who did apprehend him, shew'd him a Warrant under Sir *Thomas Fairfax's* Hand, to stop and apprehend all Persons carrying Letters or Intelligence.

We thank your Lordship for the Assurance you have given us, that you will not be wanting in any Thing that may tend to the preserving of a good

Of ENGLAND. 95

‘ good Correspondency between the Kingdoms ; An. 23. Car. I.
 ‘ wherein your Lordship shall always have the 1647.
 ‘ Concurrence of }
 July.

Your Lordship's most humble Servants,

LAUDERDALE. H. KENNEDY.
 C. ERSKINE. R. BARCLAY.

After reading these Letters the Lords ordered,
 That Sir *Thomas Fairfax's* Letter [*before given at*
p. 43.] be sent inclosed to the *Scots* Commissioners;
 and that the Commissioners residing with the Army
 do acquaint the General, That the House expects
 the like may be prevented for the future.

July 8. Another Letter from the Earl of *Not-*
tingham and the Lord *Wharton*, with some Papers
 inclosed, were read, directed as usual to the Earl of
Manchester.

Reading, July 8, 1647.
Two in the Morning.

May it please your Lordship,

‘ **T**HIS Morning Alderman *Gibbs*, Alderman
 ‘ *Vyner*, and others, sent from the Common
 ‘ Council of the City of *London* to reside in the
 ‘ Army, informed us of something which they de-
 ‘ sired us to represent unto the Parliament: The
 ‘ Substance of which Information, together with
 ‘ our Answer thereunto, we send you here inclo-
 ‘ sed.

‘ We find that the Proceedings in the Treaty, on
 ‘ the Army's Part, are very slow, which caused us
 ‘ to give in a Paper this Morning to their Com-
 ‘ missioners, tending to quicken them therein, un-
 ‘ to which we have even now received their An-
 ‘ swer; which, together with a Copy of our Paper
 ‘ to them, we herewith send you. We rest

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

C. NOTTINGHAM.
 P. WHARTON.

The

An. 25. Car. I.

1647.

July.

The SUBSTANCE of what was delivered, by Word of Mouth, to the Commissioners of the Parliament, by Alderman Gibbs, Alderman Vyner, and others, sent from the Common Council of the City of London to reside in the Army, referr'd to in the foregoing Letter.

Reading, July 7, 1647.

THEY observed first, That the Proceedings in the Treaty which we were upon, were very slow; and that they perceived the great Obstructions therein were, that the Army had not obtained Security for preventing of a new War; and particularly, that two Things were prest upon them by the Officers of the Army in this Business; the one, That the same Concourse of Officers, Reformadoes, and Soldiers, if not increased, did still continue in the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*. To which all the Answer they could give was, They had thrice solicited the Parliament, in three Weeks, for their Removal, before whom it still was, and is in a Sphere above them; and therefore desired us to make Representation thereof to the Parliament.

The second Particular was, by listing of Men by the Committee of the Militia for the City of *London*; which last they conceived was for the Safety of the City of *London*, in relation to the Danger by that Concourse of Soldiers before expressed.

The SUBSTANCE of our ANSWER, to be returned by the City's Commissioners to the Army, by Word of Mouth, was as follows:

THAT there hath been no Delay on our Part; but that since the Beginning of the Treaty we have hastened it all that lay in our Power, and have carefully observed the Times and Places of Meeting: That upon our pressing the Commissioners of the Army to a more speedy Dispatch, they have alledged that so much of their

‘ their Time hath been taken up about their Charge, An. 23. Car. I.
 ‘ and other intervening Occasions, they could not 1647.
 ‘ give better Attendance, nor make a more speedy
 ‘ Progress: That we shall make use of this Oc- July.
 ‘ casion to quicken their Proceedings, and shall
 ‘ give an Account to the Houses of what hath pass’d
 ‘ herein.’

*The PAPER delivered in by the COMMISSIONERS of
 PARLIAMENT to those of the ARMY.*

Reading, July 7, 1647.

‘ **T**HAT finding the Expectation of the Par-
 ‘ liament and Kingdom to be very great up-
 ‘ on the speedy Progress and happy Issue of this
 ‘ Treaty; in Consideration thereof we have made
 ‘ it our Care constantly to attend at the appointed
 ‘ Times of Meeting, and to press all Dispatch
 ‘ therein: And we cannot but take Notice that
 ‘ the Proceedings, on your Part, have been and are
 ‘ very slow, and that little or nothing hath been
 ‘ done in the Treaty since our Entrance thereupon;
 ‘ and therefore, in Discharge of our Duty and the
 ‘ Trust reposed in us, we do very earnestly desire
 ‘ that the Treaty may be effectually proceeded on
 ‘ with all Expedition, and the Times for Meeting
 ‘ punctually kept; there being nothing that shall
 ‘ be wanting in us, according to the Power given
 ‘ us, to further a Work of so great Importance,
 ‘ and which may perfect a right Understanding be-
 ‘ twixt the Parliament and the Army.’

*By the Appointment of the Commissioners residing
 with the Army. GEORGE PYKE, Secr.*

*The ANSWER of the COMMISSIONERS of the
 ARMY to the foregoing Paper.*

Reading, July 7, 1647.

‘ **B**Y the last Paper delivered in unto us from
 ‘ your Lordships here, this very Day, we
 ‘ perceive you find that the Expectation of the
 ‘ VOL. XVI. G Par.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

Parliament and Kingdom is great upon the speedy Progress and happy Issue of this Treaty. We answer, That we do really apprehend the same Things with you; neither can we but witness that you have constantly attended the appointed Times of Meeting, and pressed Dispatch therein: Nevertheless, we cannot but be very sensible that you seem to reflect upon us farther than there is just Cause, in your taking Notice that the Proceedings herein should be slow and dilatory on our Part, as if we should not seem to desire and labour the quick and speedy Settlement of the Affairs of the Kingdom, in a safe and well-grounded Peace, as cordially as any Persons whatsoever. We shall therefore desire you to remember with what Forwardness we have, in the first Place, presented to you those Things which we did in our Hearts conceive necessary in order to a Treaty; and without which being granted, we could not, with Safety to the Kingdom and Satisfaction to ourselves, proceed in Treaty; and further pressed you to present them to the Parliament with Speed, that a quick Dispatch might be had therein, as being, in our Thoughts, the chiefest and surest Way to prevent the Engaging this Kingdom in a second War; when, contrary to our Expectation, we have found little effectually done in relation to our Desires in those Things most concerning the Safety and Peace of the Kingdom.

To the End therefore we may acquit ourselves from being guilty of the Delay you mention, and that it may appear to all Men where the Stick is of not proceeding in the Treaty to a Settlement of the Peace of the Kingdom, so much thirsted after by us all; we thought fit to remind you of these following Proposals, which we have formerly insisted upon, and to which Satisfaction is not given:

I. *That there is nothing done with Effect, notwithstanding the Votes of the House, to the disposing*

‘sing of the Reformado Officers, who still continue
‘in and about London, ready to head Forces, to the
‘apparent Hazard of a new War.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

II. ‘That notwithstanding the Votes of the House
‘for the speedy sending into Ireland, or disbanding,
‘those Forces which left the Army; and their special
‘Order to the Committee at Derby-House, to take
‘speedy Care therein, yet they are still continued in
‘Bodies in and about London; and, as we hear,
‘are daily lifting more Forces, pretending the Ser-
‘vice of Ireland.

July.

III. ‘That notwithstanding the Votes of the House
‘of the 10th of June, and those since of the 6th of
‘July, for the present purging of the House, yet
‘divers Persons, comprised in these Votes, continue
‘still to sit there.

‘So long as we remain unsatisfied in the two first
‘of these Particulars, we cannot be secured from
‘those Doubts we have expressed of the Danger of
‘a new War; especially if it be considered that
‘the End of inviting so many Reformado Officers
‘to London, was to lay a Foundation of a new
‘War, and was principally carried on by the De-
‘sign of some of those Members of the House of
‘Commons we have impeached: And likewise
‘that divers of the Officers and Soldiers, which
‘left this Army, were procured by Promises of
‘Pay, and other Engagements; which were like-
‘wise designed by the same Persons aforementioned,
‘if possibly they might thereby have broken
‘this Army.

‘And for the last: What comfortable Effect
‘may we expect of a Treaty, so long as the Par-
‘liament (the Supreme Judicatory of the King-
‘dom) is constituted of some that are Men of In-
‘terests contrary to the common Good thereof;
‘from whom we can expect nothing but Banding
‘and Designing, to obstruct and frustrate all Pro-
‘ceedings contrary to their Interests, tho’ never
‘so essential to the happy Settlement of the King-
‘dom? And if a seasonable Remedy be not given

An. 23. Car. 1.^e herein, we despair of any Good to the Kingdom
1647. 'by way of Treaty.'

July.

By the Appointment of the Commissioners of the Army.

WM. CLERKE, *Secretary.*

July 9. The Commons came to the following Resolutions, which had been debated in their House several Days:

Resolutions of
the Commons,
That all Persons,
who had adhered
to the King, be
disabled from sit-
ting as Members.

1. 'That no Person that hath been in actual War against the Parliament, or hath acted by the Commission of Array, or voluntarily aided the King in this War against the Parliament; or that, since the 20th of May 1642, hath sued for, or voluntarily accepted, a Pardon from the King; or has directed, advised, assisted, signed, or consented unto the Cessation of *Ireland*; or otherwise assisted the Rebellion of *Ireland*; or as stand sequestered by Authority of Parliament, for Delinquency, shall presume to sit in this House.

2. 'That the Persons that shall be comprehended within this Order shall incur the Penalty of being put into the second Branch of the fourth Qualification, in the Propositions concerning such Members as deserted the Parliament, and sat in the unlawful Assembly at *Oxford*.'

The same Day an Ordinance passed both Houses for all Delinquents and Malignants to depart out of the Lines of Communication, and twenty Miles distant, in five Days; the Earls of *Lincoln*, *Suffolk*, and *Middlesex*, with the Lords *North*, *Wiltoughby*, and *Hunsdon*, dissenting. Also another Ordinance passed, commanding all Officers and Soldiers to depart from the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and Parts adjacent. The former Lords, with the Earl of *Stamford*, dissenting.

A Letter from Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, sent to both Houses, was read: The Copy thereof, as publish-

ed by Order of him and his Council of War, runs An. 23. Car. I.
thus: 6

1647.

Mr. Speaker,

Reading, July 8, 1647.

July.

I Was sent unto by the King on Friday last, to
desire the Parliament to give way to him to
see his Children; and that they might, for that
Purpose, be sent to him. If I may be bold hum-
bly to offer my Opinion, I think the Allowance
of such a Thing may be without the least Pre-
judice to the Kingdom, and yet gain more upon
his Majesty than Denying it; and if it be the
Prayer of every good Man that his Heart may
be gained, the Performance of such Civilities to
him is very suitable to those Desires, and will bear
well with all Men; who, if they can imagine it
to be their own Case, cannot but be sorry if his
Majesty's natural Affection to his Children, in
so small a Thing, should not be complied with;
and if any Question should be concerning the
Assurance of their Return, I shall engage for that
within what Time the Parliament shall limit.

A Letter from
Sir Thomas Fair-
fax, to desire the
King may see his
Children; and
vindicating the
Behaviour of the
Army towards
him.

Upon this Occasion give me Leave, I beseech
you, to take Notice of some Reports spread abroad,
as if myself and the Officers of the Army were
upon some under-hand Contract or Bargain with
the King; and from thence Occasion is taken to
slander our Integrities, and endeavour a Misunder-
standing betwixt the Parliament and their Army;
the Fidelity of which to the Parliament and King-
dom, and their Affection to it, are the great Ob-
jects of many Men's Envy, because they see no-
thing so likely to settle Right and Freedom, with
Truth and Peace, to us and our Posterity, and to
hinder their Designs against the same, as an Har-
mony and good Accord between the Parliament
and Army; which is the Joy of good Men, and
which shall be our Study to preserve against all
Designs and Designers to the contrary.

To prevent, therefore, all Misunderstandings
of that Kind, I thought fit, with all Clearness,

G 3

to

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

to declare unto you, That we have done nothing,
nor shall do any Thing, which we desire to hide
from you or the World, or shall not avow to the
Faces of our greatest Adversaries.

Our Desires concerning a just Consideration
and Settlement of the King's Rights, his Majesty
first giving his Concurrence to settle and secure
the Rights and Liberties of the Kingdoms, we
have already publickly declared in our Representation and Remonstrance. Since the first of
those Papers sent to the Parliament, there have
been several Officers of the Army, upon several
Occasions, sent to his Majesty; the first to present to him a Copy of the Representation, and
after that some others to tender him a Copy of
the Remonstrance; upon both which, the Officers
sent were appointed to clear the Sense and Intention of any Thing in either Paper, whereupon his
Majesty might make any Question. Since then
there have also been some Officers, at several
Times, sent to his Majesty about his Remove
from *Hatfield*; to dissuade, if possible, from *Wind-*
for or any Place so near *London*, to some Place of
further Distance, answerable to what we had desired of the Parliament.

In all which Addresses to his Majesty we care
not who knows what hath been said or done; for
as we have nothing to bargain for or to ask either
from his Majesty or the Parliament, for Advantage to ourselves, or any particular Party or Interest of our own; so, in all those Addresses to his
Majesty, we have utterly disclaimed and disavowed any such Thing, ^h [*or any Overtures or Thoughts tending that Way;*] but the only Intent and Effect of those our Addresses hath been,
to desire [*and endeavour*] his Majesty's free Concurrence with the Parliament, for establishing
and securing the common Rights and Liberties,
and settling the Peace of the Kingdom; and to
assure

^h The Words in *Italic*, betwixt Crotchets, are omitted in *Rushworth's Collections*.

' assure him, that (the Public being so provided
 ' for, with such his Majesty's Concurrence) it is
 ' fully agreeable to our Principles, and should be
 ' our Desires and Endeavours, that (with and in
 ' such settling of the Public) the Rights of his Ma-
 ' jesty's Royal Family should be also provided for,
 ' so as a lasting Peace and Agreement might be
 ' settled in this Nation; and that, as we had pub-
 ' lickly declared for the same in general Terms,
 ' so, if Things come to a Way of Settlement, we
 ' should not be wanting in our Spheres, to own
 ' that general Desire, in any Particulars of natural
 ' or civil Right of his Majesty's Person or Family,
 ' which might not prejudice or again indanger the
 ' Public; and, in the mean Time, that his Ma-
 ' jesty should find all personal Civilities and Re-
 ' spects from us, with all reasonable Freedom that
 ' might stand with Safety, and with the Trust or
 ' Charge lying upon us concerning his Person.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 July.

' You have here the utmost Sum of what hath
 ' passed from us to his Majesty; and we could wish
 ' all Men did rightly understand, without Misre-
 ' presentation, every Particular; wherein (as we
 ' know nothing not agreeable to Reason, Justice,
 ' Honesty, or Conscience, so) we thought ourselves
 ' concerned the rather to say and do as we have
 ' towards his Majesty, since he came within our
 ' Quarters, because of those common Prejudices sug-
 ' gested against us, as if we were utter Enemies
 ' to Monarchy, and all civil Order or Government.

' And for that Particular of the Duke of Rich-
 ' mond and the two Chaplains lately permitted to
 ' attend his Majesty; it was not done without
 ' much Reluctancy, because therein we doubted
 ' we might be misunderstood by the Kingdom's
 ' best Friends; but upon his Majesty's continued
 ' Importunity for it, as a Thing very nearly con-
 ' cerning his present inward and outward Content-
 ' ment; and conceiving those Persons such, as we
 ' hoped, would not do ill Offices to prejudice the
 ' Peace of the Kingdom, we did give Way to it;
 ' and the Persons, before they came, had Notice of
 ' the

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

the Permission : And as we then thought, so we
 still do think, that to allow him some such Com-
 pany of Persons least dangerous, whom former
 Acquaintance may make him take Pleasure in,
 and the Allowance of some such Chaplains of his
 own, are Things both reasonable and just ; and
 the Debarring of that Liberty in the latter, we
 doubt, will but make him more prejudiced against
 other Ministers.

In general, we humbly conceive that, to avoid
 all Harshness, and afford all kind Usage to his
 Majesty's Person, in Things consisting with the
 Peace and Safety of the Kingdom, is the most
 christian, honourable, and prudent Way ; and
 in all Things (as the Representation and Re-
 monstrance of the Army do express) we think that
 tender, equitable, and moderate Dealing towards
 his Majesty, his Royal Family, and his late Party,
 so far as may stand with Safety to the Kingdom,
 and Security to our common Rights and Liber-
 ties, is the most hopeful Course to take away the
 Seeds of War or future Feuds amongst us for
 Posterity, and to procure a lasting Peace and A-
 greement in this now distracted Nation ; to the
 effecting and settling whereof (with a secure Pro-
 vision first to be made for the common Rights
 and Liberties of the Kingdom, and a due Care
 to preserve and propagate the Gospel of Truth
 and Peace amongst us) we shall hope that neither
 the Parliament nor his Majesty will be wanting ;
 And if God shall see it good to make us any
 way instrumental thereunto, or that we may
 otherwise see the same accomplished, we shall
 then think ourselves indeed discharged from the
 public Engagements we have been called out
 unto, more clearly and effectually than (before
 such Things were settled) we could have thought
 ourselves to be ; and, to demonstrate our Clear-
 ness from seeking Self advantages in what we did,
 we shall thenceforth account it our greatest Hap-
 piness and Honour, if God see it good, to be
 disengaged and dismissed, not only from our Mi-
 litary

‘ litary Charges, but from all other Matters of Power or public Employment whatsoever. An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

‘ I have in these Things spoke, not in my own Name alone, but in the Name (because I find it to be the clear Sense of the Generality, or at least of the most considerable Part) of the Army; and I am confident you and the Kingdom will never find it otherwise: I shall leave it to your favourable Construction, and commit all to the Goodness of God for an happy Issue. I remain

Your most humble Servant,

T. FAIRFAX.

July 12. The House of Peers sent a Message to the Commons, and therewith a Letter from the King to the Duke of York, intimating his Majesty's Desires to see his Children; which their Lordships agreed to, and sent to the Commons for their Concurrence. His Majesty's Letter was read as follows:

JAMES, Caversham, July 4, 1647.

I Am in Hopes that you may be permitted, with your Brother and Sister, to come to some Place betwixt this and London, where I may see you; to this End therefore I command you to ask Leave of the two Houses to make a Journey, if it may be, for a Night or two; but rather than not to see you, I will be content to come to some convenient Place to dine, and go back at Night: And foreseeing the Fear of your being within the Power of the Army, as I am, may be objected to hinder this my Desire, I have full Assurance from Sir Thomas Fairfax and the chief Officers, that there will be no Interruption or Impediment made by them for your Return, how and when you please. So God bless you.

Your loving Father,

CHARLES R.

P. S. Send me Word, as soon as you can, of the Time and Place where I shall have the Contentment of seeing you, your Brother and Sister.

The

106 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

Which both
Houses consent
to.

The Commons having debated upon this Letter, and what was proposed by the General in his last concerning the same, it was at length agreed upon by both Houses, that his Highness the Duke of York, and the rest of the King's Children, shall have Leave to go to his Majesty; to continue with him two Days, and then return; and the Earl of Northumberland to go with them and take Care of them.

The same Day two more Letters were read in the House of Lords, addressed, as usual, to the Earl of Manchester their Speaker.

And first, a Letter from the Commissioners attending the King.

My Lord,

Caversham, July 9, 1647.

More Letters
from the Com-
missioners with
the King,

Since our coming to this Place, Col. *Whaley* receiving new Orders from the General, we could not expect any Fruit of our Orders; yet we have renewed them unto him, requiring that he would remove Dr. *Sheldon* and Dr. *Hammond* from the King, together with such others as have Access to his Majesty, contrary to the fifth Article of our Instructions. His Answer is, That he hath not as yet received any Direction from his Excellency, whose Command he must expect before he can yield Obedience to us, for the Reasons formerly given to us at *Hatfield*, which we related unto you at large in our Letters from thence; Copies whereof we have inclosed, for that Col. *Whaley* refers himself to what he then said; and the State of our Condition having been thereby truly represented unto you, it will appear that we are not in a Capacity of giving other Account, but remain

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

B. DENBIGH.

E. MONTAGUE.

Next,

z These Letters are already given at p. 42 and 48.

Next, a Letter from the Commissioners residing with the Army. An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

Reading, July 10, 1647.

July.

May it please your Lordship,

Y^esterday we received an Account of what had passed in the Houses for satisfying the last Paper from the Army, wherewith we acquainted the General; and desired his Excellency that, since the three Proposals last sent up were so far satisfied by the Parliament, the Treaty might now be proceeded in with Speed and Effect, and a Time for meeting of Commissioners on both Parts for that Purpose forthwith appointed. To which his Excellency thus answered, That he and the Council of War had not been wanting in their Thoughts to prepare something in order to the Speeding thereof; and that he hoped, at our next Meeting, we should find Things in a good Forwardness thereunto. We remain

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

C. NOTTINGHAM.
P. WHARTON.

The same Day also the Commons, after long Debate, voted the Impeachment against the eleven Members to be a Charge, ordered them Counsel and a Week's Time to bring in their Answer.

July 14. To shew that all Sorts and Ranks of People had now set their Heads on reforming and regulating the State, this Day a Petition was presented to both Houses, the Title of which runs thus: *To the Honourable the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, the humble Petition of those well affected to the Government, both young Men and Apprentices of the City of London, subscribed by above 10,000 Hands.*

A Petition from the young Men and Apprentices of London.

Six of the Petitioners being assembled at the Door of the House of Peers were all immediately called

An. 23. Car. I. called up to the Bar, where one of them, in the
 1647. Name of the Subscribers, spake as followeth :

July.

My Lords,

IF it may please this Honourable House, we
 are commanded, by the young Men and Ap-
 prentices of the City of London, to present your
 Honours with this their humble Petition; being
 in Pursuance of their Covenant with God which
 is upon them, humbly craving your charitable
 Construction; their Ends being single, for the
 Glory of God, the Peace of the Kingdom, and
 Vindication of the Parliament.

*For the Right Honourable the LORDS in the High
 Court of Parliament assembled,*

*The HUMBLE PETITION of divers well affected
 YOUNG MEN and APPRENTICES of the City of
 London, &c.*

Humbly sheweth,

THAT your Petitioners have, with the for-
 wardest, been ever ready in this common
 Cause of Religion, Laws, and Liberties, to ad-
 venture their Lives for the Preservation thereof;
 which we hop'd, after so much Expence of Blood,
 and (by God's Providence) such happy Success
 of your Armies, would have been settled to us and
 our Posterities in a lasting Peace; yet, to the Grief
 of our Hearts, your Petitioners cannot but take
 Notice how, in these unhappy Times of Distrac-
 tion, divers discontented Persons labour to sow
 new Seeds of Discords and Divisions amongst us;
 whereby Incendiaries and Malignants are encour-
 aged, your faithfullest Friends discountenanced,
 the Privileges of Parliament violated, Magistracy
 opposed, the publick Worship of God slighted,
 and the Liberties and Properties of the Subject
 much endangered: All which your Petitioners
 laying sadly to Heart, and having more before
 their Eyes the Glory of God and the Happiness
 of

of his Majesty's Kingdoms, than their own private Interest, (which we shall readily sacrifice for the Public) do, in all Humility, most humbly pray,

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
July.

1. That, according to our Solemn League and Covenant, his Majesty's Royal Person may be defended; and that his just Power and Greatness (in the Preservation and Defence of the true Religion and Liberties of the Kingdoms) may be established.

2. That the Rights and Privileges of Parliament may be vindicated, and the lawful Liberties and Property of the Subject preserved and maintained.

3. That the Government of the Church may be speedily settled, Conventicles (the Seminaries of Separation) suppressed, and a Toleration of licentious Liberty effectually declared against.

4. That all Incendiaries, Malignants, and evil Instruments which hinder the Reformation of Religion, dividing the King from his People, or one of his Kingdoms from another, or making any Faction or Parties among the People, contrary to the Solemn League and Covenant, may be brought to public Trial, and receive condign Punishment.

5. That all Obstructions to the ordinary Course of Justice may be removed, and the insufferable Abuses of Committees and their Officers considered.

6. That the Arrears of the Soldiery of this Kingdom may be satisfied, and Security granted for their further Indemnity, for all Acts done by them, *Tempore & Loco Belli*.

7. That the Army now on Foot may be disbanded or otherwise disposed of, that so this almost exhausted Kingdom may be freed from those many grievous Taxes and Oppressions it now groans under.

8. And whereas there have been and still are great Abuses and insufferable Injuries done to your Petitioners, by the Sale of Freedoms, and

Fe-

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

‘ Foreigners intruding into the Suburbs and Places
 ‘ near adjacent to this City, whereby your Peti-
 ‘ tioners are much discouraged in their Service,
 ‘ the Freemen of this City prejudiced, and the
 ‘ Franchises and Liberties thereof infringed: We
 ‘ therefore humbly beseech this Honourable Assem-
 ‘ bly to resolve on some Course, (as you in your
 ‘ Wisdom shall think fit) as well for the Expulsion
 ‘ of such as have so unduly crept in among us, as for
 ‘ the future Prevention of the like insufferable Inju-
 ‘ ries that may redound to your Petitioners here-
 ‘ after.

*And your Petitioners, being always ready to ad-
 venture their Lives and Fortunes for your De-
 fence and Preservation, shall ever pray, &c.*

*The ANSWER of the House of PEERS, delivered in
 Form, by the Earl of MANCHESTER.*

Gentlemen,

‘ **T**HE Lords have commanded me to return
 ‘ you hearty Thanks for your good Affec-
 ‘ tions and pious Care for the public Peace of
 ‘ the Kingdom, which you have expressed by your
 ‘ Petition. Their Lordships will take the Parti-
 ‘ culars thereof into their speedy Consideration.’

But the foregoing Petition having been present-
 ed to the Commons, they only ordered two of
 their Members to acquaint the Petitioners, ‘ That
 that House had divers Matters of the Petition al-
 ready before them, and would take the rest into
 Consideration in due Time.’

For a small Digression from these public Affairs,
 the following private one falls in course, and de-
 serves our Notice. The Reader may remember
 an Impeachment of High Treason preferred against
John Lord Finch, when Lord-Keeper, at the Be-
 ginning of this Parliament, for which he thought
 fit to withdraw himself beyond the Seas. This
 Day, *July 14*, the following Petition from him,
 de-

desiring Leave to return into *England*, was presented to the Lords, who read it, and ordered it to be considered another Day; which Day never came. However, this Lord survived the Restoration, returned at that Time into *England*, and sat afterwards as one of the Commissioners for trying the Regicides.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
July.

The Petition now before us was in *hæc Verba*:

To the Right Honourable the LORDS in the Most Honourable House of PEERS in the High Court of Parliament assembled,

The HUMBLE PETITION of JOHN Lord FINCH.

THE Petitioner, with all humble Gratitude, Acknowledgeth your Lordships great Goodness towards him, that, for five Years Space, hath forborne that Severity against him, to which your Lordships, by the Petitioner's Departure out of *England*, and otherwise, were justly provoked. In all this his disconsolate Absence, the Petitioner's Care and Study hath been to behave himself towards all your Lordships, and towards the Honourable House of Commons, so as that none of you may ever again take up other Thoughts of him than benign and compassionate.

A Petition from the Lord Finch, for Leave to return to *England*.

Old Age, many late Sicknesses, and the deep Sense of his long and present Miseries, give the Petitioner a certain Assurance of a very short Life; which, above all earthly Things, he desires may take End in his dear and native Soil. For this Purpose he hath directed his humble Petition to the Honourable House of Commons; and is, by these, a most humble and earnest Suitor to your Lordships, humbly begging your most Honourable Favour for his free Liberty of returning into *England*; which, if your Lordships and that Honourable Assembly please to vouchsafe unto him, it shall for ever oblige the Petitioner, by all Gratitude and Fidelity, and by all other real Endeavours, so to expire there, that

Ans. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

‘ that neither your Lordships nor the Honourable
 ‘ House of Commons shall have the least Cause to
 ‘ unwish any the utmost Extent of your Goodness
 ‘ and Clemency, or the most-wished and comfort-
 ‘ able Marks of your good Opinion.

‘ In these humble Thoughts the Petitioner shall
 ‘ live and die; and shall, during Life, humbly and
 ‘ heartily pray to God for all Happiness to attend
 ‘ your Lordships, and your most honourable Pro-
 ‘ ceedings.’

J. FINCH.

July 16. An Order for suppressing of Stage-
 Plays was read twice in the House of Lords; and
 it being put to the Question, Whether to limit
 the Time to the first of *January* next? it was car-
 ried in the Affirmative, the following Lords enter-
 ing this their Protest against it:

A Protest against
 an Order con-
 cerning Stage
 Plays.

‘ We conceiving Stage-players and Stage-plays
 ‘ to be unlawful, and the Parliaments of *England*
 ‘ and *Scotland*, by their Propositions, having desired
 ‘ that they might be forbidden for ever; the Que-
 ‘ stion being put for the Limitation of Time to the
 ‘ first of *January* next, we do here enter our Pro-
 ‘ testation against that Limitation.’

MANCHESTER, KENT, MULGRAVE.

The Order was directed by both Houses to the
 Lord Mayor, to take Care to suppress all public
 Plays and Play-houses, all Dancing on Ropes and
 Bear-baitings, &c.

July 17. The following Letter from the *Scots*
 Commissioners, address’d to the Earl of *Manche-*
ster, was read.

Warcester-House, July 17, 1647.

Right Honourable,

‘ IN Pursuance of the Directions of the Com-
 ‘ mittee of Estates of the Kingdom of *Scot-*
 ‘ *land*, we do send your Lordship here inclosed two
 ‘ Papers, which we intreat you to communicate
 ‘ to

to both Houses; and, expecting their Answer An. 23. Car. I.
thereunto, we rest

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

LAUDERDALE.
HEN. KENNEDY.
RO. BARCLAY.

1647.
July.

The PAPERS referr'd to in the foregoing Letter.

July 16, 1647.

AS we have often represented to both Houses of Parliament the Desires of the Kingdom of Scotland, concerning Religion being the principal Thing which engaged them in the Assistance of this Kingdom; now we cannot conceal how much this Kingdom doth long and wait for the performing and fulfilling of the first two Articles of the Solemn League and Covenant, as the chief Fruit of all their Pain, Hazards, Sufferings, and Losses which, during that Assistance, and by Occasion thereof, they did, and do yet undergo; in pursuance of which Articles there was, upon the 25th of December last^b, a full Paper delivered into the Committee of Lords and Commons, and Divines, appointed to receive Papers of that Kind, which was by them transmitted to both Houses of Parliament, whose Answer thereunto we have ever been expecting for the Space of six Months, and upwards; but as yet have received none, and so can give no satisfactory Account thereof to the Kingdom of Scotland, tho' it be the chief Thing whereof they desire and expect an Account from us: We do therefore, for our Exoneration, earnestly desire an Answer from the Honourable Houses to that Purpose.

A Paper from the Scots Commissioners, desiring the Performance of the two first Articles of the Covenant.

By Command of the Commissioners for the Parliament of Scotland.

JO. CHIESLEY.

VOL. XVI.

H

July

^b In our Fifteenth Volume, p. 252.

July 16, 1647.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

July.

Another for the
Maintenance of
their Troops
raised to suppress
the Irish Rebels.

THE Houses of Parliament, in their Letter of the 27th of *January* last, did engage themselves to the Parliament of *Scotland*, that the Garrisons of this Kingdom being delivered up, and the *Scots* Army and Forces march'd out of this Kingdom, they should take into speedy Consideration the Desire of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, concerning a Competency of Entertainment to be given by this Kingdom for Maintenance of the Forces which the Estates of *Scotland* have been for a long Time, and are still, necessitated to keep up for subduing the *Irish* Rebels, whom, by the Large Treaty, the Kingdom of *England* is bound to suppress.

It hath pleased God, in a good Measure, of late to bless our Forces against these Rebels and their Adherents; yet the Charge and Expence bestowed therein hath been very great, and there is a Remainder of the Enemy in the Mountains and Islands unsubdued. There are now almost six Months elapsed since the *Scots* Army did, according to the Treaty between the Kingdoms, deliver up the Garrisons possess'd by them, and peaceably and quietly march out of the Kingdom. We have been loath all this Time to importune the Honourable Houses in this Business, still waiting when they should be pleased to spare some Time from their other Affairs for Consideration of this Particular, according to their Engagement; but we have not yet received any Answer: Lest, therefore, the Kingdom of *Scotland* should be disappointed of their Expectation herein thro' our Silence, we do again, in their Name, earnestly desire the Honourable Houses to take into their Consideration how, by their Supply, that Kingdom may be in some Measure relieved of the great Burden they lie under, and have undergone, for suppressing of those Rebels; and how the Coming over of more *Irish* into that Kingdom may, for the future, be prevented, according

According to the Intent of the Large Treaty; where-
 in we are the more solicitous, in that we are cre-
 dibly inform'd Preparations have been made in
 Ireland for this Purpose these divers Months past.
*By Command of the Commissioners for the Parlia-
 ment of Scotland.*

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 July.

JO. CHIESLEY.

The foregoing Letter and Papers were ordered
 to be sent to the House of Commons.

July 19. A Letter from the Commissioners with
 the Army was read

*For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
 Speaker of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.*

Reading, July 15, 1647,
 past Twelve at Night.

May it please your Lordship,

BY our last, of the 10th of this Instant, we
 have made bold to acquaint you, that we
 have daily pres'd on the Proceeding of the Trea-
 ty. We had Word sent unto us, late that Even-
 ing, that we should receive their Answer some
 Time the next Day; and now, late this Evening,
 Commissary-General Ireton, and several other
 Officers of the Army, came and acquainted us,
 That the General and the Officers took Notice
 of a Vote passed in the House of Commons Ye-
 sterday, concerning the putting of all the Land
 Forces, now in the Parliament's Pay, under the
 immediate Command of Sir Thomas Fairfax;
 which is look'd upon by them as an Expression
 of great Trust which that House is pleased to re-
 pose in the Army, and they hoped it would lay the
 Foundation of further Confidence, and of that
 which will tend to the Security and Peace of the
 Kingdom; and that, for the present, it had oc-
 casioned some Alteration in a Paper they intend-
 ed for us this Night: And, withall, told us, That
 the Proposals which they were preparing for the
 Settlement of the Peace of the Kingdom, had

A Letter from
 the Commission-
 ers residing with
 the Army.

116 *The Parliamentary History*

AN. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

‘ been much interrupted by their long sitting in
‘ the Council of War for these two Days last past,
‘ upon the Consideration of several Things thought
‘ necessary for present Security, some Particulars
‘ whereof were not yet cleared: But farther ac-
‘ quainted us, That most of the Heads of those
‘ Proposals were written, but neither agreed on
‘ nor applied as was necessary, and as they intended.
‘ They read these Heads unto us, to let us see what
‘ Progress they had made, and that their Thoughts
‘ had been intent upon the general Peace of the
‘ Kingdom; and said, They hoped, within five or
‘ six Days, to have them in Readiness to be deli-
‘ vered unto us. In the mean Time we thought it
‘ our Duty to give your Lordship this Account,
‘ and rest

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

C. NOTTINGHAM.

P. WHARTON.

The same Day the Eleven Members, impeach-
ed by the Army, delivered to the House of Com-
mons their Answer to the Charge against them,
which was read the first Time in their Presence;
and then, they having of themselves withdrawn,
the said Answer was read a second Time. It is
not entered in the *Journals*, nor in Mr. *Rushworth*,
or the other Contemporaries; however it was
printed, (though without the Name of a Printer or
Publisher) and we give it from the original Edi-
tion, in the Collections of the late *Thomas Sclater*
Bacon, Esq;

*A full VINDICATION and ANSWER of the Eleven
accused Members to a late printed Pamphlet, in-
titled, A particular Charge or Impeachment,
in the Name of Sir Thomas Fairfax and the Ar-
my under his Command, by his Appointment
and the Council of War.*

The Answer of
the Eleven Mem-
bers impeached
by the Army.

‘ Although we be not ignorant of the Illega-
‘ lity and Insufficiency of that which is print-
‘ ed and published for our Charge, seeming unto us,
‘ for

for the greatest Part thereof, rather an Arraignment
of the Proceedings of the House of Commons, as
supposing them to be acted and carried on in a De-
sign, by the Interest and Prevalency of the Per-
sons charged; and that all the Particulars men-
tioned in this Charge should be, by them, com-
mitted and done in pursuance of that Design;
a Thing so contrary to the Nature, and derogat-
ory to the Honour, of a free Parliament, and of
a dangerous Consequence, to render all suspected
and invalid which this Parliament hath done or
shall do: And that this Charge is brought in the
Name of an Army, and so is an Accusation en-
forced by Power, contrary to the Statute of
31. Hen. VI. Cap. 1. and no Accuser appearing
liable to satisfy the Parties grieved for their Da-
mages and Expences, if the Accusation prove
false and untrue, (as this most certainly is) against
the Tenor of several Statutes made in that Be-
half: Nor is it unknown that many indirect and
unjustifiable Ways have been practiced in provi-
ding the Materials of this Charge, by tampering
with Persons to become our Accusers; setting
general Inquisitions upon some of us, who have
faithfully served our Country, (most of us for the
Space of near seven Years in that House, and
the rest of us the Time of our being Members)
to the wasting of our Estates, Prejudice of our
Healths, and many Inconveniences to our Per-
sons by much Travel and Labour; without those
Advantages by way of Gift or otherwise, which
some of our Accusers, and divers others have had,
for which we bear them no Envy at all; yet
Books have been searched, Proceedings at Com-
mittees viewed, the King's and Digby's Cabinets
and private Papers (of which our Accusers had
the Maidenhead) searched for Intelligence, yet
not one Syllable found against us in them; Ser-
vants and Attendants examined to rake up Mat-
ter

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
July.

H 3

15. Edw. I. Cap. 13. 25. Edw. III. Cap. 2. 27. Edw. III.
Cap. 2. 38. Edw. III. Cap. 9. 17. Rich. II. Cap. 6. 15. Hen-
ry VI. Cap. 4. Notes in the Original.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

ter against us (an absolute Breach of Privilege of Parliament, and not well consisting with the Liberty of the Subject): All this notwithstanding, which we might very well take Exceptions at, and besides that we now lie under that great Disadvantage which the Philosopher did, who disputed with the Emperor who commanded thirty Legions, so that all his Arguments were too weak, nor could he make Use of that Strength of Reason and Truth which his Cause did afford; yet we, presuming upon our Innocency and the Justice of those who must judge us, but principally upon the Goodness of the great God, who is the Support and Avenger of the Oppress'd, and hath protected, for several Years, some of us, when we have been the Object of Malice and Power, and Marks set up to be shot at for Destruction; to which Purpose our Actions, Speeches, and our privatest Conversations have been, as narrowly as could be, observed and inquired into; Prisoners, discontented Persons, Friends and Foes, examined upon us; all Manner of Persons dealt with, that could be imagined willing to betray, and able to say any Thing against us, yet God having preserved us, as he did *David* from the Bear and Lion, which encouraged him likewise to promise himself Deliverance from the uncircumcised *Philistine*, though so much more mighty than he; in like Manner we trust for his Assistance and Protection at this Time, and shall apply ourselves to the Particulars insisted upon, and not formerly cleared and discharged upon a strict Examination and Debate in Parliament; and shall give, we doubt not, a satisfactory Account of our Integrity and Innocency in them all, in Order as they lye.

The first Article of the Charge, which concerns Mr. *Holles* singly, is partly of *Passages at Oxford about three Years since*. With these he cannot undertake to charge his Memory at this Time, to give particular and positive Answers thereunto; but he saith, There is no new Mat-
ter

ter at all in this Charge, and that the whole Bu-
siness received a full and perfect Disquisition in
the House of Commons, in the Month of July,
1645, now two Years past; when, as near as
he could remember, of all done and said by him
concerning the Particulars, then and now laid
to his Charge, he gave an Account, together
with another Gentleman, a very worthy Mem-
ber of the House, and his Fellow-Commissioner
at Oxford^e, who was then accused by the Lord
Saville to have joined with Mr. Holles in all
the Parts of this Charge; and the House was so
fully satisfied of their good Intentions in their
Transaction of that Business, that, after a very
long Debate of several Days, they ordered it, upon
the Question, the 19th Day of that July, *That*
the Matter of the Report (which was this whole
Business now endeavoured to be revived in this
Charge) *should be totally and finally laid aside.*

As for the particular Answers which he gave
in the Vindication of his Innocency, asserting
the Truth, and discovering the Malice and Fal-
shood of his then Accuser, the Lord Saville, he
refers himself to the publick Examinations, Pro-
ceedings, and Resolutions in the House, and what
was then and there delivered, both by him and
the other Gentleman together with him at that
Time most falsely accused by the Lord Saville;
who hath since so far bethought himself, and tes-
tified a Remorse for the Injury he then did unto
these two Gentlemen, that it is not very long
since he sent a Person of Honour, a Peer of the
Realm, unto Mr. Holles, assuring him, *That when*
his Composition was once made and perfected, (for
this was at the Time that the Lord Saville was
upon compounding for his Delinquency) *he would*
then discover unto him, meaning Mr. Holles, how
that whole Business was laid against him, and who
they were that laid it; which when he knew, he
would

* Mr. Whitelocke, in whose *Memorials*, p. 248, et ultra; as also
in Lord Holles's *Memoirs*, p. 38. the Reader will find an ample
Account of this Business.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

would see he had no Cause to be so angry with him ;
 and therefore desired him not to be against him in
 setting the Fine for his Composition: Adding
 withall, He durst not discover it till he was out of
 their Danger, meaning those who had laid that
 Design against Mr. Holles ; for if they had the
 least Inckling of it, they would certainly ruin him.
 This was the Substance, and, as near as can be
 remembered, the very Words which were deli-
 vered unto Mr. Holles by that Lord, in the Name
 of the Lord Saville, and from him. But Mr.
 Holles was so far from being vindictive against
 those who had expres'd so much Malice against
 him, and endeavoured his Ruin, as he wholly
 put it out of his Thoughts, never so much as
 sending to the Lord Saville after his Composition
 was past ; in the making whereof he did him no
 Disservice at all, as in Truth scorning it,

Another Clause in the first Article is concern-
 ing a Letter sent from the Earl of Lindsey unto
 Mr. Holles, containing, as is laid in the Charge,
 some secret Design. This was likewise exami-
 ned in the House, and by Mr. Holles himself
 first discovered unto the House, contrary to what
 is in the printed Paper most falsly suggested, and
 this done by him as soon as it came into his
 Mind ; for when he received it, which was very
 late one Evening by a Servant of Lord Saville's,
 he immediately after fell sick, which made him
 clean forget it ; nor doth he know what became
 of the Paper, whether or no he burnt it : The
 Contents of it were only one Line, a Recom-
 mendation of the Bearer from the Lord Saville,
 the very Words whereof were then fresh in his
 Memory, and by him repeated in the House ;
 when such Satisfaction was given, as that there
 passed a Vote the 19th of July, 1645, That the
 receiving of that Note in the Manner Mr. Holles
 did, was no holding Intelligence with the Enemy.

There is another Part of this first Article, of
 the Earl of Lindsey's moving for a Pass for Mr.
 Holles to go to Oxford ; and the King's saying,
 He

He did him better Service in the Parliament than
 he could do there; which was likewise, by the
 Lord Saville, informed to the Committee ap-
 pointed for the Examination of that Business,
 and so reported to the House; at which Time Mr.
 Holles said, and still doth, That he knew nothing
 of it, and was, and is, most confident that it is
 most false; for that he never signified any such
 Desire to the Earl of *Lindsey*, or to any Body
 else, nor ever had it in his Thoughts.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 July.

To the second Article, which charges Mr. Hol-
 les and Sir Philip Stapylton, jointly, with sending
 several Messages to the Earl of Dorset and Lord
 Digby; and Sir Philip Stapylton singly, to have
 sent one to the Earl of Dorset; and then both
 Mr. Holles and Sir Philip Stapylton to have join-
 ed in drawing Propositions, and sending them pri-
 vately to his Majesty; they both of them say, for
 what concerns both, and Sir Philip Stapylton, for
 what concerns himself, (this being the only Thing
 in all the Charge that is singly objected against
 him) That the whole Article is false and un-
 true in all and every Part of it.

The third Article lays a Charge on the eleven
 Members jointly, for meeting together at Lady
 Carlisle's Lodgings, in Whitehall, and other
 Places, with other disaffected Persons; for hold-
 ing Correspondency with the Queen, to put Condi-
 tions upon the Parliament, to bring in the King
 upon their own Terms; and do such other Things,
 in Prosecution of their evil Designs, as are in
 that Article mentioned. To all and every Branch
 whereof they do all jointly, and each of them
 severally, give a full, positive, and absolute De-
 nial; and affirm, That the whole Charge in that
 Article is scandalous and false in Matter and
 Form. Most of them declare, That within the
 Time there limited for those Meetings to have
 been, and at no Time before or since, they have
 at all been at her Ladyship's Lodgings; only Mr.
 Holles, Sir William Lewis, and Sir Philip Sta-
 pylton

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

July.

‘*pylton* do acknowledge that, by her Ladyship’s Favour, they have many Times waited upon her, both at her own Lodgings in *Whitehall*, and elsewhere, yet never to any such Intent and Purpose, as is in the Article most falsely suggested; but only to pay unto her Ladyship that Respect which is due unto her (a Person of so great Honour and Desert) from them, and in Truth from all others who are Well-wishers to the Welfare of this Kingdom.

‘And whereas it is said, *That they had a great Power upon the Treasure of this Kingdom, and thereby maintained the Queen’s Party; assured her a Pension, and undertook to do more for the King than the Army would do,* who it seems are now ambitious in out-shipping all others in acting for his Majesty: It is very well known that these Persons have not at all meddled in Money Buſi- nesses; have had least to do with disposing of the Public Treasure, and therefore could not pleasure others with it; and least of all have they received any Part of it for their private Uses, some of them having declared themselves in the House, when the House was pleased to vote them considerable Sums in Recompence for their very great Sufferings for the Commonwealth, That they would receive nothing till the Public Debts were paid; and none of them are the Men that have grown great in these calamitous Times, and been enriched upon the Ruin of others, nor preferred themselves and their Friends to higher Fortunes than otherwise they could ever have aspired unto; therefore there is neither Truth, nor Semblance of Truth, that they should be guilty of engaging the Public Treasure and Stock, as the Article charges; nor would any have believed them if they had been so false and foolish as to have offered it. In Conclusion they say, The whole Charge in this Article is utterly false.

‘The fourth Article, which chargeth *Mr. Holles, Sir Philip Stapylton, Sir William Lewis, Sir John*

John Clotworthy, Sir William Waller, and Major-General Massey, to have, within the Space of three Months last past, invited the Scots, and other foreign Forces to enter this Kingdom, is by them averred to be utterly false; as likewise that Part of it which charges Mr. Holles to have sent unto the Queen, to advise her to send the Prince into Scotland, to come into this Kingdom at the Head of an Army, is by him declared to be most untrue, and a meer Invention of Malice against him. And, in the last Place, where it chargeth the eleven Members, to have listed, or caused to be listed, divers Commanders and Soldiers, without Authority of Parliament, and to have encouraged Reformado Officers and Soldiers to gather together tumultuously at Westminster, to affright and assault the Members of Parliament, there is nothing of Truth in it, and reflects more upon their Accusers than on them.

To the fifth Article, which charges Mr. Holles, Sir Philip Stapylton, and Mr. Glynne, to have been Obstruēters of Petitions to the Parliament for Redress of public Grievances, they say, That what hath been done by them, or any of them, in Matters of Petitions, was done in the House of Commons, and only there; where they have, upon Occasion, delivered their Opinions concerning some seditious Petitions, which they suppose to be the Petitions intended by the Article.

And for what is said of Mr. Holles and Sir Philip Stapylton's affronting some Petitioners attending a Committee, as Major Tuleday, and committing Nicholas Tew, without Authority, they do say, That Tuleday and Tew affronted the Committee; that Tew endeavoured to raise a Tumult in the Court of Requests, to the Disturbance and Danger of the Committee; whereupon the Committee thought fit to restrain him untill the next Morning, when they would acquaint the House with it: That all, both concerning him and Tuleday, was reported unto the House, and both of them were, by the House,

An. 23. Cap. 1.
1647.
July.

Ap. 23, Car. 1.
1647.

July.

committed upon just Reasons, and afterwards both of them discharged or bailed; the one upon the Motion of Mr. *Holles*, and the other of Sir *Philip Stapylton*.

And whereas it is said, *That they were not permitted to speak for themselves*; it is notoriously untrue, for *Tuleday* was heard at the Bar of the House of Commons, and *Tew* was heard at the Committee as long as he would speak, untill he refused to answer any more Questions, saying, *He was not bound to accuse himself*.

In the last Place, where Mr. *Glynne* is charged to have committed *Tew* to Newgate, for no other Cause but for having a Petition about him, which was to be presented to the House, Mr. *Glynne* doth answer, That being Recorder of London, and in the Commission of the Peace, he knows it not to be a Crime to send such Persons to the Goal, as be brought before him for Misdemeanors, and may have committed *Tew*, as he hath done many others; but he doth believe it to be a Mistake in the Accusers, not remembring any such Thing, and doth boldly affirm, That if he did commit him it was not for the Cause laid down in the Article, but upon just Grounds of Law.

To the sixth Article, touching the Imprisonment of *Ensign Nichols* by Sir *William Waller*, Sir *John Clotworthy*, and Major-General *Masse*, they answer, That they, being, by Instructions of the 9th of April, 1647, from the Committee at *Derby-House*, for the Affairs of Ireland, authorized to draw off from the rest of the Army such as should accept of the Service of Ireland, and quarter them in such Places as they should think fit, upon the Engagement of divers Officers of Col. *Lilburne's* Regiment to go for Ireland, they gave Orders to Lieutenant-Colonel *Kempson* to march with such Soldiers of that Regiment as should engage for Ireland, to *Evesham*; and the Soldiers so engaging separated from the Army; and, on their March towards *Evesham*, they, on the 24th of April 1647, at *Saffron-Walden*,

Walden, after the General's Departure towards London, having received several Informations that Ensign Nichols (Ensign to Capt. Dormer, one of the Captains of the said Regiment) repaired into the Quarters of those Forces drawn off from the Army, in order to the Service of Ireland, there dissuading the Soldiers to go for Ireland; encouraging them mutinously to demand their Pay of the said Capt. Dormer, and then, by Falshoods and cunning Practices, endeavouring to entice them back to the Army; undervaluing those that went for Ireland, and incensing them against the Propositions of Parliament for that Service; and also reading to the said Soldiers the Petition of the Army, after the same was then lately prohibited by both Houses of Parliament; and being certified that, for those Mis-carriages, the said Capt. Dormer had secured his Person till further Order, the Lords and Commons, who were Commissioners, did thereupon, on the said 24th of April, give Directions to Lieutenant-Colonel Kempson to take Order that the said Ensign Nichols should be sent up to London, with the first Opportunity, to be disposed of by the Committee of Lords and Commons for the Affairs of Ireland at Derby-House, which was accordingly done; and, upon the Report of the Business, the said Ensign was committed by Order of the House of Commons, and the Persons that brought him rewarded for their Service therein: In all which Proceedings they know of nothing done, but what their Duty and Instructions, in relation to the Service of Ireland, required at their Hands, being contrary neither to the Laws of the Land nor Articles of War; but conceive, upon these Informations, (ready to be produced and testified upon Oath) that the said Ensign, according to the Martial Law, for his said Offences, deserved Death for endeavouring a Mutiny as abovesaid: And therefore there is no Cause for the Army to complain, in that the

House

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

July.

House was so merciful to him as to remit that Punishment.

Whereas it is charged, *That the Pockets of Ensign Nichols were searched, and divers Papers taken from him; and that he was sent a Prisoner to London from the Head-Quarters, without the Authority or Privy of the General, they say,* That no Order was given by them for searching his Pockets, or taking away his Papers; and believe no such Thing was done: That he was secured by Capt. *Dormer*, being found in the Quarters of those Forces that were drawn off for *Ireland*, actually endeavouring to put the Soldiers into a Distemper, and so to withdraw them from that Service; and was sent from those Quarters (not the Head-Quarters, as is falsely suggested) to *London*. And for the Privy or Authority of the General, if he had been then present, they conceive their Authority from the Parliament, on that Behalf, was sufficient without the General's; and, as the Case stood, they thought it not reasonable to consult the Army in the Matter of disturbing the *Irish* Service, when they had there found so little Encouragement before.

To the seventh Sir *William Waller*, Sir *John Clotworthy*, and Col. *Harley*, say, They are very sensible the Particulars charged in the seventh Article do specially relate to Things said or done in the House of Commons; and so not liable to any Censure, having passed the Approbation of that House, which hath already acquitted them, by their Votes of the 25th of *June*, from all Things done and spoken by them in the House, contained in this and the three ensuing Articles; and so ought not to have been recited in this Charge; yet, to vindicate themselves from the Scandal of Design and Combination against the Army, they shall give this true Account of what induced them to endeavour the suppressing of that Petition:

Sir *William Waller* and Sir *John Clotworthy*, being Commissioners of Parliament with the Ar-

my

my for the Service of *Ireland*, and Col. *Harley* An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
 being there to attend the same Service, *March 22,*
 1646, at a Convention of Officers for the Ser-
 vice of *Ireland* at *Walden*, the Petition was pro-
 duced, as the Petition of the Soldiers, to be ap-
 proved by the Officers there; and was pressed
 with such Eagerness, that an Officer of Quality
 offering some Reasons against it, was told, He
 deserved not to live in an Army; they taking
 Notice of the subtle and violent managing of
 that Petition, pretended to be the Petition of the
 Soldiers, but in Truth framed then, as they can
 prove, by some Officers at *Walden*, at a Time
 when the Parliament only proposed the Service
 of *Ireland*, and the Soldiery had neither Dispo-
 sition nor Cause to petition; the Army being
 well paid for several Months then past, specially
 the Foot, consisting much of Recruits, had little
 Cause to complain for Pay; thereupon they re-
 presented this Information to the General, as
 that which required his Care to suppress timely.
 But after they returned to *London*, they received
 several Informations, of which they have good
 Proof, that the Petition was agitated in several Re-
 giments, and proposed by the Officers to their Sol-
 diers: That some Officers threatened that those
 who did refuse to subscribe it should be cashiered;
 and Directions were given to return the Sub-
 scriptions to some principal Officers at the Head-
 Quarters. What passed in the House of Com-
 mons, they presume not to relate without the
 Leave of the House; but by these Particulars,
 which are ready to be attested by Persons of
 Worth, the Design of raising Jealousies between
 the Parliament and Army, will really be fixed
 upon those who have falsely imposed it on the ac-
 cused Members, to carry on their own Designs,
 which are since more visible.

To the eighth Article, whereas Col. *Harley* is
 charged, That, by Combination, he produced to
 this House a Letter which could not be made
 good, he affirms, He did acquaint the House
 with

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

‘ with a Letter received as he was coming to the
 ‘ House, and sent to him from an Officer of Worth
 ‘ in the Army, who was and is ready to justify the
 ‘ Substance of the Letter to be most true, That
 ‘ Lieutenant-Colonel *Pride*^d drew Col. *Harley*’s
 ‘ Regiment to a Rendezvous, read the Petition in
 ‘ the Head of his Company, and that the Petition
 ‘ was then subscribed by most of the Regiment;
 ‘ and that Lieutenant-Colonel *Pride* said, *Such as*
 ‘ *would not subscribe the Petition should be cashier’d*^e;
 ‘ That in this Col. *Harley* did nothing but his
 ‘ Duty, and what the House of Commons approved
 ‘ by their public Thanks to him and another worthy
 ‘ Member, an Officer of the Army, who produced
 ‘ another Letter concerning the same Business.

‘ For that which is laid to Mr. *Holles*’s Charge
 ‘ in this Article, concerning the drawing of that
 ‘ Declaration, he answers, That it was done in the
 ‘ House; and the House did allow of, pass it, and
 ‘ afterwards sent it up to the House of Peers, where
 ‘ it was likewise pass’d; and that any should question
 ‘ it, being become and made the Act of both Houses,
 ‘ and so a Charge rather against them than himself,
 ‘ seems strange unto him, whose Part in it
 ‘ was only to draw up that Declaration according
 ‘ to the Sense of the House, in Obedience to a general
 ‘ Call upon him for it, being exceedingly pressed
 ‘ and urged to do it, when himself was very
 ‘ unwilling to take that Task upon him.

‘ To the ninth Article, wherein it is said, *That*
 ‘ *Col. Harley, Sir John Clotworthy, Sir William*
 ‘ *Waller, and the said other Persons did procure*
 ‘ *divers eminent and faithful Officers of the Army,*
 ‘ *viz. Lieutenant-General Hammond, Colonel Lil-*
 ‘ *burne, Lieutenant-Colonel Pride, and others, to be*
 ‘ *sent for to appear at the Bar of the House, against*
 ‘ *whom they could charge nothing at all; inasmuch*
 ‘ *that*

^d Afterwards made a Colonel.

^e This is Liberty of Conscience so much professed and contested
 for by the Army.

Notes in the Original.

The Conduct of Col. *Pride*, in regard to this Petition, is particularly explain’d in our Fifteenth Volume, p. 337.

' that the House thought fit immediately to discharge
 ' them, it is answered, That the said Colonel Har-
 ' ley, Sir John Clotworthy, and Sir William Waller,
 ' having been informed that those who stile them-
 ' selves such eminent and faithful Persons of the
 ' Army, with some others, being very active in
 ' promoting the Petition mentioned in the former
 ' Articles, did, in Discharge of their Duty, faith-
 ' fully represent to the House what they had heard;
 ' and whilst the House was in Consideration there-
 ' of, divers Letters were brought to several Mem-
 ' bers of the House, from several Parts of the King-
 ' dom, declaring the Apprehension which many
 ' faithful Officers of the Army had taken up, if
 ' such a Petition should be permitted to go on; as,
 ' particularly, a Letter of the 28th of March last,
 ' directed to Col. Rossiter, an eminent Member of
 ' the Army; wherein it is desired, by such as pro-
 ' moted this Petition, that the Names of such Of-
 ' ficers and Soldiers as subscribed the Petition
 ' should be sent to Colonel Hammond, Lieutenant-
 ' General Hammond, Commissary-General Ireton,
 ' Colonel Lilburne, Lieutenant-Colonel Grimes,
 ' or any three of them. On the Consideration of
 ' what was mentioned in this and other Letters, in
 ' Confirmation of what was formerly presented by
 ' the Gentlemen articted against, the House of
 ' Commons did send for several of the Persons be-
 ' forementioned; and, as is conceived, had very
 ' good Reason so to do.

' And whereas it is said, That a Committee was
 ' appointed to examine the Truth or Falshood of them:
 ' If by the Truth or Falshood of them is meant,
 ' the Truth or Falshood of the Persons stiled divers
 ' eminent and faithful Officers of the Army, then
 ' how could they be said to be immediately dis-
 ' charged as such, against whom nothing could be
 ' charged or proved at all?

' The Gentlemen articted against do further
 ' say, That it is a very ill Use that is made of the
 ' Parliament's Indulgence, not to proceed with
 ' such Severity against those Persons convented be-

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

fore them, as aforesaid, as to affirm, That, therefore, nothing can be said against them: The like ill Use was formerly made of the Parliament's so far condescending to the Desires of another Peer, said to come from the Army, concerning the Obliterating of the Declaration relating to the Petition; both which Expressions might well, in Modesty and Duty, have been spared.

And whereas this Article is stuffed with great swelling Words of Vanity, as though the Gentlemen charged by this Article were pressed to produce their Proofs and Evidence, if they had any, before the Committee; it is answered, That the Persons brought up to the Bar were, by their own Confession in this Article, immediately discharged. What Need then was there, or to what Purpose was it, to bring any such Proofs against them, when as the Clemency of the House discharged them?

In a Word: It is most demonstrable it was the Parliament's Indulgence, not the Innocency of several, if not all, of those who were questioned, which brought them off from Punishment; and it were to be wished, in regard of these and their subsequent Proceedings, that some Proportion of Meekness and Ingenuity towards the Houses, did accompany so much professed Integrity, as is vaunted of by the Framers of this Article and Pamphlet.

To the tenth Article, which charges Mr. *Holles*, Sir *Philip Stapylton*, Sir *William Lewis*, Sir *William Waller*, Sir *John Clotworthy*, and Major-General *Masse*, to have been Instruments in obstructing the Relief of Ireland; and then relates some Passages of theirs in the House, (which could not be discovered to the Army by any but Members, contrary to their Oath and Duty, an high Violation of the Houses Privileges) they say, That they have faithfully, cordially, and industriously, at all Times, and upon all Occasions, to the best of their Understandings, promoted the Service of that poor bleeding Kingdom; that they

they did desire Supplies might have gone in an Ant. 23. Car. 1.
intire Body out of the Army, and that as speedily 1647.
as possibly could be; so as some of them took
the Boldness to move, That Sir Thomas Fairfax
might have been sent thither; which not suc-
ceeding, yet the House resolving eight Regiments
of Foot, four of Horse, and one of Dragoons
should be sent out of the Army, they, as zealous-
ly as they could, endeavoured the putting of it in
Execution, and attended the Committee to which
it was referred constantly and diligently: And they
doubt not but the great God, who will not be
mocked, will judge them according to their Deserts
who have obstructed it, by discountenancing and
affronting them who offered to embrace that Ser-
vice at the Convention of Officers, March 22,
1646^e, by cashiering, assaulting, and turning out
of their Quarters such as declared their Readiness
for that Service, under the ignominious Notion
of Deserters of the Army, and as Men untrue
to the common Interest of the Soldiers; and by
a positive Declaration, *That whatsoever faithful
Commander should be appointed for the Service of
Ireland, they must shew themselves averse to that
Service*, as is expressed in a Letter of the Agita-
tors to Lieutenant-General Cromwell, dated A-
pril 30, 1647. And, in Truth, Col. Robert Ham-
mond's high and unreasonable Propositions con-
cerning the present Service of Ireland, viz. *That
the Time of his Employment, and those of this Ar-
my going with him in this Service, exceed not two
or three Months at the furthest; that the Forces
going over with him be not obliged to any other Ser-
vice whatsoever, more than the possessing or defend-
ing of Dublin; that Col. Hammond himself may
have the Command of the Garrison of Dublin, and
all the Forces in it, during the said Term; that
Shipping be ready in the Harbour of Dublin, vic-
tualled at the Parliament's Charge, with sufficient*

I 2

¹ See a Vindication of 167 Officers that are come off from the
Army, and the printed Petition of the Officers to Sir Thomas Fair-
fax.

Notes in the Original.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

‘ *Convoy, fourteen Days before the Expiration of the said Term, to transport the said Forces back again for England, &c. and that upon other Terms than these he doubts the Number would not be considerable that would go over for that Space, clearly demonstrates his and the Army’s strange Averseness to Ireland’s Relief; and that all they aimed at was but to possess themselves of Dublin for the present, for what Ends, themselves and their Proceedings since can best discover.*

‘ *The Informations which they gave into the House, concerning the Engagement of divers Officers both of Horse and Foot for the Relief of Ireland, they avow to be true; but are extremely misrepresented in this Article: For whereas it is falsely suggested, That they informed the House that, by their Procurement, there were fifty Companies of Foot and ten Troops of Horse of the Army engaged for that Service upon the Terms proposed by the Parliament, the Truth is, That divers Officers of Horse, relating to so many Troops, and some of the Officers of about fifty Companies of Foot were, by Subscription, personal Promise, or Assurance from others, really and truly engaged, as may appear by the Report made unto the House, unto which they refer themselves; but afterwards many were drawn off again by the Artifice of those, who, though they pretended Ireland’s Relief, have their Ends rather upon the Confusion of England than the Relief of Ireland, as their Proceedings do manifest.*

‘ *Concerning the Subscriptions of Col. Butler, Lieutenant-Colonel Jackson, Major Gooday, and others, for that Service, supposed to be procured in Delusion of the Parliament, to mislead it into a vain Imagination of a Strength out of the Army, which had nothing of Reality in it, in regard those Officers did then declare their Unwillingness to go into Ireland upon any Terms whatsoever; truly we conceive that Declaration from the Officers, bearing Date the 22d of March, will sufficiently clear both from any dishonourable*

able Combination; wherein it will appear that they obliged themselves no further, than either to engage in their own Persons, or to improve their Interests in their respective Commands, for that Service; which last Obligation they have made good like Men of Honour.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
July.

As for those Officers of Col. Butler's and Sir Hardress Waller's Regiments; their Names might be given in by those who knew, or might justly suppose, that their Inclinations led them to embrace that Service; if their Friends were mistaken in them, or their Minds since altered, we know not what Crime can be imputed to any.

Lieut. Col. Farrington was never presented by them to the House as a Lieutenant-Colonel of the Army, and engaging for himself and his Regiment for Ireland; but only as a Gentleman that had formerly held the Quality of Lieutenant-Colonel, and yet did retain a very great and deserved Interest in that Regiment, and with whom they conceived the Regiment would be very willing to engage.

To the eleventh, which charges Sir Philip Stapylton, Mr. Holles, Sir John Clotworthy, Sir William Lewis, Major-General Massey, Sir William Waller, and Mr. Glynn, with commanding Part of three Regiments, advanced for Ireland from Bromsgrave in Worcestershire, back to Reading, with an evil Intent to draw Forces together for a new War, and this being done upon the Sabbath-Day; they answer, That, out of their Zeal to promote the Service for Ireland, they met at all Times when they were summoned at Derby-House, where the Council sat early and late, and some Times on the Sabbath-Day, being in Truth a Work of the greatest Piety and Mercy; which certainly was not for their Ease, and they hope rather a Merit, than to be reputed a Crime: That that Business was transacted at a full Committee, whether upon the Sabbath-Day or no they know not; but they know, and affirm, that the Reason why those Regiments

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

‘ were ordered to come to *Reading*, was only that
 ‘ Money might be sent to them for their Pay;
 ‘ the Officers representing to the Committee the
 ‘ great Necessities of the Soldiers, and that where
 ‘ they were then quartered in *Worcestershire*, they
 ‘ did not know how to convey it thither with Safe-
 ‘ ty, in regard it must pass through the Quarters
 ‘ of the Army, who had expressed great Displea-
 ‘ sure to those Forces which were drawn off for
 ‘ *Ireland*; and the Committee was the rather in-
 ‘ duced to it, because they knew the Money which
 ‘ was sent to *Oxford*, for disbanding a Regiment
 ‘ there quartered, when, upon their Refusal to dis-
 ‘ band, it was ordered to be brought back, was
 ‘ violently taken away by the Soldiers from those
 ‘ intrusted with that Service; and the Committee
 ‘ feared some such Attempt for the intercepting of
 ‘ this Money, which occasioned that calling back
 ‘ to *Reading*; and not any such Design as is,
 ‘ most falsely and maliciously, in the Article sug-
 ‘ gested.

‘ To the twelfth, wherein Sir *John Clotworthy*
 ‘ is said to *to have converted several great Sums of*
 ‘ *Money to his own particular Use in the Years*
 ‘ *1642, 1643, 1644, and since; which, by several*
 ‘ *Orders of Parliament, and of the Irish Commit-*
 ‘ *tee, were designed for the Relief of Ireland*; first,
 ‘ he answereth, That he never received any Mo-
 ‘ ney from the Beginning of the War untill this
 ‘ Day for the Relief of *Ireland* in general; but
 ‘ only for the particular Charge he hath in that
 ‘ Kingdom, wherewith he was honoured in the
 ‘ Beginning of the War by a special Order of Par-
 ‘ liament.

‘ And for the particular Sums in that Article
 ‘ suggested to be received by him in Money, he
 ‘ saith, That he never received any such Money,
 ‘ and was so far from making any particular Use
 ‘ of such, either Money or Provisions, as were de-
 ‘ signed for supporting the Soldiers under his Care,
 ‘ to their Prejudice in the least Degree, that he
 ‘ hath disbursed above 3000 *l.* out of his own Purse,
 ‘ and

and by his Credit, for their Support and Relief, An. 23. Car. I. 1647.
more than was received.

He further saith, That for the Sum of 280 *l.* in the Article mentioned, by an Account delivered to the Committee of Accounts in *June* 1644, he was so far from intending the least Prejudice, either to the State here, or that Kingdom of *Ireland*, that, amongst other Sums, he charged himself with the said 280 *l.* for twenty Butts of Sack, which he should have received from one *Whisfoot*; who failing therein, the said Sir *John* converted the Credit of the Ordinance for the said 280 *l.* into Cloaths for his Soldiers, as, upon full Examination and Debate several Years since had thereof, before the Committee of Accounts, may appear.

And by the said Account he is likewise charged with 300 *l.* in the Article mentioned for one hundred and twenty Pair of Pistols, the most whereof he exchanged, by Order, out of the Stores of this Kingdom for Firelocks, which he sent over to the Soldiers of his Regiment, and the Remainder of the said Pistols were delivered to his Troop; and he never converted any of the said Pistols to his own Use, though he conceives he might have done, having given Allowance for them on his Account: And for the Money for the said Pistols, as no Part thereof ever came to his Hands, so he conceives the same is yet due and unpaid to one *Abraham Vandeband*, who provided the said Pistols on the Credit of the State.

For the Sum of 700 *l.* for 2000 Swords; he knoweth nothing thereof, nor ever received any such Sum; but acknowledgeth that he is charged by his said Account with 175 *l.* for his Part of 2000 Swords; which, as the former Sum of 280 *l.* hath been laid out, with much more of his own, for the Service of the State; so as the said Sir *John Clotworthy* having prevented the Informers by his Account long since given in, and there remaining so great a Sum disbursed by him

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

him, over and above what he hath received; had he detained any Part towards his own Disbursements, which he conceives he might justly have done, yet could it not have been charged against him for so heinous a Crime, and that in Prosecution of the Design in the general Charge mentioned, as is impertinently laid down in the said Article.

And for the other divers Sums of Money, suggested in general to have been received, from Time to Time, by the said Sir John for the Use of Ireland, which are alledged not to be employed as by the several Orders was directed and intended; when he knows the Particulars, he hopes to give a satisfactory Answer therein; and wishes that some few of his many Accusers may be able to give as just an Account for the many Sums they have received, in relation to their Employments, as he hath done, and is ready to do, for those few Sums directed for his and his Soldiers Support in that hard War of Ireland.

And whereas, by this Article, it is suggested, *That the said Sir John Clotworthy hath, within two Years last past, received several Sums of Money, Arms, and other Provisions, for a Troop of Horse, which he pretended he had raised in Ireland;* he saith, That he never pretended to have raised any such Troop, though he may, with some Confidence, affirm, he hath, to his great Charge, these five Years past, maintained a Troop of Horse which was formerly under the Command of Capt. Upton, deceased, and after his Death conferred on him; which Troop he hath often recruited since his Command thereof, being about five Years Space, during which Time there was never received from the State, in Money, above seven Weeks Pay, with some little Provisions of Cloaths and Arms, which he duly returned to the said Troop, with some Addition of his own, for their better Support in Service; judging it a most abominable Act to detain any Thing

‘ Thing at all, especially of so little, designed for An. 23. Car. I.
 ‘ such necessitous Soldiers. 1647.

‘ And whereas, by the latter Part of the Article,
 ‘ it is most scandalously suggested, *That the said*
 ‘ *Sir John Clotworthy, for Money and other Re-*
 ‘ *wards, hath preferred John Davis and William*
 ‘ *Sommers, and others, to be intrusted with the*
 ‘ *Irish Affairs, who have kept Correspondency with*
 ‘ *the Enemy, and defrauded the State of other great*
 ‘ *Sums of Money; and that he hath been privy to,*
 ‘ *and a Sharer in such their Actions,* he saith, That
 ‘ the said Charge is most false and untrue in all
 ‘ the Parts thereof wherein he is concerned: And
 ‘ for the said *William Sommers*, he saith, He never
 ‘ preferred him to be intrusted with any of the
 ‘ *Irish Affairs*, nor knoweth of any Employment
 ‘ he ever had in that Way; it being notoriously
 ‘ known he never had such Employment since the
 ‘ Rebellion of *Ireland* began; so as he was not
 ‘ in any Capacity to defraud the State.

‘ The said *Sir John Clotworthy* further saith,
 ‘ That *John Davis* hath been contracted withall
 ‘ for great Proportions of Victuals, Arms, and
 ‘ Cloaths for *Ireland*; as a Merchant; wherein the
 ‘ Committee of both Kingdoms, and the Com-
 ‘ mittee for the Affairs of *Ireland*, the Consent of
 ‘ the Houses first had, have dealt with him after
 ‘ others refused such Contracts, as he then accept-
 ‘ ed, and since performed; to most of which the
 ‘ said *Sir John* was not privy, and no Participant
 ‘ at all with the said *John Davis* in any of the
 ‘ Particulars contracted for, as is now, and hath
 ‘ been formerly, in printed Pamphlets falsely sug-
 ‘ gested; but that the said *John Davis* was ever
 ‘ trusted with the Affairs of *Ireland* other than as
 ‘ a Merchant, (whereby he had the Opportunity,
 ‘ in Performance of his Contracts with the State,
 ‘ to lay out his own Money by great Sums, and
 ‘ get it again as he can, whereof there may be
 ‘ now some Doubt) the said *Sir John Clotworthy*
 ‘ is totally ignorant.

‘ To

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

‘ To the thirteenth Article, wherein, among
 ‘ other Things, *secret Intelligence to have been held*
 ‘ *with the Lord of Ormond, by Cyphers, is laid to*
 ‘ *the Charge of the said Sir John Clotworthy, his*
 ‘ Answer is, That he, together with Sir Thomas
 ‘ *Wharton, Sir Robert King, Sir Robert Meredith,*
 ‘ and *Richard Salway, Esq;* or any three of them,
 ‘ being appointed Commissioners, but not jointly
 ‘ as is pretended, to treat with the Lord of Or-
 ‘ *mond, for the Delivery of the Sword, &c. of the*
 ‘ *City of Dublin; after four Days Treaty, accord-*
 ‘ *ing to their Instructions; the Treaty not taking*
 ‘ Effect, the Commissioners resolved, That three
 ‘ of them should go for *Belfast*, and two of them
 ‘ come to *London*: And whilst the Commissioners
 ‘ were in Preparation for their Departure, upon
 ‘ several just and warrantable Occasions, they re-
 ‘ paired jointly and severally to the Lord of Or-
 ‘ *mond, who seemed to be much troubled that the*
 ‘ Treaty took no Effect; professing the only Cause
 ‘ thereof to be the Want of the King’s Assent,
 ‘ which he said he hoped to gain; desiring to
 ‘ have it so presented to the Parliament, and that
 ‘ he might acquaint the Parliament, and the Com-
 ‘ missioners then going for *Belfast*, with the King’s
 ‘ Answer; and, lest Letters should be intercepted
 ‘ by the Rebels, there was a Cypher agreed on,
 ‘ which was known to several of the Commissioners
 ‘ when it was delivered, and of which the said Sir
 ‘ *John* minded the other Commissioners at *Belfast*
 ‘ after their Arrival there, and before any Thing
 ‘ was written by the same from the Lord of Or-
 ‘ *mond; and, about a Fortnight afterwards, the*
 ‘ Lord of *Ormond, by the Means of one Capt.*
 ‘ *Ward, conveyed a little open Paper in Cypher,*
 ‘ directed to the said Sir *John Clotworthy; who,*
 ‘ as soon as he received it, did communicate the
 ‘ same to the rest of the Commissioners; which
 ‘ being decyphered, there was thereby intimated,
 ‘ That he was more than hopeful they should
 ‘ shortly hear from him to their Content; to which
 ‘ the Commissioners return’d an Answer, That they
 ‘ should

‘ should be glad to hear of the Content he was An. 23. Car. 1.
 ‘ hopeful to give: With all which, and the other 1647.
 ‘ Transactions of that Affair, the Committee of }
 ‘ *Derby-House* were made acquainted, and report- July.
 ‘ ed the same to both Houses before Sir *John Clot-*
 ‘ *worthy* came out of *Ireland*; and the Houses, ha-
 ‘ ving approved of the Carriage and Endeavours
 ‘ of the Commissioners upon the whole Transac-
 ‘ tion of the Business, have long since so far owned
 ‘ them therein, that they have given Thanks unto
 ‘ them for the same.

‘ This being the only Particular wherein the
 ‘ said Sir *John Clotworthy* is, by this Article, char-
 ‘ ged to have held Intelligence with the Lord of
 ‘ *Ormond*; and that being by the Advice of the
 ‘ rest of the Commissioners, in Manner as afore-
 ‘ said, and for so good an End, as the giving his
 ‘ Lordship an Opportunity of new Application to
 ‘ the Parliament for rendering to them the City
 ‘ of *Dublin* and the other Garrisons under his
 ‘ Command; which hath, since that Time, taken
 ‘ Effect accordingly, to the exceeding great Advan-
 ‘ tage and Strengthening of this Kingdom’s Interest
 ‘ in *Ireland*; the said Sir *John Clotworthy* leaves it
 ‘ to the Judgment of all equal minded Men, whe-
 ‘ ther or no there be any just Cause to exhibit
 ‘ such a Charge against him for the same, espe-
 ‘ cially by an Army pretending such good Affec-
 ‘ tions to *Ireland*’s Welfare.

‘ For the other Part of the said Article, con-
 ‘ cerning the said Sir *John Clotworthy*’s holding
 ‘ Intelligence with the Lord *Digby*; he directly
 ‘ denieth any such Thing, as being utterly false
 ‘ and untrue; for he never saw the said Lord *Dig-*
 ‘ *by* these many Years, but one Night accidentally,
 ‘ when being last at *Dublin* with the other Com-
 ‘ missioners aforesaid, he was sent to the Castle
 ‘ of *Dublin*, by the said Commissioners, concern-
 ‘ ing an Officer of Col. *Moore*’s, that had recei-
 ‘ ved an Injury by some Persons that related to
 ‘ the Lord of *Ormond*; at which Time the said
 ‘ Lord *Digby* came into the Room where he was,
 ‘ but

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

July.

but he had no Discourse with him in private, nor at all, other than common Talk, several Persons being present: Neither hath the said Sir John Clotworthy, since the said Lord Digby departed the Parliament, ever exchanged Letter, Message, or Word with him, directly or indirectly, otherwise, or at any other Time, than is hereby declared.

And whereas, by this Article, it is charged, That, in order to such secret Intelligence, (of which he admires a whole Army residing in England should have such certain and public Notice, as to make it a positive Charge, and undertake to prove it upon Oath, were it so secret as they charge it, as the Article alledgeth to have been held by the said Sir John Clotworthy with the said Lord Digby,) the Lord of Ormond and the said Lord Digby lately employed one Slingsby, who, as the Article saith, pretends a Design about the Prince, to come into this Kingdom; the said Sir John Clotworthy utterly denieth to have had any Thought of any such Design, or any Knowledge of the said Slingsby, or of his Coming into the Kingdom, untill he heard that one Slingsby, whom he yet knoweth not, had been examined before the Committee at Derby-House. And the said Sir John presumeth he hath, to the said Committee, confessed who employed him, and to whom he was employed here.

To the fourteenth, which charges Sir John Clotworthy, Mr. Holles, and Sir Philip Stapylton, with obstructing Articles exhibited against the Lord Inchequin; calling back the Lord Lisle from the Government of Ireland; causing the Command of the Forces in that Kingdom to be committed to the Lord Inchequin, he writing a Letter to his Lordship, upon the Receipt whereof he should express he had Direction to put out all those who favoured Independents; they do say they were so far from keeping off any Proceedings upon those Articles, that they furthered it all they could, and several Times moved it in the House; being desirous to have all cleared

cleared concerning the Lord *Inchequin*, whom, An. 23. Car. I.
as they believed to be a Man of Honour and Fi-
delity, so if, upon Examination of his Actions,
he appeared to be other, they were resolved to
declare their Sense of him accordingly.

1647.
July.

As for what concerns the Lord *Lisle*, they say,
His Lordship's Time expiring, which was but
for one Year, either for himself or any one else
to continue in that Command, the Parliament
was pleased to dispose of the Affairs of *Ireland* in
another Way; in the Agitation whereof in the
House they went according to their Judgments
and Consciences, without respecting any Person
living.

For the Command of the Forces of that King-
dom which, as to the Lord *Inchequin*, can only
be understood of *Munster*, they do not know that
ever any Thing was here done in it at all, there
having been no Occasion for it, as to their Know-
ledge: And as for the Letter mentioned to have
been written by them, or any of them, or from
some other Person by their, or all of their, Di-
rection, they say, As it is altogether uncertain
and illegal, so it is a mere Fiction, (for they ne-
ver did any such Thing) and tends to draw the
Odium of Independents upon them; to whose
Advancement, both in *Ireland* and elsewhere,
they fear they may prove obstructive, as this Ar-
ticle clearly insinuates.

To the fifteenth, Sir *William Lewis* and Mr.
Glynne say, That the Order of the 30th of *April*,
in the Article mentioned, (if there were any
such) relates to them only as Members of the
Committee, for whom they intend not to answer:
But in Truth there was no such Order; it was
only a Report, not an Order, and intended only
for the County of *Caermarthen*, however it came
to pass the Words were general; and that was
done in order to be reported to the House, and
accordingly was reported, and after repealed by
the Committee as they were informed. And as
for the publishing and sending thereof unto every
Com-

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

Committee in *Wales*, they know nothing thereof; neither was it done by their, or either of their, Directions or Consents.

To the sixteenth Article, Sir *William Lewis* denieth his protecting any Delinquents in *South-Wales*, as is untruly alledged.

And as for the Earl of *Carbery*; he did no more than move in the House of Commons to make good what Major-General *Laugharn* had promised and pressed for on his Behalf, by his Letters to the Speaker and Committee of both Kingdoms; representing the Advantages that came to the Parliament by his Conformity, and how it would further their Service to oblige him.

For Mr. *Carew* of *Glamorgan* and Mr. *Herbert* of *Brecknockshire*; after their long Imprisonment, they being upon their Compositions at *Goldsmiths Hall*, he did but move the ascertaining of their Fines, according to the Rules prescribed to the Committee there; having observed that Delays brought a Prejudice both to the Parliament and the Parties sequestered, by abusing the one in their Authority, the other in their Estates. And for Mr. *Herbert*; after his Sight of some high Articles drawn up against him by Mr. *Rumsey*, he never spake in his Behalf, and he yet continues a Prisoner in *Ely-House*. For Mr. *Morgan* of *Brecknockshire*; he is one the said Sir *William* hath ever used with no more than a Civility suitable to their being Countrymen, and of many Years Acquaintance; which he believes no good Man can look on as an Offence. For Mr. *Gwyn* and Mr. *Lewis* of *Radnorshire*, two of the Committee in that County, and those that, by Major-General *Laugharn's* Certificate and Col. *Birch's* public Testimony, had furthered the reducing of that County; he did but publicly move in the House that some Disputes concerning them, and some Differences between them and others of the Committee for that County, might be referred to the Committee for *Gloucester*, sitting in *Channel-Row*; which he did out of his Desire to serve
the

the Parliament, by keeping Peace in those remote Parts, and for no Ends at all of his own.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

And further saith, He was never so much as present at any Debate concerning the Sequestration of any other Person whatever in either of the fore-mentioned Counties, save those above-named; nor ever so much as motioned to any Member of either House, Committee-Man or other, either the Remitting or favourable Compounding with any, upon any Terms not warrantable by the Rules prescribed, or their compounding with any that were incapable thereof; nor ever did animate or encourage any, since this unhappy Difference, to continue their Fidelity to the King's Cause, by promising them, that if they would engage their Friends with the King for him, he and his would be their Friends in the Parliament, as is untruly suggested; looking upon that kind of Conditioning as a Thing below the Thoughts of a Gentleman.

What the Delinquents in those Parts say of him, or how they look upon him, or how they or any others look upon those that charge him, or what shall be his or their Lot at his Majesty's Coming to London, he is ignorant of; but hopes that a little Time will discover both him and them in their true Colours; and wisheth every Man's Return may be according to the Singleness and Integrity of his Affections to the public Peace and Welfare of the Kingdom.

And farther he saith, That there being an Order for the Nomination of Justices of the Peace for the County of Brecknock, he humbly named Mr. Roger Vaughan, now High Sheriff of that County, to be added to the Committee formerly named by the House; also Mr. Meredith Lewis, Mr. George Parrey, and Mr. Edward Williams, as the fittest Persons he knew of to supply the Necessity there was of Justices in that County: And although he cannot say that when the King's Forces had a Power in those Parts, but that many of them may have done that which is not justifiable,

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

tifiable; yet for his Brother Mr. *Thomas Lewis*, who was formerly one of the Committee, he is confident his Innocency is equal with any Man's in that County, and his Sufferings as great as any of double his Fortune inhabiting there; he having been carried Prisoner, by Sir *William Vaughan's* Command, to *Ludlow-Castle* with one Mr. *Hugh Williams*, where they continued till he laid down eight score Pounds for their Enlargement; and he can confidently affirm that no Man is left out of Commission, that any honest Man can pretend, either by his Estate or Affections to the Parliament, to deserve to be therein employed; and he could heartily wish that he or they that gave Information on this Article, would have advised who else should have been recommended for Committee-Men or Justices. And for Mr. *Edward Williams* being made Solicitor; his Commission was delivered upon Certificate from three of the four Gentlemen who are the only Persons resident in the County of those that are named for the Committee there; and he believes he hath been so careful in his Duty, that neither Corruption nor Remissness can be justly charged or proved against him.

And the said Sir *William* saith, That his Son was chosen Burgess for the Borough of *Brecknock* by the unanimous Assent of the Burgesses, who adjudged him a fit Person to serve for them; and his Fitness for that Place he desires may be determined of by those amongst whom he hath the Honour to sit, who have seen his Demeanor, and are the only proper Judges thereof; but that he kept the Writ eight Months in his Custody, in order thereto, is most untrue; for at his being in *Brecknockshire* in July 1646, having carried the Writ down with him; and finding, at *Ragland*, that *Worcester* was then but upon Delivery to the Parliament, and that the Commissioners of Peace for that County were those that continued in their Authority by their old Commission, he thought it

it then no fit Time for a public Meeting in that
Town upon such an Occasion, lest some ill
Consequence might have followed thereon; and
thereupon, at his Return, acquainted Mr. *Pri-*
deaux, one of the then Commissioners for the
Great Seal, therewith; and, with his Approba-
tion, returned the Writ to Mr. *Scobel*, the Re-
gister, in whose Custody it continued till he cal-
led for it again some five Weeks before the
Election.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
July.

To the seventeenth Article the said Sir *Wil-*
liam Lewis acknowledgeth that, by the Ever-ho-
nourable the Earl of *Essex's* Commission, and the
Approbation of both Houses of Parliament, he
was, in the Beginning of these Troubles, made
Governor of *Portsmouth*; though not only with-
out his Desire but against it, as it is well known
to Sir *John Evelyn* of *Wilts*, a Member of the
Honourable House of Commons: That during
his Service there he received much of the Public
Treasure, for which he gave such an Account,
as that he had his Discharge from the Commit-
tee for Accounts, bearing Date the 15th Day of
March, 1644: And the said Committee, coming
to the House of Commons with their Certificates
of that Account and others, did there publicly
attest it to be both just and frugal; whereupon
the House was so favourable as to vote, on the
third of *April*, 1645, their Approbation of his
Account so presented unto them; and to order
That the Committee of the Revenue should, with
their speedest and best Conveniency, pay unto him
the Sum of 415l. 16s. 8d. part of what remained
due unto him upon his said Account, as appeared
by the Certificates above-mentioned; which evi-
dently disproves that Part of the Charge, which
doth most unjustly accuse him for not accounting,
of which he believes his greatest Accusers are far
more guilty than himself, since he never heard
of any Certificate made to the House of their
Accounts.

Car. 1. 7. ly. ' And whereas he is likewise charged, while he
 ' was Governor there, frequently to have held Cor-
 ' respondency and Intelligence with the King's Party,
 ' about the Delivery up of the said Garrison: Some
 ' such Aspersions having been very undeservedly
 ' raised on him, during his Command there, the
 ' Committee of Lords and Commons for the Safety
 ' of the Kingdom were pleased to write to him to
 ' come up to London, by their Letter dated the 8th
 ' of June, 1643; where the said Sir William pres-
 ' sing, by his Importunity, the said Committee and
 ' Earl of Essex that they would examine whatever
 ' could be alledged against him, to punish him if
 ' faulty, and right him if injured; upon the Earl
 ' of Essex's Letter to the said Committee, after a
 ' full Examination of the Business, the Committee,
 ' by their Letter, gave his Lordship this Account
 ' following:

Westminster, July 29, 1643.

May it please your Excellency,

*WE have examined and debated the Business con-
 cerning Sir William Lewis, as your Lordship
 did desire; and out of all those Jealousies and Al-
 legations which have been offered against him, there
 amounts nothing, as we can gather, which can de-
 rogate from his Honour, or the public Confidence
 reposed in him in his Command at Portsmouth. This
 Account we render to your Excellency, as well to an-
 swer that which hath been referred to us by your Ex-
 cellency's Letter, as that which is required from us
 by Sir William Lewis's Innocency. This being the
 State of this Business, it is left in the Hands of your
 Excellency to repair this worthy Gentleman in what
 Manner you shall please; and so we take our Leave,
 and rest*

Your Excellency's

very affectionate Friends

and humble Servants,

BEDFORD,
 PEMBROKE and MONT-
 GOMERY,

B. DENEIGH,
 W. SAY and SELE,
 JO. PYM.

' Th

‘ The which Letter being carried to his Excel-
 ‘ lency, after his Perusal thereof, he wished the
 ‘ said Sir *William Lewis* to repair again to *Portf-*
 ‘ *mouth*, and to take Care thereof; but he having
 ‘ vindicated his Innocency, and to manifest how
 ‘ little he regarded either Places of Honour or
 ‘ Gain, (which others aspire to) desired to be ex-
 ‘ cused, and quitted the Employment.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 July.

‘ Why, or upon what Grounds, the said Sir
 ‘ *William*, with divers other Persons who faithfully
 ‘ served the Parliament, was left out of the Pro-
 ‘ clamation mentioned, he knoweth not, being no
 ‘ ways privy to their Councils, nor what his Ma-
 ‘ jesty was pleased to say of him; but this he
 ‘ knoweth, and ’tis generally known to that Part
 ‘ of *Hampshire* where he lived, that, about *Octo-*
 ‘ *ber*, 1643, there was plundered from him by the
 ‘ King’s Party to the Value of between 2 and 3000*l.*
 ‘ by means whereof, his Lands being unstocked, he
 ‘ made not three Pence of them in three Years.
 ‘ For his Estate in *Brecknockshire*, which, by the
 ‘ Charge, is allowed to be worth about 600*l. per*
 ‘ *Annum*, it was not held worth sequestering in
 ‘ those Parts, in regard of the Taxes laid upon it;
 ‘ and during the Time of the Troubles he made
 ‘ little Profit of his Estate there or elsewhere.

‘ And as it is no Argument that some Malig-
 ‘ nants in Arms against the Parliament did hold
 ‘ Correspondency with them, because their Estates
 ‘ in some Places have not been yet sequestered,
 ‘ through Negligence of the Officers, or Want of
 ‘ Evidence; so he presumes it can be no Proof of
 ‘ his complying with the King or his Party, in the
 ‘ Judgment of any indifferent Person, or of his
 ‘ Accusers (who now profess their Correspondency
 ‘ with his Majesty without the Houses Privity, in
 ‘ their late printed Letter, of *July 8*, 1647th, to
 ‘ both Houses) because he was not sequestered upon
 ‘ the same or any such like Occasion; which, for
 ‘ ought he knows, may be the Case of some other
 ‘ well-affected Members.

K 2

‘ A9

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

‘ As concerning Col. *Price’s* Estate; upon the
 ‘ sad Complaint of Mrs. *Price* of her Necessities,
 ‘ he wrote a Letter to the Committee only to al-
 ‘ low unto her the fifth Part of her Husband’s
 ‘ Estate, according to the Ordinance of Parliament
 ‘ in that Behalf, and to restore her Wearing Ap-
 ‘ parel which had been taken from her, (an Extre-
 ‘ mity he had not heard of before used to any
 ‘ other) which he hopes his Accusers, who now
 ‘ desire Justice for, and Indulgence towards, De-
 ‘ linquents, which they charge as a Crime in
 ‘ others, cannot dislike: But for the letting of Col.
 ‘ *Price’s* Estate, he did not intermeddle therein;
 ‘ but believes the Tenant that rents it at 50*l.* per
 ‘ *Annum* pays a full Value for it to the State, con-
 ‘ sidering it is charged with Annuities of 120*l.* per
 ‘ *Annum* issuing out of it, his Wife’s fifth Part,
 ‘ and all Taxes and Contributions.

‘ The said Mr. *Glynne*, as to the Charge in the
 ‘ sixteenth Article, whereby he is charged *To pro-
 ‘ cure several Persons that have been Commissioners
 ‘ of Array in North-Wales, to be named in Commis-
 ‘ sions of Peace, and other Places of greater Trust
 ‘ and Command*, saith, The Article gives not any
 ‘ Instance of any such Person that he hath procured
 ‘ to be named a Justice of Peace, or any other
 ‘ Place of Trust or Command, except Col. *Glynne*,
 ‘ his Brother, made Governor of the Town and
 ‘ Castle of *Caernarvon*. And for the said Col.
 ‘ *Glynne*, he avers he was never any Colonel in
 ‘ the King’s Army, but constantly declared his
 ‘ Affection to the Parliament; and for that Cause
 ‘ he was, in the Beginning of the Troubles, be-
 ‘ sieged in his own House, with Cannon planted
 ‘ against it; where he was taken Prisoner, his
 ‘ Arms seized upon, himself charged with Treason,
 ‘ and intended to be proceeded against at *Shrewsf-
 ‘ bury*, had not some Persons interposed and pro-
 ‘ cured his Enlargement, upon Security that he
 ‘ should not bear Arms for the Parliament: And
 ‘ as he hath suffered for his Affection to the Par-
 ‘ liament,

liament, so he hath advantageously acted for
 them, by inviting Major-General *Mitton* to
 come into *North-Wales*; joining his Forces with
 the said Major-General, and relieving the Par-
 liament's Forces with Money; by reason whereof
 the County and Castle of *Caernarvon* was reduced
 to the Parliament's Obedience, of whose emi-
 nent Services the House of Commons took spe-
 cial Notice, in a Letter written unto him; and,
 for Recompence of his Sufferings for the Parlia-
 ment, and the great Service done for them, he
 was made Governor of *Caernarvon*, for the Safety
 of those Parts, and Encouragement of the Well-
 affected there.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 July.

To the eighteenth Article, whereby Mr. *Glynne*
 is charged *To have taken Rewards of several*
Persons for Service done them in the House; and,
in particular, 100l. paid unto his Wife by the
Drovers of Wales, for Service done them, he
 saith, That the same is a false and slanderous
 Charge: And for the 100*l.* supposed to be given
 to his Wife, who is dead and cannot answer for
 herself, the same is untrue; for Mr. *Glynne* lent
 those poor Men 100*l.* out of his own Money,
 to find them Bread, which was afterwards repaid
 him, when they procured Money upon the Cre-
 dit of the Excise, as will be justified by many
 Persons of Quality; besides which there was no
 other 100*l.* that came to his Wife's Hands.

To the nineteenth Article, Mr. *Glynne* an-
 swers, *first*, concerning Delinquents, That the
 Charge is general, and therefore he can make
 no particular Answer, but generally not guilty.

Secondly, Concerning the putting out of the
 Militia; That he was no way concerned in it;
 they were presented by the Common-Council,
 and chosen there when he was not present, and
 afterwards approved by both Houses; and he
 cannot take upon him to give Reasons to justify
 the Acts of both Houses or the Common-Coun-
 cil, who are only impeached by this Charge, and

150 *The Parliamentary History*

AN. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

July.

‘ must plead not guilty of intermedling with putting in or putting out.

‘ To the twentieth Article, where it is said, *That Sir Philip Stapylton, Mr. Holles, and Sir William Lewis, have, by their Power and Countenance, obstructed Justice in the Cause between Alderman Langham and Captain Limery, and that of John Gunter*; they answer, That Mr. *Holles* and Sir *Philip Stapylton*, being one Afternoon in the Court of *Requests*, heard that the House of Peers were then to sit, which made them go to see what the Occasion was; and, coming into the Lobby, found there the Earl of *Rutland*, who told them their House met about a great Business betwixt *Langham* and *Limery*, and some Discourse passed concerning it; when Mr. *Holles* and Sir *Philip Stapylton* said, ‘They understood that the Merits of the Cause was not at all in Question, only the entertaining of it upon an Appeal, which they conceived was the common Justice of the Kingdom, and not to be denied to any; which having said, they went away; now was it done in secret, but spoken publicly, and in the Hearing of some of the Counsel for *Limery*. And they do utterly deny the speaking of any such Words as are alledged to be said by them; for they were so far from engaging their Interest in it, as they do not to this Day know what the Lords did upon it. And Sir *William Lewis* doth absolutely deny his being there present at all, when any such Conference was with the Earl of *Rutland*; and cannot but observe there should be that Significancy attributed to his Presence and Gesture, as thereby to discover his Thoughts and Inclinations, especially when he was not there in Person. And as for the Cause instanced concerning *John Gunter*, he conceives it to be a Suit depending in Chancery betwixt the Father and Son, both nearly related to him, but no further proceeded in than to Bill and Answer, that he knows of; and what Influence his Countenance

nance could have, so early Days in the Beginning of a Suit, let all the World judge.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

To the twenty-first Article, which concerns Mr. *Nicholl* only, he saith, That although his Election was voted to be void by the Committee of Privileges, whose meer Votes exclude no Members from sitting in the House, where no Witnesses were heard on his Behalf; yet he conceives his Election good, and hopes it will be thought so by the House, when they hear a true State of the Cause. And whereas they object, it hath lain four Years unreported; Mr. *Nicholl* appeals unto the House, and that worthy Gentleman in whose Hand that Report lay, being never prosecuted by his Competitor, whether he hath not endeavoured to have that Report made, and the Business determined; and still continues his humble Request to the House for the speedy determining of the same.

July.

To the second Clause Mr. *Nicholl* answers, That he never used any Threats, Menaces, or indirect Practices, for the bringing in of any Members, either out of *Cornwall* or any other Country in the *West*: And it is well known that those worthy Gentlemen there elected, and now excepted against, were fairly and duly chosen by their own Interest and public Demerits; and their unbyassed Integrity is such, that they detest the maintaining of a Faction, or carrying on of any Design other than the common Good.

To the third Clause of that Article Mr. *Nicholl* saith, That he continues in an Office of Master of the Armory in the *Tower*, wherein he hath faithfully served the State for their Advantage; and that since the Self-denying Ordinance passed the Houses, he never received one Penny of his Fee from the Committee of Revenue; but confesseth to have received a Rent of 34*l.* a Year, or thereabouts, and a Fine for two Houses, which he is to be accountable for to the Parliament: And it is well known that Mr. *Nicholl* lost a far better

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

‘ better Office, both for Profit and Esteem, than
 ‘ this (the Customers Place of *Plymouth* and of
 ‘ all the Ports in the County of *Cornwall*) for his
 ‘ Fidelity to the Parliament; and hath received no
 ‘ Reparation for the same, as divers others have
 ‘ had for their lost Offices. Besides, he hath been
 ‘ employed in many long and chargeable Journeys,
 ‘ and hath expended divers great Sums of Money
 ‘ in them, which he hath borrowed of his Friends;
 ‘ and hath yet had no Satisfaction from the Parlia-
 ‘ ment in Consideration thereof, as some of his
 ‘ Accusers have had for meaner Services.

‘ To the twenty-second, Mr. *Nicholl* saith, That
 ‘ neither himself, nor any other for him, ever took
 ‘ one Penny, directly or indirectly, for any Thing
 ‘ done in Parliament, or in any of their Committees;
 ‘ wherein he hath had the Honour to serve in some
 ‘ of the greatest Trust.

‘ And whereas he is charged to bring Sir Wil-
 ‘ liam Uvedale into the House upon his coming from
 ‘ York, for the Sum of 150 l. it is altogether false
 ‘ and scandalous. Upon Sir *William Uvedale*’s Re-
 ‘ turn from York, he came into the House, and sat
 ‘ there without any Question; some Time after,
 ‘ he had Leave to retire himself into the Coun-
 ‘ try; and at his Return to *London*, near two Years
 ‘ after, the Dispute grew about his Admittance
 ‘ into the House; and he was admitted into it
 ‘ upon a solemn and serious Debate, without the
 ‘ Motion or Procurement of Mr. *Nicholl*; which
 ‘ Admission, if undue, is a Charge against the whole
 ‘ House, not Mr. *Nicholl*. True it is, that when
 ‘ Sir *William Uvedale* was at York, and Treasurer
 ‘ of the Army there, Mr. *Nicholl* (having an As-
 ‘ signment made him by his Brother Captain *Hum-
 phry Nicholl*, to receive an Arrear due to him for
 ‘ his Service in the North,) wrote to Sir *Wil-
 liam Uvedale* to send him that Money; where-
 ‘ upon Sir *William Uvedale*, when he came to *Lon-
 don*, sent him a Sum of Money as an Arrear due
 ‘ to his Brother; but whether so much as is speci-
 ‘ fied

“fied in the Article, he knows not, by reason his An. 23. Car. I.
“Papers and Accounts of that Business are not in 1647.
“Town. }
July.

“As for Mr. *Nicholl's* receiving of Rewards; he
“challenges all his Accusers, (many of them ha-
“ving had Occasion to use his poor Service) and
“all others, to prove him guilty of receiving the
“least Reward for any Thing done by him in dis-
“charging of his public Trust.

“And whereas it is charged, *That he discovered*
“*a Design for the searching of Greenwich-House;*
“he saith, That about Midnight, in *August*, as he
“takes it, 1642, there came an Officer, with some
“Soldiers to his Lodging, and brought with them
“a Warrant for him to sign for the searching of
“*Greenwich-House;* which Warrant he sign'd, and,
“by the same Officer, he sent three Lines, written
“on an open Paper, to a Noble Lady who lodged
“in the House, that she should not be frighted with
“the Coming of Soldiers in such an unseasonable
“Hour; which Lady was no Servant of the
“Queen's, but one who had given a clear De-
“monstration of her Affection to the Public, by a
“large voluntary Contribution upon the Proposi-
“tions of Money and Plate: So that he hopes this
“will not be thought a Fault to send an open Pa-
“per to a Person of that Quality, for such Purpose,
“by the same Officer that was to put the Design
“in Execution.

“As to the 23d, 24th, and 25th Articles, which
“waste themselves in a Scandal touching Mr. *Long*
“alone; for to a printed Imputation of *Cowardice,*
“*Covetousness,* and *Treachery,* where no particular
“Person appears to avouch the Truth, or give Sa-
“tisfaction for the Falshood, of such an Assertion,
“no better Name can be given; yet he, to give the
“World a Taste of what Truth they may expect
“in the rest, returns unto these three this Answer,
“That howbeit his Education had not much ac-
“quainted him with Military Employments before
“the late unhappy Wars, which he thinketh to
“be the Case of many who now reckon well of
“their

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

' their Abilities in that Profession; yet (through
 ' the Invitation of his Excellency the late Lord
 ' General the Earl of *Effex*, and the Committee
 ' for the Safety of the Kingdom, who thought it of
 ' some Importance at that Time to interest Persons
 ' of Estate and Relations, tho' not bred Soldiers,
 ' in that Employment) he did accept the Com-
 ' mand of a Troop of Horse under his Excellency,
 ' the greatest Part whereof were raised by himself
 ' and his Friends; and, in the Head of that Troop,
 ' he charged at *Edge-Hill*, in the Regiment then un-
 ' der the Command of Sir *William Balfour*, which
 ' was the first that brake into the Enemy; in
 ' which Charge he lost his Horse, and, being left
 ' dismounted, did yet, with his single Pistol in his
 ' Hand, give Quarter to several of the Enemy;
 ' and was then, by Capt. *Harcourt*, Quarter-
 ' Master of his Troop, remounted; continued out
 ' the Service of that Day and the next, and was
 ' one of the last Troops that brought away the
 ' Ammunition; a Thing haply not known to them
 ' who gave the Information for this Article, seeing
 ' it was the ill Hap of some Commanders that
 ' Day to make an over-hasty Retreat; and of some
 ' others, of no little Eminency now, never to come
 ' there; much less to charge, though they quartered
 ' very near the Field.

' When the unexpected Skirmish at *Brentford*
 ' happened, his Troop, as the greatest Part of the
 ' Army besides, was dispersed; but so soon as he
 ' could get it together, he went thither and stayed
 ' there till the Business was at an End: Shortly
 ' after, his Troop being to march towards *Bri-*
 ' *stol*, where some of his Fellow-Captains, whose
 ' Experience he thought as little as his own, re-
 ' ceived sudden and great Commands, he declined
 ' that Service under them, and intended to return
 ' to his other in the House of Commons; but some
 ' Disaffections and Backwardness to contribute to
 ' the Public Service appearing in some Persons of
 ' Quality in the County of *Effex*, he was, by
 ' Commission from his Excellency the Earl of *Es-*
 ' *sex*,

‘*sex*, commanded thither; and authorized, with
 ‘other Gentlemen of that and the Counties of
 ‘*Hertsford* and *Bedford*, to raise Horse, Arms, &c.
 ‘upon such as had not contributed; touching
 ‘which Employment, without drawing the Parti-
 ‘culars into a long Discourse, he saith, That he
 ‘acted nothing without the Concurrence of two
 ‘Gentlemen, at least, of his Fellow-Commissioners;
 ‘and thereof, and of what had been raised by them
 ‘for the Public Service under that Authority, he,
 ‘long before any Committee of Accounts was set-
 ‘tled, did publish the Particulars in Print; and
 ‘thereof did, immediately after that Committee was
 ‘settled, give and pass an Account upon Oath;
 ‘which Course had others taken, who have greater
 ‘Accounts than these, there would haply have
 ‘been less Room for this Accusation: The Plun-
 ‘dering and Oppression in the Article mentioned,
 ‘he reckons as odious as it is an untrue Sug-
 ‘gestion.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

‘As for Mr. *Thomas Manwood* in the Article
 ‘mentioned; he much doubteth whether there be
 ‘any such Man residing in the County of *Essex*;
 ‘sure he is that no Protection from the then Lord
 ‘General’s Excellency was disrespected by him;
 ‘and upon the best Enquiry Mr. *Long* can make,
 ‘the Person intended by Mr. *Thomas Manwood*
 ‘is no way eminent for his good Affection; and
 ‘what was done towards him was well warranted
 ‘by the Commission under which Mr. *Long* and
 ‘those other Gentlemen of that Country were em-
 ‘ployed; and nothing, by Countenance of that
 ‘Authority, was converted to Mr. *Long*’s private
 ‘Advantage: And so little hath the Humour of
 ‘Covetousness, with which the printed Articles
 ‘charge him, prevailed, that there will be nothing
 ‘found in his Accounts to be demanded for his
 ‘Colonel’s Pay; an Omission of which he dares
 ‘undertake to excuse them that are most willing
 ‘to accuse him.

‘The Damages sustained by Mr. *Long*, (not
 ‘pretended, but real) mentioned in the twenty-
 ‘fourth

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

fourth Article, to be the Inducement of that Favour conferred upon him by the Chancery-Office, were Under-Considerations; and, together with his four Years Imprisonment and Sufferance for his public Service in former Parliaments, weighed by the Wisdom of that House and his Capability to execute that Place, (usually discharged by able Deputies, as now it is) determined by that Judgment which he dares not, and thinks no Men or Company without these Walls ought, to dispute: And therefore to that Quarrel, more against both Houses than himself, he thinks himself bound to give, and believes no wise honest *Englishman* will expect, or well receive, any other Answer. This only he saith, That neither the Eminency nor Profit of the Office can surely be the Cause, that it only, of all the Offices and Benefits accepted from the Parliament by other Members, should be now subject to Observation, and made a Matter of Charge.

In Answer to the twenty-fifth, and perhaps, for the Weight of it, the last Article in that printed Paper; he saith, That if any Man hath, which is not known to him, seriously, or in scorn, used that scurrilous Phrase of *Parliament-Driver*, towards him, (by reason of his more than ordinary Diligence in persuading and pressing his Fellow Members of the Honourable House of Commons, according to their Trust and Duty, to remain in that House or return to it, when any Thing hath been in Debate; which, in his Apprehension and Conscience requir'd their Judgment, Wisdom, and Suffrage there) he is contented to own the Fact, and leave the Abuse to the Author: Any unlawful Carriage, in that Particular, without the House, he doth deny; his Demeanor within those Walls, in that or ought else, no Man without them ought to question or control, or he to give Account of. And, for a Close, he saith, That these his Accusers, who have, against Reason and Justice, driven so many Members out of the House at once, deserve the
Name

Name of Parliament-Drivers, or Parliament-Riders, much more than he who desired only to continue the Members within the House, according to his own and their Duty.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

To conclude : Upon the whole Matter we do say, That it is our Misfortune, not our Misdoings, that we stand in this Matter accused. Power may seize upon us and destroy us ; but not Justice, we mean, the Justice of Man, for and in respect of these pretended Crimes ; not the Justice of God, which we tremble at, and submit unto ; and see it reach unto us, for our Sins, this Cup of Persecution and Affliction by the Hands of Men, the Men of the World ; who are themselves but the Hand of God to correct his Children for their Good ; their Good in the End, though for the present it be grievous unto them ; and befalls them many Times occasionally, and in the Eye of Men, where they think themselves to be least deserving it, to make them examine themselves, and enquire where Man cannot come, into their own Hearts, to find out the true Cause which hath provoked their God to afflict them ; and so come to the Knowledge of those Evils and repent of them, which, otherwise, would have lain undiscovered, and, like a sleeping Serpent, awaken afterwards to do them a greater Mischief ; which is at present our Case, and we trust God will give us the Grace to make this Use of it : For certainly, upon the strictest Scrutiny of our Consciences, and Enquiry into our past Actions and Intentions, we cannot find we have deserved this Return from any that can pretend themselves to be Well-wishers to the Parliament and to the Peace of the Kingdom. We can speak it for a Truth, we are of those who are peaceable and faithful in *Israel* : We never sought great Things for ourselves : We have mourned for the Desolations of this Kingdom, of three Kingdoms : We have endeavoured our utmost, according to our several Talents, as it

hath

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

‘ hath pleased God to enable us in our several Places
 ‘ and Callings, as Members of the Parliament,
 ‘ as Members of the Commonwealth, to do all
 ‘ we could, to procure a Settlement in Church
 ‘ and State: We have desired a Peace; we have
 ‘ laboured for Peace, and, willingly, have never
 ‘ done the least Thing to keep it off: We have all
 ‘ of us taken the Covenant; we dare not say that
 ‘ we have kept it to God-ward so well as we
 ‘ should; but we will say, no Man can lay the
 ‘ Breach of any Part of it, as to the King, Parlia-
 ‘ ment, or Kingdom, to our Charge; nor, we hope
 ‘ ever shall. Nothing in this World have we
 ‘ more heartily desired, than to see a happy and
 ‘ firm Reconciliation between the King and his
 ‘ People; him on his Throne, them in their Liber-
 ‘ ties; both of them encompassed with Righteous-
 ‘ ness and Peace, and glorying in the Parliament,
 ‘ as the Foundation of both their Happiness.

‘ Yet how we are aspersed and misrepresented,
 ‘ by several Pamphlets and Papers concerning us,
 ‘ and by this printed Charge, let the World judge.
 ‘ We dare appeal even to the Consciences of our
 ‘ Accusers, if they would speak out; perhaps with
 ‘ some it is in Truth our Crime, that they know
 ‘ us to be such as we are; perhaps we stand in the
 ‘ Way, and prevent some destructive Designs,
 ‘ therefore we must be removed; and that we may
 ‘ so be, we must be represented to be Hinderers
 ‘ of Peace, Obstructors of Justice, Invaders of the
 ‘ Liberty and Freedom of the Subject, Abusers
 ‘ and Misleaders of the Parliament: In Sum, what-
 ‘ soever is amiss in the Kingdom, we are made
 ‘ the Cause, and must bear the Blame of it.

‘ *Christianos ad Ignem*: What public Calamity
 ‘ soever befell in the Time of the primitive Perse-
 ‘ cutions, the poor Christians were said to be the
 ‘ Cause, and must be the expiatory Sacrifice: But
 ‘ let Men say what they will, *Eliab* was never the
 ‘ more the Troubler of *Israel*, because he was so
 ‘ called.

‘ We

‘ We will say with *Job*, *Our Witness is in Heaven*, and our Reward is on High: This is our Comfort and our Confidence; we shall be acquitted before the Tribunal of Heaven; and we trust in the Divine Protection to have our Deliverance and Justification, even here upon Earth, by the Judgment of Man; that is, by the Justice of the Parliament, notwithstanding the Malice of all our Enemies.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
July.

DENZIL HOLLES, EDWARD MASSEY,
PHILIP STAPYLTON, JOHN GLYNNE,
WILLIAM LEWIS, WALTER LONG,
JOHN CLOTWORTHY, EDWARD HARLEY,
WILLIAM WALLER, ANTHONY NICHOLL,
JOHN MAYNARD,

Members of the Honourable House of Commons.

July 20. Other Letters and Papers came to the Lords, from their Commissioners residing with the Army, which were read as follows:

Reading, July 19, 1647.

May it please your Lordship,

‘ WE made a Dispatch unto you last Night very late, by the Post, and gave you then a general Account of our Proceedings. And, after the reading of the Proposals mentioned in that Dispatch, had some Papers brought unto us by Sir *Hardress Waller* and other Officers, containing some Desires of the Army, in order to their present Security; which Papers, before they were transcribed, were sent for back again. We expect the Return of them this Day, and shall thereupon transmit them to your Lordship with all Speed. In the mean Time it was held fit to desire the Lord *Wharton* to come up to you, for your more perfect Knowledge in any Thing that may relate to our former Dispatches; and that nothing may be wanting on our Parts, in Discharge of the Trust reposed in us. I am

A Letter from the Parliament's Commissioners, inclosing further Proposals from the Army.

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

NOTTINGHAM.

P. S.

An. 23. Car. 1. P. S. ' Since the Writing of this Letter the
 1647. ' inclosed Paper hath been brought unto us by
 { ' some of the Officers of the Army, which we
 July. ' held our Duty immediately to send to you.

The further PROPOSALS from the ARMY, mentioned in the foregoing Letter.

Reading, July 21, 1647.

I. ' **T**HAT there be an effectual Declaration forthwith published to the whole Kingdom, against the inviting, bringing, or coming in of any foreign Forces, under any Pretence whatsoever.

II. ' That the Army may be paid up equally with the Deserters thereof, according to the late Votes in Parliament; and that the Army may be forthwith put in a constant Course of Pay, that they may not be so burdensome and oppressive to the Country; for the more speedy Performance whereof we desire that the House of Peers would be pleased to concur with the Desires of the House of Commons (so often proposed to them) for the reviving the Committee of the Army; that so the Assessments and great Sums in Arrears, both in the City and elsewhere, may be, by their Endeavours, collected for the speedy and necessary Supply of the Army; and also that the Treasurers, and the Committee at *Weavers-Hall*, may be speedily called to Account in what Manner, and by what Warrants, the 230,000*l.* lately intrusted in their Hands, have been in so short a Time consumed.

III. ' That the Militia of the City of *London*, and the Committee of the same, may consist of such Persons, and speedily be returned into those Hands, who formerly, during the worst of Times, have therein given large Testimonies of their Fidelity to the Parliament and Kingdom; which, beside the real Security it will be to the Parliament and Kingdom, in preventing of Dangers re-preparing towards a new War, would conduce so much

much to the removing of Jealousies, and give
such Ground of Confidence to the Army as that
we might the better dispose of it to larger Quar-
ters, in several Parts, for the Ease of the Country.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
July.

IV. According to, and in pursuance of, the
Particulars mentioned under the fifth Head of
the Representation of the Army, we do earnestly
desire that all Persons imprisoned in *England* or
Dominion of *Wales*, not for Delinquency in re-
lation to the late War, but for other Misdemean-
ors, and whose Imprisonment is not by the regu-
lated Course of Law, but by Order of either
House of Parliament, or of Committees flowing
from them, may be put into a speedy, equitable,
and regular Way of Trial; or if the Necessity
of the settling the general Affairs of the Kingdom
admit not their present Trial, then that they may
have present Liberty, upon reasonable Security for
their Appearance at a certain Day to answer what
shall be charged against them in a legal Way;
and that when they shall be tried, if they appear
wrongfully or unduly imprisoned, they may have
Reparation according to their Sufferings.

In particular we desire this may be done in
Behalf of Lieutenant-Colonel *John Lilburne*,
Mr. Overton, and others in their Condition,
imprisoned in and about *London*.*

By the Appointment of his Excellency Sir Tho-
mas Fairfax and the Council of War,

JOHN RUSHWORTH.

A Copy of the foregoing Proposals from the Ar-
my was also sent by them to the City of *London*.

The Commons having passed a Vote, on a Divi-
sion of 76 against 39, for putting all the Land
Forces in *England*, *Wales*, and the Isles, under the
immediate Command of Sir *Thomas Fairfax*;
the Lords this Day agreed to it.

The same Day the Commons gave Leave, by
separate Votes, to each of the Eleven Members,

VOL. XVI.

L

ac-

* These were Anabaptists, who had been committed by the
Parliament for exercising of their Religion.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

July.

The Commons
give Leave to the
Eleven impeach-
ed Members to
be absent six
Months.

accused by the Army, to follow his own Occasions; and to as many as desired to go beyond the Seas the Speaker was ordered to give Passes; the Time of the said Leave not to exceed six Months.

The Motives to these Resolutions of the Commons we find thus set down by Lord *Holles* himself, one of the then impeached Members:

‘These Gentlemen thought it best, rather than a Breach should be made upon their Occasion, that through their Sides the Parliament should be stuck to the very Heart, and die for ever, to make it their own Act of forbearing the House: And therefore they told the House, they saw they were in that Condition they could neither protect them nor themselves; that if they would not do as *Achish* did to *David*, who bid him be gone because the Princes of the *Philistines* loved him not; yet that they would, at their humble Suit and Desire, be pleased to give them Leave to withdraw; and to such as desired it, Passes to go beyond the Sea; which at last they did agree to, tho’ truly I must say, unwillingly; but which, all said, they look’d upon as a good Service done to the House for preventing greater Inconveniences.’

His Lordship then proceeds to a particular Vindication of the Eleven Members, and recriminates the Charge upon their Accusers^d. To recite the whole would be too long for our Purpose, we shall therefore pass it over with a Reference; and the rather, because the Answer of these Members to the Charge against them, as presented in Form to the House, is already given at large.

July 22. This Day a Resolution of both Houses was passed, which was in some Sort an Answer to the last Remonstrance from the Army. It was debated in the House of Commons, and carried by a Majority of 80 against 68; viz.

Resolved, &c. ‘That they do declare that there appears not to them any Cause for drawing, calling, or inviting any Forces into this Kingdom,
and

^d *Memoirs*, p. 124 to 141.

Of ENGLAND. 163

and that they do not intend any such Thing: And do further declare, That such Person or Persons, who shall endeavour to invite, call, or draw in any Forces into this Kingdom, without the Authority of both Houses of Parliament, are Traitors, and shall suffer Punishment as Traitors to the Kingdom.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
July.

July 23. This Day an Ordinance passed both Houses for the London Militia to return into the old Commissioners Hands, according to the Desire of the Army. This was also strongly debated in the lower House, but, on the Question, passed by 77 against 46.

An Ordinance
for changing the
Commissioners
of the London
Militia, at the
Desire of the Ar-
my.

July 24. A Message was brought from the House of Commons to acquaint the Lords with a printed Paper which was delivered to them in Form of a Petition; but, in the Nature of it, is a Covenant made by some Persons, who endeavour to effect Things prejudicial to the Parliament: That the Commons had drawn up their Sense of this Business, and desired their Lordships Concurrence. The Petition was read.^a

To the Right Honourable the LORD MAYOR, the Right Worshipful the ALDERMEN, and COMMON COUNCIL of the City of London, in the Common or Guildhall of the City of London assembled,

THE HUMBLE PETITION of the Citizens, Commanders, Officers, and Soldiers of the Trained Bands and Auxiliaries; the young Men and Apprentices of the Cities of London and Westminster; Sea-Commanders, Seamen and Watermen; together with divers other Commanders, Officers, and Soldiers within the Line of Communication and Parishes mention'd in the weekly Bills of Mortality, Sheweth,

A Petition of the
Trained Bands,
Apprentices,
Mariners, and
Soldiers, to the
Lord Mayor, &c.
for the King's
coming to Lon-
don.

THAT your Petitioners taking into serious Consideration how Religion, his Majesty's Honour and Safety, the Privileges of Parliament,

L 2 and

^a From the original Edition, printed by Robert Ibbetson.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

July.

and Liberties of the Subject, are at present greatly endangered, and likely to be destroyed; and also sadly weighing with ourselves what Means might likely prove the most effectual to procure a firm and lasting Peace, without further Effusion of Christian *English* Blood; have therefore entered into a solemn Engagement, which is hereunto annexed; and do humbly and earnestly desire that this whole City may join together, by all lawful possible Means, as one Man, in hearty Endeavours for his Majesty's present coming up to his two Houses of Parliament with Honour, Safety, and Freedom, and that without the nearer Approach of the Army; there to confirm such Things as he hath granted in his Message of the 12th of May last, in Answer to the Propositions of both Kingdoms: And that by a Personal Treaty with his two Houses of Parliament, and the Commissioners of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, such Things as yet are in Difference may be speedily settled, and a firm and lasting Peace established: All which we desire may be presented to both Houses of Parliament from this Honourable Assembly.

And we shall pray, &c.

The Paper annexed to the foregoing Petition stands thus in the *Commons Journals*: But the Petition itself is not entered there.

A SOLEMN ENGAGEMENT of the Citizens, Commanders, Officers, and Soldiers of the Trained Bands and Auxiliaries; the young Men and Apprentices of the Cities of London and Westminster; Sea-Commanders, Seamen and Watermen; together with divers other Commanders, Officers, and Soldiers within the Lines of Communication, and Parishes mentioned in the weekly Bills of Mortality.

And their Engagement for that Purpose.

Whereas we have entered into a Solemn League and Covenant, for Reformation and Defence of Religion, the Honour and Happiness of the King, and the Peace and Safety of the

the three Kingdoms of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*; all which we do evidently perceive not only to be endangered, but ready to be destroyed: We do therefore, in pursuance of our said Covenant, Oath of Allegiance, Oath of every Freeman of the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and Protestation, solemnly engage ourselves, and vow unto Almighty God, that we will, to the utmost of our Power, cordially endeavour that his Majesty may speedily come to his two Houses of Parliament with Honour, Safety, and Freedom, and that without the nearer Approach of the Army; there to confirm such Things as he hath granted in his Message of the 12th of *May* last, in Answer to the Propositions of both Kingdoms; and that, by a Personal Treaty with his two Houses of Parliament, and the Commissioners of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, such Things as are yet in Difference may be speedily settled, and a firm and lasting Peace established.

For effecting whereof, we do protest and oblige ourselves, as in the Presence of God, the Searcher of all Hearts, with our Lives and Fortunes, to endeavour what in us lies, to preserve and defend his Majesty's Royal Person and Authority, the Privileges of Parliament, and Liberties of the Subject, in their full and constant Freedom; the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, Lines of Communication, and Parishes mentioned in the weekly Bills of Mortality, and all others that shall adhere with us to the said Covenant, Oath of Allegiance, Oath of every Freeman of *London* and *Westminster*, and Protestation: Nor shall we, by any Means, admit, suffer or endure, any kind of Neutrality in this common Cause of God, the King, and Kingdoms, as we do expect the Blessing of Almighty God, whose Help we crave, and wholly devolve ourselves upon, in this our Undertaking.

A Deposition or two were then taken by the Lords, which testified that many Officers and

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

July.

young Men were seen going into *Skinner's-Hall* to sign this Petition: That very many Copies were sent abroad, whereby it was supposed they might get many Thousands to under-write it in a very short Time: On which the Commons had sent up the following Declaration, which was read and agreed to by the Lords; and sent with an Order to the Lord Mayor and Sheriffs, to be forthwith read and published, by Beat of Drum and Sound of Trumpet, in the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and within the Lines of Communication; and afterwards to be sent all over the Kingdom.

The Parliament
declare all such
Persons as shall
join therein, to
be Traitors.

THE Lords and Commons having seen a printed Paper, intituled, *A Petition to the Right Honourable the Lord Mayor, the Right Worshipful the Aldermen, and Commons of the City of London, in the Common or Guildhall of the City of London, assembled, under the Name of divers Citizens, Commanders, Officers, and Soldiers of the Train'd Bands, Auxiliaries and others; young Men and Apprentices; Sea-Commanders, Seamen, and Watermen; together with a dangerous Engagement of the same Persons, by Oath and Vow, concerning the King's present Coming to the Parliament, upon Terms far different from those which both Houses, after mature Deliberation, have declared to be necessary for the Good and Safety of this Kingdom; casting Reflections upon the Proceedings both of the Parliament and Army, and tending to the embroiling the Kingdom in a new War: And the said Lords and Commons taking Notice of great Endeavours used, by divers ill-affected Persons, to procure Subscriptions thereunto, whereby well-meaning People may be misled; do therefore declare, That whosoever, after Publication or Notice hereof, shall proceed in, or promote, or set his Name to, or give Consent that his Name be set unto, or any Way join in the said Engagement, shall be deemed and adjudged guilty of High Treason, and shall forfeit Life and Estate*

‘Estate as in Cafes of High Treason is accus- An. 23. Car. 1.
‘tomed.’ 1647.

The Commons ordered a Company of Foot and
a Troop of Horse to attend their House the next
Day as a Guard.

The same Day a Letter from the Commissioners
in the Army, with divers Papers inclosed, was
read in the House of Lords.

For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.

Aylesbury, July 23, 1647,

May it please your Lordship, Nine at Night.

‘Y’Esterday the Head-quarters were removed
‘unto this Place, and are To-morrow to be
‘at Bedford. Since our last Dispatch unto you,
‘we have observed that the Army hath been in
‘very frequent Consultations about the expediting
‘the Particulars which they have to propound, in
‘reference to a general Settlement; and therein,
‘as we hear, have made some Progress; but, since
‘their Coming to this Town, they have received
‘Information, which they give good Credit unto,
‘of some dangerous Contrivance set on Foot in the
‘City of London, under Pretence of a Petition and
‘Solemn Engagement of the Citizens, Command-
‘ers, Officers and Soldiers of the Train’d Bands;
‘the Auxiliaries; the young Men and Apprentices
‘of the Cities of London and Westminster; Sea-
‘Commanders, Seamen, and Watermen; together
‘with divers other Commanders, Officers, and
‘Soldiers within the Lines of Communication;
‘tending very much, as is conceived by the Army,
‘to the kindling of a new War; and thereupon
‘they have thought fit to deliver in one Paper unto
‘us, and another unto the Committee of Com-
‘mon Council residing here; the Copies of both
‘which, together with the Petition and Engage-
‘ment itself, and the Information they have recei-
‘ved.

A Letter from
their Commis-
sioners in the
Army, with se-
veral Papers re-
lating to the
foregoing En-
gagement.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

July.

ved of the same, we held it our Duty immediately to send unto your Lordship, being very apprehensive of the ill Effects that Things of this Nature may produce in the Minds of the Army, if not timely prevented and remedied by the Wisdom of Parliament; of this the Committee of the Common Council residing here are so sensible, that they are gone up with all Speed to London to give the City a clear Representation of these Affairs, and what Operation it is like to have here. We have no more to add, but that we are

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

C. NOTTINGHAM.
P. WHARTON.

Next were read Copies of the two Papers mentioned in the foregoing Letter: And first

The PAPER delivered to the COMMISSIONERS of PARLIAMENT from the General and his Council of War.

Aylesbury, July 23, 1647.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

WE received this inclosed Paper the last Night, from the Hands of a very well-affected Citizen: It was delivered him by an Officer of the City Militia, who, being invited to meet some Citizens at *Skinners-Hall*, upon *Wednesday* last, with divers others, to sign the same, and offering to dispute against the Matter of it, and to shew how dangerous and illegal it was, was silenced; and told that it was not to be disputed, but to be signed and joined in, there being divers Citizens and others, at the same Place for that Purpose; which, when he understood, he took this printed Copy away with him.

By the Contents of which, when you read it, you will easily perceive what it tends to, and how desperate and dangerous it is, to the Hazard of the whole Kingdom, and to frustrate all those

En-

Endeavours of the Parliament, the Army, and Kingdom, for an happy Settlement; and likewise to precipitate all into a new and bloody War. We cannot therefore but acquaint you that we took on this as a Business set on Foot by the Malice of some desperately-minded Men; this being their last Engine for the putting all into Confusion, when they could not accomplish their wicked Ends by other Means.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 July.

To this End have all secret Listings tended; and we wish that needless and superfluous Listing of Auxiliaries, and Connivance at the Continuance of the Reformadoes about the Cities of London and Westminster, have not all had the same Aim. And by this we hope it will appear, that our Jealousies and Fears of some such desperate Design to be hatched in and about the City, considering the Temper of Men there, have not been groundless; nor our Desires to draw near the City of London with the Army, to disappoint and break all such Plots, and to free the Parliament from the Violence of them, have not been without just Cause: And we desire all indifferent Men to judge, whether our withdrawing from the City, in Obedience to the Parliament's Commands, was for theirs and the Kingdom's Security or not. We wonder that divers Men did calumniate at our marching so near the City, and put so bad Representations upon it, as that it tended to force the Parliament, or to plunder the City; seeing our doing so was to break that black Design which now begins to shew itself in its own Colours: Whereas indeed our Consciences witness with us that our Aims were clear and honest, tending to restore the Parliament unto its just Liberty, which was much abated in the Eyes of all the Kingdom; and no doubt by the Authors and Contrivers of this new Covenant and Engagement, some whereof have been so far from assisting to put the Reformadoes and other dangerous Persons out of the Lines, that now they are called in to join in this Conspiracy.

We

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

‘ We intreat you to give the Parliament a full Representation of these Things; which that you may do, we have sent you the Papers, together with such Informations as may give them an Opportunity to discover the Bottom of this Business. ‘ We were marching from *London*, when we received this Information, in Obedience to the Parliament, to give the City more Content, and to stop the Mouths of Slanderers. But if such Designs, so destructive to the Parliament and the Work in Hand, be suffered to go on; or that the Parliament be interrupted in the Freedom of their Debates and Proceedings, (as we hear within these few Days they were, by those that are invited to partake of this Confederacy) what must be the Consequence?

‘ We beg it of the Parliament, as they tender their own Safety, the Peace of the Kingdom, and preventing of a second War; as they would not have the Kingdom lose the Fruit and Benefit of all the Blood that hath been spilt, and Treasure that hath been spent in this Cause; that they would not suffer their Freedom and Liberty to be indangered by such Designs as these; they having an Army, which, by the Blessing of God, in spite of all that their and the Kingdom’s Enemies can do, will stand and fall with them; be firm, faithful, and obedient to them in all Things; and as ready to relieve *Ireland* when the Peace and Rights of this Kingdom are settled.

‘ We write not this to desire the Parliament to invite us to march up to them; we care not how great a Distance we are from *London*, if it be the Parliament’s Pleasure and consists with their Security, and the breaking off those Combinations which are hatched in the Bowels of that City.

‘ We are hastening our Proposals which are for the general Settlement, and which we are confident will satisfy all that love Peace and Truth: But we see plainly we need more to intend our own Security, than have Cause to expect to bring
‘ Things

Things to a happy Issue, by Treaty, while such Designs are on Foot. We pray you, therefore, that the Parliament would speedily and thoroughly enquire into, and break these Designs; wherein, as in all Things else, we shall be ready to serve them, as they shall judge it needful, and when they shall command us.

AN. 23. CAR. I.
1647.
July.

By the Appointment of his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax and the Council of War,

JO. RUSHWORTH, *Secretary.*

The PAPER sent from the GENERAL, &c. to the Committee of the Common-Council of London.

Aylesbury, July 23, 1647.

Gentlemen,

BY a printed Paper come to our Hands, a Copy whereof you receive herewith, you will still find, and clearly and evidently perceive, that some evil Spirits within the City of London, maliciously disaffected to the Peace of this Kingdom, do, secretly and maliciously, endeavour to bring about that Mischief upon the Kingdom, which we have so much feared, and by all our several Addresses to you sought to prevent; which indeed are of that dangerous Consequence as we can expect no other Issue from than the unavoidable engaging the Kingdom in a second War, if not timely and effectually prevented by your Wisdom and Diligence. We must further observe unto you, that whatsoever Design is intended in the aforesaid Paper is contrary to the Authority of Parliament, and in direct Opposition to the Proceedings of the Army; (which the two Houses have own'd as theirs, and approv'd of their Fidelity, by committing the Forces of the Kingdom of England, Dominion of Wales, and Islands of Guernsey and Jersey unto the General's Care and Command) and therefore cannot be effected but by Force of Arms against the Parliament and their Army; which, in all Probability, may involve

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

‘ involve the whole Kingdom in Blood, but must necessarily begin within your Bowels, and draw the Seat and State of War upon you and your City.

‘ Also we desire you would consider, whether we have not just Cause to suspect that an evil Party lurks within the City, ready to distemper it and the whole Kingdom, upon every Occasion; and whether it be probable such Persons desire an happy Close between the King and Parliament, (at least such as will be for the Kingdom’s Good) when they take upon them the Boldness to make new Offers to his Majesty, with solemn Engagements to make good the same, during the Time that the Parliament had given us Leave to make Tender of, and treat with their Commissioners about, those Things which tend to a general Settlement: And therefore we cannot but desire that you would take a speedy Course timely to suppress this great Evil, and to prevent all of this Nature for the future, by making Examples of some of those who have been active to carry on this Business.

‘ We have not had Time to enquire into Particulars, but shall give you only one Instance of a Meeting at *Skinner’s-Hall* concerning this Business; where some Persons have been very active, the Names of some of whom we have given to your Commissioners, and also the Names of other Citizens who will testify their Carriage there.

‘ Lastly, we cannot but desire you to concur with us in our Desires to the Parliament, to put the Militia into the Hands of those that had it before; without which we can have no Assurance that the City will be free from Designs of this Nature, nor can we expect to see a happy Close.’

Signed by Appointment of his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax and his Council of War,

JOHN RUSHWORTH, *Secretary.*

The Petition and Engagement mentioned in the two last Letters we have already given: But it may be necessary to observe that General *Fairfax* here—

hereupon issued an Order to the Chief Officers of his Army, to expunge the Names of all Cavaliers out of their Muster Rolls.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

July.

July 26. This Day the House of Commons seem, by their Journals, to have been in great Agitation: First, an Order was made that no Member should go out of the House without Leave. Then Sir Robert Pye was appointed to go to the House of Lords and desire them to sit a while. Next, the House being informed that divers young Men and Apprentices were at the Door to present a Petition, two Members were ordered to go out and receive it from them. But they, returning, acquainted the House that the young Men desired that some of themselves might be admitted to present it: Upon which they were called in and presented a Petition, styled, *The humble Desires of the Citizens, Commanders, Officers and Soldiers of the Train'd Bands and Auxiliaries; the young Men and Apprentices of the Cities of London and Westminster; Sea-Commanders, Seamen and Watermen; together with other Commanders, Officers and Soldiers, within the Lines of Communication and Bills of Mortality.* The Petitioners being withdrawn the Petition was read, but no further Notice taken of it: However, we may suppose they staid for an Answer; for, a while after, the House wanting to divide on a Question, they could not do it, by reason, as the *Journal* expresses, the Multitude and Tumult was so great at the Door of the House, which by no Persuasion they would quit, that the Lobby could not be clear'd for the Purpose.

Great Numbers
of Apprentices
assemble about
the House of
Commons in a
riotous Manner.

Mr. Whitlocke carries this Matter still higher than the *Journals*: He says, 'That the Apprentices, and many other rude Boys and mean Fellows amongst them, came into the House of Commons with their Hats on; kept the Door open, and called out as they stood, *vote, vote*; and adds, that in this arrogant Manner they stood till the Votes had passed for repealing the Ordinance for changing

An. 23. Car. 1. changing the Militia, and the Declaration of both Houses of the 24th.

1647.

July.

Before the above Petition was presented, another had been delivered to both Houses from the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, &c. of the City of London; to which were annexed two more that Court had received from the Citizens. These, with the *Humble Desires of the young Men, &c.* as before-mentioned, we here give altogether for better Connection: Observing only, that the latter, as it stands in the *Lords Journals*, (though introduced as it were in the Name of all the Inhabitants of London, Westminster, and their Suburbs) is sign'd only by six Persons, seemingly but of inferior Degree.

To the Honourable the House of COMMONS assembled in the High Court of Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons of the City of London in Common Council assembled,

Humbly sheweth,

Petitions for revoking the late Ordinance for changing the Commissioners of the London Militia.

THAT the Petitioners have, by an Ordinance of Parliament, dated the 23d present, taken Notice of the Pleasure of both Houses, for constituting a new Committee for the Militia of the City of London and the Liberties thereof, and of all other Places within the Lines of Communication and the weekly Bills of Mortality, and for determining a former Ordinance for the Militia of this City, &c. dated the 4th Day of May last; which being taken into serious Consideration, the Petitioners could not but first call to Mind, how far both Houses of Parliament had formerly honoured the City, when they first established the Committee for the Militia, and since enlarged or altered the same, to take the Sense of this Court before they finally resolved thereupon; which Confidence the Petitioners are not conscious to themselves to have forfeited. And

next

From the Original Edition, printed by Richard Cotes, Printer to the Honourable City of London, 1647.

next, being sensible, by two Petitions presented to this Court, (the Copies whereof are annexed, the one intituled, *The humble Petition of divers well-affected Citizens of the City of London*; and the other intituled, *The humble Petition of divers young Men, Citizens, and others, Apprentices of this City*;) what a general Distemper this sudden Change hath already made, and may further raise in this City; besides that hereby the City is for the present put out of all regular Posture of Defence:

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
July.

The Petitioners could not but return unto this Honourable House, and humbly and earnestly pray, That the Militia, which was established by Ordinance of the 4th of May last as aforesaid, and then ordered to continue for one whole Year, may be re-established, that so the present Fears and Distempers in the City may be dispersed and appeased; whereunto as the Petitioners humbly conceive this to be the only present safe Means, next under the mighty Hand of God, so they will not doubt but that the said Militia, as hitherto they have done, will, in all Things, perform their Duties according to their Trust.

And the Petitioners shall pray, &c.

To the Right Honourable the Lord Mayor, the Right Worshipful the Aldermen, and Commons of the City of London, in Common Council assembled,

The HUMBLE PETITION of divers well-affected Citizens of the City of London,

Sheweth,

THAT whereas we have lifted up our Hands to the High God, for the Reformation and Defence of Religion, his Majesty's just Power and Authority, the Liberties of the Subject and the Privileges of Parliament; and seriously considering the late Transactions to violate all these, and to weaken the Zeal and Forwardness of this City and this Honourable Court, in Maintenance of the

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

the same, by endeavouring to remove the present Militia, confirmed by Authority of a free Parliament for a Year, and made choice of by this Honourable Court :

In this Strait and Exigency we are bold, in all Humility, yet with all Earnestness, to pray, That this Honourable Court would sadly weigh the present Dangers : And as in former Times it hath been your Honour to be instrumental for the Preservation of this miserable and dying Kingdom, by the Interposition of your Courage, Power, and Wisdom in a Time of Need ; so you would not suffer it to be buried in perpetual Oblivion and Reproach, by yielding up that Militia, which, by the good Providence of God and the Authority of a free Parliament, hath been invested in your Hands ; the only visible Means, under God, we have now left for the Security of our Religion, Lives, and Liberties.

And we shall pray, &c.

To the Right Honourable the Lord Mayor, the Right Worshipful the Aldermen, and the Worshipful the Commons, in Common Council assembled,

The HUMBLE PETITION of divers young Men, Citizens and others, Apprentices of this Honourable City,

Humbly sheweth,

THAT your Petitioners being sadly affected with the Distractions of these Times, wherein divers discontented Persons, for the Advancement of their own Interests, labour to sow new Seeds of Division and Discord amongst us, whereby Incendiaries are encouraged ; the Well-affected discountenanced ; the Privileges of Parliament violated ; the public Worship of God slighted ; the Liberties and Properties of the faithful Subjects of this Kingdom, and especially of this City much endangered ; and the long-desired End of these Troubles (by his Majesty's gracious

cious Compliance with, and his safe and honourable Return to his Parliament) which we hoped was almost obtained, now retarded, and for present altogether frustrated; have presented their humble Petition to both Houses of Parliament, a Copy whereof is hereunto annexed, the which they have thought it their Duty likewise to tender unto this Honourable Court; being confident that, as their Desires, in these their humble Addressies, arise from no other Ends whatsoever, but the Glory of God and the Discharge of their Consciences, in pursuance of that Solemn League and Covenant which lies upon them, *to endeavour to their utmost, in their Places and Callings, to use all lawful Ways and Means, for the Maintenance of the just Rights and Privileges of Parliament, lately so much violated; the Preservation and Defence of his Majesty's Royal Person and Authority, together with the true Religion and Liberties of this Kingdom, and for the Discovery and bringing to condign Punishment all evil Instruments whatsoever,* which labour, by fomenting groundless Fears and Jealousies, to divide and make Parties amongst the People, thereby to retard the Settlement of Church and State; so we doubt not but this Honourable Court (who have been instrumental to invite us, both by Example and Persuasion, according to several Ordinances and Declarations of Parliament^a, to engage ourselves to the Prosecution of the said Ends, wherein you have already done very much, to your everlasting Praise and Commendation) will still, with all Reality, Constancy and undaunted Magnanimity, pursue the same; and likewise encourage all those that shall, according to their Duty, labour to promote the same Ends: Wherefore we humbly pray, That this Honourable Court would be pleased to use their utmost Endeavours, by their Addressies to the Parliament, and otherwise as

VOL. XVI. M they,

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
July.

^a Declaration to the Kingdom, July 15, 1643. An Ordinance for Sir Thomas Fairfax, July 15, 1644.
Notes in the Original Edition.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

‘ they, in their Wifdoms, fhall think fit, for the
 ‘ furthering of your Petitioners Defires, contained
 ‘ in the above-mentioned Petition.

‘ We cannot likewise but, with all Thankfulnefs,
 ‘ take Notice of what this Honourable City hath
 ‘ done, for the putting in Execution of feveral Or-
 ‘ dinances of Parliament^b, That none be put into
 ‘ any Place of Truft, either in Church or Com-
 ‘ monwealth, but fuch as have taken, and now
 ‘ ftand well-affected to the Covenant, to which
 ‘ we are confident that you will ftill adhere.

‘ And whereas there have been and ftill are
 ‘ feveral factious Perfons, who ftile themfelves the
 ‘ Well-affected of this City, (though unworthy
 ‘ of that Name) who labour to traduce the Actions
 ‘ thereof, thereby to bring an Odium upon it, and
 ‘ to lay it open to their Malice: A frefh Inftance
 ‘ whereof we have, in a late Petition, prefented to
 ‘ the Parliament, pretended to be the Petition of
 ‘ the young Men and Apprentices of this City; as
 ‘ likewise by a Petition pretended to be prefented
 ‘ to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, the which we are ready
 ‘ to produce, and refer the Confideration of them
 ‘ to this Honourable Court. And further pray,
 ‘ That as both the Militia of this City hath been
 ‘ legally chofen by this Honourable Court, accord-
 ‘ ing to Ordinance of Parliament, and the Com-
 ‘ mon Council legally chofen by the feveral Wards,
 ‘ according to the antient Custom of this City, you
 ‘ would be pleafed to retain the fame Power both
 ‘ Civil and Military in your own Hands.

‘ And that you would be pleafed (for the Pre-
 ‘ vention of the many imminent Dangers, to which
 ‘ this City may be liable, by reafon of thefe Di-
 ‘ ftractions) to take fuch effectual and fpeedy
 ‘ Courfe for the Safeguard and Defence thereof;
 ‘ that the Fear, either of any Mutiny within, or
 ‘ of any unwarrantable Power from abroad, may,
 ‘ in fome Meafure, be taken away; whereby Trade,
 ‘ the main Support of this City, now mightily im-
 ‘ paired,

^b Ordinance, *June* 27, 1643.—Ordinance, *Nov.* 30, 1643.—
 Ordinance, *Febr.* 2, 1643. *Notes in the Original Edition.*

‘paired, may be again revived; and the Franchises An. 23. Car. I.
 ‘and Liberties of this Honourable City, to which 1647.
 ‘we are the apparent Heirs, maintained and de- July.
 ‘fended.

‘And as your Petitioners are in Duty bound,
 ‘both by that Relation which they stand in to this
 ‘Honourable City, as also by that solemn Engage-
 ‘ment whereinto they have entered; so they will be
 ‘always ready to hazard their Lives for the De-
 ‘fence thereof, and not suffer themselves, directly
 ‘or indirectly, by any Terror or Persuasion, to be
 ‘drawn from their Duty herein.’

*The HUMBLE DESIRES of the Citizens, young
 Men, and Apprentices, of the City of London,
 presented to both the Honourable Houses of Par-
 liament, July 26, 1647.*

I. ‘IT is our humble Desire, in regard Religion, And also the late
 ‘our Lives, Liberties, and Estates are so Declaration a-
 ‘much endangered, and the Peace and Safety of gainst procuring
 ‘this City and Kingdom, that the pretended Or- of Petitions.
 ‘dinance for the Change of the Militia of the City
 ‘of London may be presently repealed before the
 ‘Rising of the Houses; and that former Ordinance
 ‘that was conferred for a Year^t, by a free Parlia-
 ‘ment, upon the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and
 ‘Common-Council, and by them legally chosen,
 ‘may be established: In which Regard we do con-
 ‘ceive that no Justice, though it run in never so
 ‘free a Channel, can lawfully dispossess them of
 ‘it, unless it shall appear to be abused, contrary
 ‘to the Trust reposed in them.

II. ‘It is likewise desired that the City of Lon-
 ‘don may immediately be vindicated against a late
 ‘pretended Declaration of both Houses, which
 ‘declares all those Traitors, and so to forfeit Life
 ‘and Estate, who shall, after Publication thereof,
 ‘act thereupon to get Subscriptions; and that the
 ‘said Declaration be now presently reversed and
 ‘cancelled.

M 2

III. ‘That

^t May 4, 1647.

An. 23. Car. 1,

1647.

July.

III. ' That both Houses of Parliament do presently make an Order, upon some special Penalty, for the calling in of all their Members of either House to discharge the Trust the Kingdom has reposed in them, especially the eleven late accused Members, against whom there has been nothing proved of their Accusation to this Day; that yet again we may be so happy as to enjoy the healing Influence of a full and free Parliament in these distracted Times.

' These Particulars we cannot but insist upon, since the Distractions amongst us begin to grow so high; and the Honour and Privileges of Parliament, the Peace and Safety of the City and Kingdom, are so greatly violated.'

We have already given Mr. *Whitlock's* Account of the Circumstances attending the Presentment of the last recited Petition from the Apprentices, &c. To which Mr. *Ludlow's* (who was present in the House at that Time) will be a proper Supplement. This Memorialist (after giving a very particular Account of what had passed at several fruitless private Interviews between the King and some principal Officers in the Army) writes thus: ' The King having bid Defiance to the Proposals from the Army, thought it necessary to bend all his Force against them, and especially to strengthen their Enemies in the Parliament. To this End a Petition was contrived to press them to a speedy Agreement with the King, and presented in a most tumultuous Manner by great Numbers of Apprentices and Rabble, back'd and encouraged by many dismissed and disaffected Officers who joined with them.

' Whilst the two Houses were in Debate what Answer to give to this insolent Multitude, some of them getting to the Windows of the House of Lords, threw Stones in upon them; and threatened them with worse Usage, unless they gave them

an

² *Memoirs*, Vol. I. p. 195. to 205. See also Lord *Clarendon*, Vol. V. p. 53. et seq.

an Answer to their liking: Others knocked at the Door of the House of Commons, requiring to be admitted; but some of us with our Swords forced them to retire for the present; and the House resolved to rise without giving any Answer, judging it below them to do any Thing by Compulsion. Whereupon the Speaker went out of the House, but, being in the Lobby, was forced back into the Chair by the Violence of the insolent Rabble; whereof above a thousand attended without Doors, and about forty or fifty were got into the House, so that it was thought convenient to give Way to their Rage; and the Speaker demanding, What Question they desired to be put? They answered, 'That the King should be desired to come to London forthwith;' which Question being put, they were asked again, What further they would have? They said, 'That he should be invited to come with Honour, Freedom, and Safety;' to both which I gave a loud Negative, and some of the Members as loud an Affirmative rather out of a prudential Compliance than an Affection to the Design on Foot.

'By these Votes, and the coming down of divers well-affected Citizens to appease them, the Tumult was somewhat allayed; and the Members of Parliament, with their Speaker, passed through the Multitude safely.'

However both Houses were so heartily frightened at being thus insulted and menaced, within their own Walls, that they instantly passed an Ordinance for revoking and making void their Declaration of *July 24*, whereby all Persons who should endeavour to get Subscriptions to any Petition were declared Traitors; and another for annulling the Declaration of the *23d* concerning the Militia; whereby the Ordinance of the *4th of May* last was restored to its former Force and Effect. And both these Revocations were also ordered to be forthwith printed and published.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
July.

Both which the Mob of London Apprentices, &c. force the Parliament to repeal.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

July.

The same Day, *July 26*, the following Letter from the Parliament's Commissioners residing with the Army, was read in both Houses: But it is entered in the *Journals* of the Lords only.

*To the Rt. Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of PEERS pro Tempore,*

*Bedford, July 25, 1647,
Twelve at Night.*

May it please your Lordship,

A Letter from
the Commission-
ers with the Ar-
my.

WE came hither last Night, and this Day we received the Declaration of both Houses against the late Petition and Engagement, as also the Ordinance of the 23d for Change of the Militia of *London*, with an additional Power from both Houses for ourselves, concerning the Garrisons and Forces of *England*, and for Relief of *Ireland*; with all which we acquainted the General.

Late this Evening we had Notice given us by Lieutenant-General *Cromwell*, Sir *Hardress Waller*, Col. *Hammond*, and Col. *Rich*, in the Name of his Excellency, of the good Resentment which the General and his Officers had of what the Houses have been pleased to do towards Satisfaction of their last Desires; and in particular of the Sense which the Parliament hath expressed against the last Petition and Engagement, together with the owning of the Army: In all which they declare themselves to have received much Satisfaction. And because they observe the Expectation of the Parliament is very great upon a speedy Relief of *Ireland*, and the sudden Dispatch of their remaining Desires in order to a general Settlement; they did further acquaint us from the General, That as to the first of them, they will be ready To-morrow to consider with us about it, and endeavour to promote that Service to the utmost of their Power; and as to the latter, they believe they shall be ready to deliver them in unto us by *Wednesday* or *Thursday* next, or sooner if they

‘ they can, and to treat upon the same with us; An. 23. Car. I. 1647.
 ‘ which when they do, your Lordship shall receive
 ‘ frequent Advertisement from,

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

C. NOTTINGHAM.

Upon the great and momentous Turn of Affairs this Day, the Lords ordered that all their Members should have Notice to attend the House peremptorily, on *Friday* the 30th, in the Morning, at ten o'Clock; notwithstanding any former Leave granted to be absent: But that the Commissioners appointed to attend the King's Person might have Leave to follow their own Occasions; so as any three of them, one to be a Peer, do take their Turns in that Service, as they shall agree amongst themselves.

The next Day, *July 27*, both Houses met, but did no Business, and only adjourned to the 30th.

On which Day the Members assembled, but neither of their Speakers attended. After much Time spent in Expectation of them, the House of Lords proceeded to chuse the Lord *Willoughby of Parham* in the room of the Earl of *Manchester*: The Commons chose *Henry Pelham*, Esq; a Counsellor of *Lincoln's Inn*, to be their Speaker; and we find, by the *Lords Journals*, that he was presented to that House for their Approbation; on which he made a short Speech to this Effect:

Both the Speakers having left the Houses on account of the late Tumults, the two others are chosen.

‘ That the Knights, Citizens and Burgeses, being in present Want of a Speaker, had made Choice of so bad a one as himself, and had commanded him to acquaint their Lordships with such their bad Choice.’ To which the Speaker of the House of Lords returned this Answer, ‘ That their House very well approved the Choice which the Commons had made; he being a Person of such Abilities, Integrity, and Faithfulness to the Parliament.’ After which the Commons returned, with their

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

their Speaker, to their own House: But their Proceedings, in this extraordinary Affair, will best appear by the following Extract from their Journals:

Die Veneris, July 30, 1647.

‘According to the former Order of Adjournment on *Tuesday* last, divers Members of the House met, the Speaker being absent: After long Expectations, that Day, about Noon, the Members present desired Sir *Walter Erle*, Sir *Robert Pye*, Mr. *Gawen*, and Mr. *Knightly*, to repair to the Speaker’s House; to give him Notice of the Meeting of the House, and of the Time of the Day, and to desire his Attendance.

‘Return was made about an Hour after, by these Gentlemen, That Mr. Speaker was not to be heard of: That he had not lodged at his own House that Night; but was gone out of Town Yesterday Morning.

‘Thereupon a Debate fell out, of the Continuance of the House, and the Power of the House to elect their Speaker, and the Necessity of making a Choice without Delay.

‘Two Ministers were sent for to the Assembly; and after Prayers, Mr. *Henry Pelham* was nominated Speaker, and called to the Chair, by a general Approbation.

‘Mr. *Pelham* first, in his Place, excused himself for his Inabilities for so great a Charge, which would not be admitted.

‘Sir *Anthony Irby* and Mr. *Richard Lee* went to the Place where Mr. *Pelham* sat; and, according to Custom, took him by each Arm, and conducted him and placed him in the Chair.

‘Here again he made his earnest Excuses, which not being admitted, he submitted to the Commands of the House.’

The same Day several more Letters, &c. from the Commissioners in the Army were read in the House of Lords; addressed to their Speaker:

‘We

Bedford, July 29, 1647. An. 23. Car. I.

May it please your Lordship,

1647.

July.

WE acquainted you by our last, that we were to meet with the Commissioners of the Army about the Relief of *Ireland*. We met accordingly on *Monday* last, and, after a serious Debate thereupon, we thought fit to deliver in to the Commissioners of the Army a Paper, containing the Result of our Desires upon that Debate had with them, a Copy of which we send you here inclosed.

More Letters concerning the Proceedings between the Parliament's Commissioners and those of the Army.

At this Meeting the Commissioners of the Army shewed very great Affection for expediting the Relief of *Ireland* as we desired, and promised to give us their particular Answer in Writing very speedily; but the unexpected News of *Monday's* Work at the Houses, and the several Rumours that hourly follow thereupon, have so altered the Frame of Things here, that as yet we cannot receive their Answer as we expected: We find them now upon new Councils, having ordered the contracting their Quarters in relation to their March towards *London*.

This Day the Head-quarters remove to *Leighton-Beaudfert*, and, as we hear, some of the Army are to be To-morrow Night at *Uxbridge* or *Colebrook*; so we rest

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

C. NOTTINGHAM.
P. WHARTON.

The DESIRES of the PARLIAMENT'S COMMISSIONERS presented to those of the ARMY.

Bedford, July 26, 1647.

WHEREAS it hath pleased both Houses of Parliament to put all the Forces, within the Kingdom of *England* and Dominion of *Wales*, under the Command of his Excellency Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, not only in order to the Peace and Security

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

‘curity of this Kingdom, but for the Reducement
 ‘of *Ireland*: We, according to the Power lately
 ‘sent us from both Houses to treat with his Excel-
 ‘lency and the Commissioners of the Army for
 ‘the present Relief of that poor Kingdom, do de-
 ‘fire that you would take it speedily into your
 ‘Consideration; and that you would declare what
 ‘Number of Horse and Foot (the Security of this
 ‘Kingdom being provided for) you conceive may
 ‘be conveniently spared for the Service of *Ireland*.

‘And because we find, by our Debate with you
 ‘this Morning, it will be necessary to have a true
 ‘State of all the Forces and Garrisons within *Ire-*
 ‘land, as well as within this Kingdom, before that
 ‘great Work can be, in all Points conducing there-
 ‘unto, fully resolved upon: We do further desire,
 ‘(that no Time may be lost for the Service of
 ‘that Kingdom) an Answer to what is brought
 ‘down from the House of Commons by Sir *John*
 ‘*Temple*, concerning the Preservation of the Inte-
 ‘rest of the Parliament in the Province of *Leinster*,
 ‘and the Relief of our Forces there; and that you
 ‘would take into your speedy Consideration these
 ‘Propositions annexed, offered unto us by Sir *John*
 ‘*Temple* and Sir *Hardress Waller*.’

*By the Appointment of the Commissioners of the
 Parliament residing with the Army,*

GEORGE PYKE, Sec^r.

PROPOSITIONS made by Sir *John Temple* and
 Sir *Hardress Waller*, concerning the Relief of
Ireland.

I. ‘**T**HAT it would please his Excellency to
 ‘take Order that, towards providing of a
 ‘Train of Artillery, (which they exceedingly
 ‘want at *Dublin*, and deprives them of all Means
 ‘of doing Service) there may be sent unto the
 ‘Ports of *Bristol* and *Chester* four Pieces of Bat-
 ‘tery, eight Field-Pieces, one Mortar-Piece of the
 ‘largest

‘ largest Size, with Granadoes, to be presently transported over to *Dublin*. These, with their Carriages, to be taken out of the Garrisons of *Gloucester, Bristol, Chester, and Shrewsbury*. An. 25. Car. I.
1647.
July.

II. ‘ That to the 700 Horse which the Committee at *Derby-House* hath contracted for with Col. *Ponsonby*, there may be added 300 Horse more; and these presently dispatched away by express Orders from the General.

III. ‘ That the Regiment of Foot under the Command of Col. *Birch* may be compleated and sent away.

IV. ‘ That two Regiments of Foot, under good Officers, may be presently commanded away for the Service of *Dublin*. These Forces being dispatched, they doubt not but they will arrive Time enough not only to preserve the Interest of the Parliament in the Province of *Leinster*, untill a more considerable Army be sent over, but that they shall be able to enlarge their Quarters, and keep the Enemy at a further Distance.’

Another Letter from the Commissioners residing in the Army, addressed as the last.

Leighton-Beaudfert, July 29, 1647.

May it please your Lordship,

‘ **W**E gave you an Account from *Bedford*, this Day, of the Resolutions of the Army to march towards *London*; the Grounds whereof are now exprest by themselves, in a Letter which we have received from the General since we came to this Place, together with a Copy of his Excellency’s Letter sent upon this Occasion to the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common-Council of the City of *London*; the Copies of both which are here inclosed.

‘ The Head-quarters move from hence, as we hear, To-morrow to *Wickham*, or thereabouts, and

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

July.

and some of the Army will be nearer towards
London. Thus we rest

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

C. NOTTINGHAM.
P. WHARTON.

*COPY of the GENERAL's LETTER to the Com-
missioners of Parliament.*

Bedford, July 29, 1647.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

General Fairfax
resolves to march
with his whole
Army to London,
on account of
the late Force
put upon the
Members.

HAVING resolved upon this inclosed Dispatch
for the City of London, I thought it my
Part to send you an Account of it, and to give
you all Assurance that my Heart is deeply affected
with the late Carriages towards the Parliament;
and however others have neglected their Duty
towards them for their Security and Defence, yet
as God shall enable me, it shall be my Business
to improve all the Power that is in my Hand for
the preserving of them; and, in them, the Inte-
rest of this Nation: And what Construction so-
ever some formerly may have put upon the Pro-
ceedings of this Army, I trust the Lord shall, by
his good Hand, lead us into such Actions as shall
witness our End answerable to all our Professions,
to wit, the Good of the Kingdom; and there-
in to be an effectual Saving of the great and just
Authority of the Kingdom in the Parliament.

Your most assured Friend,

T. FAIRFAX.

*The GENERAL's LETTER to the City of London,
upon his Advance thither, with his Demands.*

Bedford, July 29, 1647.

My Lord and Gentlemen,

YOU may please to remember the forward
Compliance of this Army with your Desires
to remove to this Distance, and that upon the
As-

Assurance you gave them of your Concurrence
 with their declared Desires for the settling the
 Liberty and Peace of this Kingdom, (against
 which you never yet offered us one Exception,
 or any Ground of Dissent) as also of your great
 Tendernefs and Resolution to secure the Parlia-
 ment and their Privileges from any Violence or
 Attempt; the chief Reason given us of your late
 lifting of new Forces, and wherein we did most
 acquiesce: That, upon this Confidence, we had
 disposed of the Army into several Parts of the
 Kingdom, for the Ease of the whole, some of
 them to above one hundred Miles Distance; we
 had given up ourselves to the effecting such Pro-
 posals as might tend to the comfortable Settle-
 ment of this poor Kingdom; and we were in a
 hopeful Way for a speedy Relief of *Ireland*.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 July.

We cannot then but be deeply sensible of the
 unparallel'd Violation acted upon the Parliament
 on *Monday* last, by a Multitude from your City;
 because therein the Guard sent from the City did
 not only neglect their Duty for the Security of
 the Parliament from such Violence, and the
 whole City to yield any Relief to the Houses in
 that Extremity, but I am assured, from Eye and
 Ear Witnesses, that divers of the Common-Coun-
 cil gave great Encouragement to it; which doth
 not only gainsay your former Professions, but
 does Violence to those many Obligations that,
 by your Charter, Protestation, and sundry other
 Ways, laid upon you to protect the Parliament:
 For my Part, I cannot but look on you, who are
 in Authority, as accountable to the Kingdom for
 your present Interruption of that hopeful Way
 of Peace and Settlement Things were in for this
 Nation; and for relieving *Ireland*; occasioned by
 a late destructive Engagement, especially by the
 latter prodigious and horrid Force done upon the
 Parliament, tending to dissolve all Government;
 upon which Score we and the whole Kingdom
 shall have Cause to put every Thing of the like
 Nature, that may happen to the Parliament or

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

to any who are Friends to them and this Army;
 except, by your Wisdom, Care, and Industry,
 the chief Actors in the Premises may be detect-
 ed, secured, and given up; to the procuring of
 Justice for the same, and the best Endeavours
 used to prevent the like for the future. And so
 I rest

Your most assured Friend to serve you,

T. FAIRFAX.

Another Petition from the City of London was also this Day, July 30, presented to the House of Lords by the two Sheriffs, and was read as follows:

To the Right Honourable the LORDS assembled in the High Court of Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons of the City of London, in Common Council assembled.

The City of London petition the Parliament for Orders to stop his March.

After humbly acknowledging the great Favour of this Honourable House in re-estab-
 lishing the Militia of the City, according to their late Petition (whereby the Petitioners are confident the Distempers which they then feared are well allayed, and will be wholly appeased, if the Rumours of the Army's Advance towards the City do not again stir up the People); the Petitioners are not conscious to themselves of any Thing which hath proceeded from them, which may justly provoke the Army; and therefore will least of all believe that their late Insisting on the Militia of this City can be any Reason thereof; especially now that the Parliament hath declared themselves therein.

But whatever the Cause be, or whether the Army march this Way or not, yet that the City may have some Assurance, the Petitioners humbly pray this Honourable House speedily to dispatch their Pleasure to the Army, requiring it
 not

‘not to advance nearer the City than 30 Miles; An. 23. Car. I.
 ‘whereby, as many great Dangers will be avoid- 1647.
 ‘ed, and all Jealousies removed, so the Petitioners
 ‘do, in the Name of the City, hereby promise
 ‘that there shall be no Endeavour omitted on their
 ‘Part for the timely and safe guarding of the Par-
 ‘liament at all Times, and for the effectual sup-
 ‘pressing of all Violences and Tumults which
 ‘shall be raised under any Pretence whatsoever.

July.

And the Petitioners shall pray, &c.

MICHELL.

Next, the following Order, made by the Committee of the Militia, was read:

Guildhall, London, July 30, 1647.

‘**O**RDERED, That the Sheriffs of the Ci-
 ‘ty of London be desired, in case the Par-
 ‘liament sit, to acquaint the Houses with the Care
 ‘of this Committee to defend and preserve the
 ‘Parliament and this City in Safety; and that they,
 ‘seeing Danger approaching, intend to stop and
 ‘secure all Horses within the Lines of Commu-
 ‘nication and weekly Bills of Mortality, except
 ‘the Horses of Market-Folks, Carriers, and others
 ‘that bring Trade and Provisions to the City; and
 ‘further to do what shall be necessary for their
 ‘and the City’s Safety; and to desire the Advice
 ‘and Encouragement of both Houses in their Pro-
 ‘ceedings, and to confer such further Addition of
 ‘Power upon this Committee as they shall think
 ‘fit.’

The Lords, after Debate, gave the Citizens the following Answer:

‘That they returned them hearty Thanks for
 their continual Care of the Safety of the Parlia-
 ment, and did very well approve of the Order
 that the Militia of the City had lately taken;
 that the Lords will take the rest of their Particu-
 lars

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

July.

lars into speedy Consideration, and nothing shall be wanting, that in them lies, to give all Furtherance for the Preservation of the Parliament and City.

The Commons having prepared a Draught of a Letter to be sent to Sir *Thomas Fairfax* with an Order inclosed, the same were read this Day and agreed to by the Lords. The Letter runs thus :

S I R,

Both Houses
send him a Letter
for that Purpose.

THE Houses have this Day received from their Commissioners a Copy of your Letter to them, dated at *Bedford*, July 29, with a Copy of another Letter of the same Date, written to the City of *London* ; in both which, though there be no Account at all of the Motion of your Army, yet the Houses understand by the Letter from their Commissioners, in which the said Copies were inclosed, and otherwise, that you have given Orders for the marching of the Army towards *London*, upon Pretence of defending the Houses from the Danger of the Tumults.

Upon Consideration hereof the Houses have commanded us to let you know, that as they cannot but have a deep Sense of the undue Liberty which some Apprentices of the City of *London*, and others, from whom they might have expected more Obedience, have taken to themselves to violate the just Authority, Privileges and Freedom of Parliament, in which the Safety of the whole Kingdom is concerned ; so they doubt not but the Sense of so great an Offence will, at last, strike the Breasts of those that have been accessory thereunto with a Detestation of any Practices of the like Nature for the future : And as the Houses cannot imagine that the Disorders committed by some Apprentices, and those that mingled with them^m, had the Allowance of the City

^m Some of the Independents belonging to the Army, who were most busy among the unruly Multitude.

Hollis's Memoirs, p. 145, et 154.

City of London; so they have since received full Satisfaction, by the strict Orders given out by the Lord Mayor and Common-Council of the City, to all Masters to have Care of their Servants; and by their Declarations proclaimed in several Parts of the City, for the preventing and suppressing of Tumults, that they shall sit with much Freedom and Security from any Disturbance for the future.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
July.

Therefore the Houses, seeing no Cause to command that Army, or any Part thereof, to march up for their Defence; but rather judging, by the Distractions raised at the News thereof, that the Motions of the Army near the City is like to precipitate the City and Army into a desperate and bloody Engagement, not only to the Disturbance of the Parliament's Sitting, but also to the Destruction thereof, and of all Authority, by casting the whole Kingdom into Confusion: For Prevention thereof have sent you this inclosed Order, requiring you, as you tender the Freedom of Parliament, the Safety of the City and whole Kingdom, to give exact Obedience thereunto.

This being all we have in Command, we rest, &c.

The ORDER inclosed in the foregoing Letter.

Ordered by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, That the General be required not to advance with his Army, or any Part thereof, within 30 Miles of London; and in case the Army, or any Part thereof, be within 30 Miles, that they go back.

Notice being taken in the House of Lords, that the House of the Earls of Northumberland, Kent, Rutland, *Sa-* Lords require the Attendance of ram, Warwick, Denbigh, Manchester, Mulgrave, their absent Members: and Stamford; the Viscounts Hereford, and Say and Sele; the Lords De la War, Dacres, North, Grey, Roberts, Maynard, Howard, Herbert, and Bruce; had not attended according to the

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

July.

Order of the 26th Instant, it was ordered that they should have further Notice to attend the House peremptorily without Excuse, on the 31st, at Ten in the Morning, notwithstanding any former Leave granted to them, or any of them, to be absent; and that the House expected a ready Obedience to be given herein.

But they, with many of the Commons, and both the late Speakers, withdrew to the Army.

The Absence of these Peers, and the Members of the House of Commons, who had at this Time withdrawn themselves, with their respective Speakers, is thus accounted for by Mr. *Ludlow*:^d

‘The next Morning after the Tumult, I advised with Sir *Arthur Haselrig* and others what was fittest to be done in this Conjunction; and it was concluded that we could not sit in Parliament without apparent Hazard of our Lives, till we had a Guard for our Defence, it being manifestly the Design of the other Party either to drive us away, or to destroy us: Therefore we resolved to betake ourselves to the Army for Protection, Sir *Arthur Haselrig* undertaking to persuade the Speaker to go thither, to which he consented with some Difficulty; and having caused 1000 *l.* to be thrown into his Coach, went down to the Army, which lay then at *Windsor, Maidenhead, Colebrook*, and the adjacent Places. Having acquainted as many of our Friends as I could, with our Resolution to repair to the Army, I went down; and the next Day, being the same to which the Parliament had adjourned themselves, the Army rendezvouzed upon *Hounslow-Heath*; where those Members of Parliament, as well Lords as Commons, who could not with Safety stay at *Westminster*, appeared in the Head of them; at which the Army express’d great Joy, declaring themselves resolved to live and die with them. At Night the Earl of *Northumberland*, the Lord *Say*, the Lord *Wharton*, and other Lords; the Speaker and Members of the House of Commons aforesaid, with Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, and many principal Officers of the Army, met at *Sion-House* to

^d *Memoirs*, Vol. I. p. 207.

to consult what was most adviseable to do in that Juncture; which whilst they were doing, an Account was brought of the Proceedings of those at *Westminster* that Day, by the Serjeant of the House, who came with his Mace, to the no little Satisfaction of the Speaker.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
July.

But notwithstanding the great Joy express'd by the Army at the Presence of so many Members of both Houses amongst them, who, by imploring, as it were, their Protection and Defence, must add greatly to their Reputation; those at *Westminster*, being supported by the City of *London* and the whole Force of the Presbyterian Interest, seem'd to set their absent Brethren and the Army at Defiance: For, first, they voted, That the Order of the 20th of this Month for putting all the Land-Forces in the Pay of the Parliament under the Command of Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, did not extend to give him any Power over the Train'd Bands or Garrisons: That this Declaration should be published, by the Militia of the City of *London*, by Sound of Trumpet; and the same by the Sheriffs in their several respective Counties in *England*. The Commons recalled their Eleven Members, impeached by the Army, to sit and vote in the House. The Committee of Safety were ordered to grant Commissions to all such Commanders of Horse, Foot, and Dragoons, as they shall think fit, for the Service of the King, Kingdom, Parliament, City, and Safety thereof, according to the Power given them by an Ordinance of Parliament. The Master, Wardens, and Assistants of the *Trinity-House* were ordered to arm all the Mariners and Seamen they could get. Accordingly these and Numbers of Reformato Officers and Soldiers, &c. with the City Militia, muster'd in *St. James's-Fields*; the Command of all which was given to Major-General *Massey*, and the Horse to Sir *William Waller*.—Besides all this,

July 31, The House of Lords sent down to the Commons a Declaration concerning the King's

An. 23. Car. J. Coming to his Parliament, in which they desired
 1647. their Concurrence, *in hæc Verba* :

July.

Who desire the
 King to come to
 his Parliament.

‘Whereas the King hath been seized upon, and
 ‘carried away from *Holdenby*, without his Con-
 ‘sent, by a Party into the Army, where his Maje-
 ‘sty yet remaineth; the Lords and Commons in
 ‘Parliament assembled do desire that his Majesty
 ‘would be pleased immediately to come to his Par-
 ‘liament: And they do declare, that he shall be
 ‘there with Honour, Freedom, and Safety; and
 ‘that they, with the Commissioners of the King-
 ‘dom of *Scotland*, will make their Addresses
 ‘unto his Majesty for a safe and well-grounded
 ‘Peace.’

This Declaration being twice read by the Com-
 mons, was altered thus: After the Word *Consent*,
 they added, *or the Consent of the Houses of Parlia-
 ment*; and, instead of *to his Parliament*, to *such
 Place as both Houses of Parliament should appoint*;
 and then passed it, on the Question, 55 against 22.

The same Day Information being given to the
 House of Commons, that there was a Declaration
 of their late Speaker, (shewing the Grounds and
 Reasons which moved him to absent himself from
 attending the Service of that House on *Friday*)
 then printing at one *Symonds's* House in *Alder-
 gate-street*, which, as the Informer heard, would
 be very dangerous to the Parliament and City,
 the same was read; but we do not find any Thing
 further done upon it. As this Declaration sets
 forth, in a most particular Manner, what happened
 in the Tumult of the 26th; and is not printed in
Mr. Rushworth's Collections, or any of the other
 Contemporaries, we shall give it from the original
 Edition.

The late Speaker,
 Mr. Lenthall's,
 Reasons for lea-
 ving the House.

‘Although it may haply be contrary to the
 ‘Expectation of some, that I attend not the
 ‘Service of the House of Commons at this Time,

‘ 23

London, printed by M. S. [i. e. *Michael Symonds*] for George
Whittington, 1647.

as I have constantly done for almost seven Years An. 23. Car. I.
 last past; and yet can it not be reasonably ex- 1647.
 pected by any that well considers the Violence July.
 offered to both the Houses of Parliament, and
 to myself in particular, on *Monday*; in so much
 that I can safely take it upon my Conscience,
 and so I doubt not may all the Members of both
 Houses also, that they sat in continual Fear of
 their Lives; and, by Terror thereof, were com-
 pelled to pass such Votes as it pleased an unruly
 Multitude to force upon them; which, as I did
 then openly declare in the House, so I cannot but
 believe that they are void and null, being extort-
 ed by Force and Violence, and in that Manner
 that they were; and I cannot any longer dispense
 with myself to be an Instrument in passing such
 Votes, or to give any Colour or Shadow of Par-
 liamentary Authority unto them, which are not
 the Votes of the Representative Body of the
 Kingdom, but of a tumultuous Multitude; as
 those must needs be accounted that seemed to
 pass the House on *Monday* last; and which shall
 pass hereafter, untill better Provision be made for
 the safe and free Sitting of the Houses of Parlia-
 ment; there being no effectual Course taken by
 the City since the last Adjournment of the Houses
 to prevent the like Tumult for the future; no
 nor so much as a Declaration from them to shew
 their Dislike thereof: But, on the contrary, it is
 generally voiced in the Town that there will be a
 far greater Confluence of Apprentices, Reforma-
 does, and others on *Friday*, at the Parliament
 Doors; and, particularly, Notice was given to
 me, That after they had made the House vote
 what they pleased, they would destroy me. I
 had likewise Information given me, that there
 would be a great Number of Apprentices, of a
 contrary Opinion and Affections to the other,
 about the Parliament Doors on *Friday* Morning,
 which I foresaw must of Necessity cause a great
 Combustion, and, in all Probability, occasion
 much Bloodshed; the preventing of which Mis-

198 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

July.

‘ chiefs, together with the Consideration aforesaid,
‘ have weighed more with me than any Thing
‘ which may concern my own Particular; and espe-
‘ cially, having served the House faithfully and di-
‘ ligently for the Space of very near seven Years,
‘ in a free and parliamentary Way of Proceedings,
‘ that I might not now be made a Servant to such
‘ a Multitude to transfer upon them the Colour of
‘ Parliamentary Authority, therewithall to abuse
‘ and deceive the Minds, and to destroy the Lives,
‘ Liberties, and Estates of the People of this King-
‘ dom; and having taken a solemn Protestation
‘ and Covenant in my Place and Calling to main-
‘ tain the Privileges of Parliament, and the Rights
‘ and Liberties of the Subjects, I could not now
‘ satisfy myself but by absenting myself at this
‘ Time; rather than, by my Presence, to give any
‘ Shadow or Countenance of the Authority of Par-
‘ liament to such apparent Violations thereof:
‘ Neither can the Omission of a Circumstance or
‘ some Formality, in the Adjournment of the
‘ House (when, through Force and Violence, it
‘ cannot meet and sit in any Sort as a Parliament)
‘ be any Prejudice to the future Meeting and Pro-
‘ ceedings thereof, when it may meet and sit again
‘ as a free Parliament; it being well known that
‘ nothing can dissolve this Parliament but an Act
‘ of Parliament.

‘ When a Company of Apprentices, Reforma-
‘ does and others, shall call the Ordinances of Par-
‘ liament *pretended Ordinances*; shall lock the
‘ Doors of the Houses upon them; shall swear not
‘ to let them out till they had passed what they
‘ pleased concerning the Militia of *London* and
‘ other Things, though the Houses had immedi-
‘ ately before voted otherwise; shall threaten the
‘ Houses, in case they did not instantly satisfy their
‘ Demands; shall knock without, and hollow con-
‘ tinually at the Parliament Doors, that the Mem-
‘ bers could not be heard speak or debate; and af-
‘ ter that the House of Commons had passed a
‘ Vote concerning the Militia of *London*, and that
‘ the

the Speaker, by the Voice, had judged the major Part to be for the Negative, shall not suffer the House to be divided; but, in a threatening Way, require those that would have given their Votes against them to consent to them; if when after the House was adjourned, they shall, by main Force, thrust back the Speaker again into the House, and force the Members, in their Presence and Sight, (divers of them thrusting into the House) to vote what they demanded; when they shall jostle, pull, and hale the Speaker all the Way he went down to his Coach, and force him, to avoid their Violence, to betake himself to the next Coach he could get into for Refuge; when they shall breathe forth such bloody Threats against the Members as they come forth of the House, and, since, against me in particular, at the next Meeting of the House, as I am credibly inform'd; and when there is no Appearance but that they will continue to do as formerly they have done, or far worse, on Friday; I could not, in discharge of my Trust, Protestation, and Covenant, sit in the Chair of the House of Commons, whilst it shall be in such a Condition: But so soon as it may sit again in Freedom and Safety, I shall be ready to attend the Service thereof; but till then, as I have, upon the fore-mentioned Grounds, fully satisfied my own Conscience, so I doubt not but I shall give the whole Kingdom, whose Interest is most concerned in it, ample Satisfaction in the Necessity of my Absence.

WILL. LENTHALL, *Speaker.*

Notwithstanding the high Expressions of Resentment in the foregoing Declaration, we are informed by an Historian of these Times, and a Member of this Parliament, *Clement Walker, Esq;* That the Day after the Commons had

adjourn'd,

¹ *The History of Independency*, printed in 1643, under the Name of *Theodorus Perax*; but afterwards reprinted by *R. Royston*, in 1661, with the Author's own Name, and continued to the Restoration by another Hand.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

July.

Other Reasons
for it, as given
by the Contem-
porary Writers.

adjourn'd, being *Wednesday* the 28th, and the monthly Fast, the Speaker and Members met in *Westminster* Church; where the Speaker complain'd, in some Passion, to Sir *Ralph Ashton*, and other Members, of a scandalous Report rais'd on him in the City, as if he intended to desert the House, and fly to the Army, saying, *He scorn'd to do such a base, unjust, dishonourable Act; but would rather die in his House and Chair*: Which being spoken in a Time and Place of so much Reverence and Devotion, made many think his secret Retreat to the Army, the very next Day, proceeded not so much from his own Judgment, as from some strong Threats from *Cromwell* and *Ireton*, (who were the chief Contrivers of this desperate Plot to divide the City and Houses, and bring up the Army to enthrall them both) *That if he did not comply with their Desires, they would cause the Army to impeach him for cousing the State of many vast Sums of Money*. And truly I remember I have seen an intercepted Letter, sent about the Time of his Flight, from the Army to *William Lenthall*, Speaker, without any Name subscribed to it, only the two last Lines were of *John Rushworth's* Hand; earnestly importuning him to retire to the Army with his Friends.'

This last Circumstance of the intercepted Letter is confirmed by Lord *Holles*^m, who styles the Speaker's withdrawing himself a Conspiracy with the Army; design'd and laid principally by Mr. *Oliver St. John*, the Solicitor. He adds, That this Letter was remaining in one of the Houses: However, we do not find it in the *Journals* of either; the Want of which is easily accounted for by the Turn of Affairs that presently ensued in favour of the Army.

To these Observations of the Contemporaries we may add one of our own, That the Publisher of this Declaration of Mr. *Lenthall*, the Speaker, was also the Publisher of all the Remonstrances and Declarations of the Army when near *London*; and

^m *Memoirs*, p. 147.

Of ENGLAND. 201

and reprinted there all such as were originally printed at *Cambridge* and *Oxford*, when the Army rendezvouzed at *Newmarket* and *Reading*. — Thus much by way of Illustration of the extraordinary Proceedings which now hasten upon us.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
August.

August 1. Though both Houses sat this Day, being *Sunday*, yet nothing particular was done but what has been already mentioned. The next Day, a Letter from the *Scots* Commissioners was read in the House of Lords.

For the Right Honourable the SPEAKER of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.

Worcester-House, Aug. 1, 1647.

Right Honourable,

THE Committee of Estates of the Kingdom of *Scotland* having sent us frequent Directions since these late Commotions, to give them a true Account, from Time to Time, of his Majesty's Condition; in pursuance thereof we desired the Earl of *Lauderdale* to repair to his Majesty at *Wobourn*, where we expected that he should have been used with that Respect which is due to a Commissioner of the Parliament of *Scotland*: But we are herein extremely disappointed; for on *Saturday* Morning early, before his Lordship was out of his Bed, a great many Soldiers rush'd into his Chamber, and coming to his Bed-side, desired him speedily to be gone without Delay.

The Scots Commissioners complain of an Insult offered to the Earl of *Lauderdale*, &c. by the Army.

He represented to them his Employment: That he was there in the Capacity of a Commissioner of *Scotland*, to attend his Majesty: That he had resolved to go away that Morning; and intreated he might have the Liberty first to speak with his Majesty, which they would not grant; but violently insisted, that what they demanded might forthwith be put in Execution, and would not hearken to any Reason he offered unto them: Telling him it was past Dispute; it was resolved upon; what they did herein would be owned by the

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
August.

the Army, and they would maintain it; with other Expressions of this Kind. We do acknowledge the Civility of the Commissioners of both Houses, who acted their Parts in dissuading them from so unwarrantable an Action: And one of the Commissioners, in particular, represented unto them the Danger thereof; acquainting them, that he had been an Ambassador abroad, and did very well understand that this Injury done by them to a Commissioner of the Parliament of *Scotland*, was of a very high Nature; intreating, that if they apprehended any Thing from *Scotland*, the Breach might not be made upon the Kingdom of *England's* Part; and that they would not give just Cause, by this Action, to the Kingdom of *Scotland*, to make War against *England*: But no Argument did prevail; so at length the Earl of *Lauderdale* was forced to depart, having publicly protested, before the Commissioners of both Houses, That he was debarred Access to the King of *Scotland*, and his Liberty taken from him, contrary to the Law of Nations, and a particular Agreement betwixt the Kingdoms.

We have formerly represented unto the Honourable Houses, how his Majesty was carried away from *Holdenby*, by a Party of Sir *Thomas Fairfax's* Army; which the Soldiers before-mentioned did, on *Saturday* last, before the Earl of *Lauderdale* and some of the Commissioners of both Houses, own to be the Act of the whole soldiery of the Army. We did likewise acquaint the Houses, how our Letters to *Scotland* were intercepted by some of that Army.

And now, to complete these Injuries, they offered Violence to a Commissioner of the Parliament of *Scotland*, debarred him of Access to his Majesty, deprived him of his Liberty, and drove him away: So that there remains no Hope that there can be Application made hereafter to his Majesty from the Kingdom of *Scotland*: Nor can we be able to give that Account of his Majesty's Condition to that Kingdom which is expected from

Of ENGLAND. 203

' from us, so long as he is in the Power of that
 ' Army. Wherefore we desire that the Houses of
 ' Parliament will, in their Wisdom, take such
 ' Course herein, as Reparation may be made to
 ' the Kingdom of *Scotland* of these multiplied In-
 ' juries; and especially of the last done against the
 ' Person of a public Minister of the Kingdom of
 ' *Scotland*, in so violent a Manner. And to the
 ' end there may be a free and unrestrained Appli-
 ' cation to his Majesty from the Parliaments of
 ' both Kingdoms, we do earnestly desire the Ho-
 ' nourable Houses to invite his Majesty to come to
 ' *London*; and to declare that he shall be here in
 ' Safety, Honour, and Freedom; than which we
 ' see no other probable Means, for the present, to
 ' obtain a safe and well-grounded Peace; and so
 ' we rest

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 August.

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

LAUDERDALE, HUGH KENNEDY,
 CHA. ERSKINE, ROBERT BARCLAY.

Upon reading this Letter the Lords ordered that
 the King's Children at *St. James's* be removed into
 the City, and that the Lord Mayor and Sheriffs be
 desired to take Care of them; and that Examina-
 tion should be made what Practices had been used
 to convey them away; to which the Commons
 agreed. The Earl of *Northumberland* also was
 summoned, by Letter, to repair to his Charge of
 the Children, and to give his Attendance in Par-
 liament.

The Parliament
 order the King's
 Children to the
 Care of the Lord
 Mayor, and de-
 sire his Majesty
 to come to Lon-
 don.

The Lords also passed a Vote to be added to
 their former of *July 31*, viz. That the Place the
 King be desired to come to should be *London*; and
 that both these Votes be sent to the King, and pub-
 lished in *London*, &c. by the Lord Mayor and
 Sheriffs, by Sound of Trumpet. This last Vote
 was agreed to by the House of Commons, on a
 Division of 73 against 32.

Several

204 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

Several Ministers from the Assembly of Divines presented the following Paper to both Houses:

August.

To the Right Honourable the LORDS and COMMONS assembled in Parliament.

The Assembly of
Divines mediate
for Peace.

THE Assembly of Divines being, by their Profession, Ministers of the Gospel of Peace, under Christ the Prince of Peace, hearing of Preparations tending to a sudden War between the Army and the City, do, in the Name of Jesus Christ, humbly crave Leave, in these few Words, to mediate for Peace at the Hands of all that have any Interest in the managing thereof, as that wherein Christians are most deeply concerned; the Glory of God, which all Parties profess to regard and advance; the Safety the King, Parliament, and Kingdom, which being lately in a hopeful Way to be established in a happy Peace, is now in Danger to be overwhelmed with a Sea of Blood; (the End and sad Consequences whereof no Man is able to foresee) and the Welfare of all the People of God in the Land, who are likely to be engaged one against another: Wherefore we humbly pray, in the Bowels of Jesus Christ, that all possible Means may be used, by Treaty or otherwise, that the Effusion of Christian Blood may be prevented; Ireland relieved; and all God's People enjoy the Fruit of their Prayers in the flourishing of the true Religion, and Settlement of the Peace and Prosperity of the three Kingdoms.

CHARLES HERLE, *Prolocutor.*

HERBERT PALMER, *Assessor.*

HEN. ROBOROUGH, *Scriba.*

The Answer returned by both Houses was to this Effect, 'That they gave the Assembly Thanks for their Care and good Affections to the Good and Peace of the Kingdom, and should not be wanting in any Thing to effect it.'

August 3. This Day the Lord Montague sent Word that the King intended to go, as the Day before

Stoke, a House of the Lord *Purbeck's*, An. 23. Car. I.
for, where the Commissioners thought it
 to attend him. From thence his Ma-
 the following Declaration, disavowing
 rations in him to levy War against his
 s of Parliament; and also sent a Letter
mas Fairfax.

1647.

August.

LES R. Stoke, Aug. 4, 1647.

ving been many Rumors spread, and In- The King disa-
 tions given, which may have induced many vows having any
 that we intend to make War against our Concern in the
 t: We profess before God, and declare late Tumult.
 World, That we always have and do ab-
 ch Designs; and desire all our Nobility
 ons, who are here upon the Place, to declare
 hey have not been Witnesses of our frequent
 l Declarations and Professions to this Pur-
 ther they see any Colour of Preparations
 s, that might reasonably beget a Belief of
 Design; and whether they be not fully per-
 at we have no such Intentions; but that
 deavours (according to our many Profes-
 to the firm and constant Settlement of the
 estant Religion, the just Privileges of
 t, the Liberty of the Subject, the Law,
 d Prosperity of this Kingdom.

g's Letter to Sir Thomas Fairfax, deli-
 Sir John Berkeley, and Mr. John Ash-
 m.

RLES R. Stoke, Aug. 4, 1647.

Majesty being advertised of many false Ru-
 s raised of him to comply with a Party to
 es against you and your Army: His Ma-
 hereby acquit himself of the great Scandal
 him therein; and for the Proceedings of
 ondon and elsewhere, who have of late
 muls in the City, and other Places, his
 loth utterly disclaim the same, testifying a
 like thereof. His Majesty doth account it

206 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 23. Car. 1. *too dishonourable an Action to have Thoughts of being brought to London in such a tumultuous Manner.*

1647.

August.

A Letter, signed by both the new Speakers, was ordered to be sent to the Commissioners residing with the Army, inclosing one to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*. Neither of these are mentioned by the Contemporary Writers; but they stand thus in the *Lords Journals*.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

A Letter from the new Speakers to the Commissioners with the Army,

WE did, by Command, write you a Letter on *Friday* last, with one inclosed unto Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, but have received no Answer either from him or you; we are now commanded to send you this inclosed Letter to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, a Copy whereof we send you. By the Contents you will find how necessary it is for you to apply yourselves unto him for a speedy Account and Answer thereunto, and to use your utmost Endeavours to keep off the Army from approaching so near the City, for avoiding of all ill Consequences that may happen thereupon.

We are further commanded to let you know that, by reason of the withdrawing of the late Speakers, the Houses have thought fit to make Choice of us for their respective Speakers, of which you are to take Notice.

We have further in Command to send you inclosed a Vote, passed both Houses, explaining the Order whereby Power is given to the General over the Land Forces, viz. *Resolved*, 'That the Order of both Houses of the 20th of *July*, which puts under the Command of Sir *Thomas Fairfax* all the Land Forces under the Pay of the Parliament, doth not extend to give him any Power over the Trained Bands or Garrisons. We rest

Your affectionate Friends and Servants,

H U N S D O N,
Speaker of the House of Peers pro
Tempore.

H. P E L H A M,
Speaker of the House of Commons -

The LETTER to General FAIRFAX, inclosed in
the foregoing.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

August.

S I R,

WE are commanded by both Houses of Parliament to acquaint you, that, by reason of the late Speakers having withdrawn themselves, the Houses made Choice of us to be their respective Speakers; and that, on *Friday* last, a Letter was sent to you from both Houses, to let you know the Parliament was in Safety by the Care of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, Common-Council, and Militia of the City of *London*, and free from Danger of any Tumults; and that, to prevent such Mischiefs as might attend the nearer Approach of the Army, you should not suffer the Army to come nearer this City than thirty Miles, according to the Order of both Houses then sent unto you; to which Letter no Answer hath been as yet returned: We are therefore commanded to let you know that, as your Obedience and Answer therunto hath been hitherto expected, so the Houses, being informed that, notwithstanding the said Letter and Order, the Body of the Army are drawn up much nearer this City than thirty Miles, contrary to the Expectation of the Parliament, and tending to the Terror and Astonishment of the City; whence, besides the straitening of the City of Provisions, sundry other Mischiefs may follow; both Houses, therefore, have thought fit to require you, that you cause such of the Army as are already marched nearer than thirty Miles, forthwith to draw back to that Distance, and that no Part of it come nearer than thirty Miles of this City, according to the said Order, a Copy whereof is here inclosed.

And another to
Sir Thomas Fair-
fax, requiring an
Answer to their
former forbid-
ding his March
towards *London*.

We are also commanded to signify unto you, that as to the disorderly Carriage of some Apprentices and others at *Westminster*, the 26th of *July* last, the same is already put into a Way of Examination; and the Houses are resolved that such

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

August.

such further Course shall be taken thereupon as shall be agreeable to Justice.

‘ The Houses have also received Information that, on the last Lord’s Day in the Morning, and within three or four Miles of this Place, a Party of Horse of that Army under the Command of Major *Desborough*, in a hostile Manner, fell upon divers Persons that were in a peaceable Condition, and quartered there by Authority of Parliament, untill they should get their Arrears paid, and be disbanded, as was formerly ordered: Some of them were murdered, others of them were wounded, and divers of them were stripp’d and carried away, pinion’d as Prisoners; and divers Horse and Arms forcibly taken away without any Provocation given: That another Part of the Forces under your Command have surpriz’d and seiz’d upon *Tilbury* Block-House, in *Essex*, upon the River of *Thames*: That the Houses have seen Copies of several Warrants, alledged to be signed by yourself and the Officers under your Command, for the raising of the Trained Bands and Forces of the Country as you pass, to join with you, for which you never had any Authority of Parliament: That the Houses are also informed that you have given Orders for the levying of Monies or Provisions on the Country, contrary to the Laws of the Land, and in Violation of the Rights and Freedom of the Subject: That the House of Commons have also received Advertisement from Sir *Samuel Luke*, Knt. a Member of that House, that a Party of Dragoons of the Army, by your Warrant, and a Warrant of one Major *Tuleday*, did, on the last Lord’s Day, assault his Person; and did, by Force, carry him away Prisoner from his own House, to what Place we know not; and we cannot hear that he is yet released, which the Houses require you to see presently done.

‘ As they hold it strange that such Acts of Violence, touching not only on the Liberty, but on the Lives, of the Subjects, and the Privileges of Par-

Parliament, should be done, especially if it be by any Direction of yours; so they cannot but resent them, and the more, not only for the Blood therein spilt, but also for that those Actions, at this Time, are so far from conducing to the happy Peace that both Houses have so earnestly endeavoured, and do still labour to procure, and to ease the Kingdom of Charge, that they can be understood to be no other than Acts of Hostility and the Beginning of a new War, and the Increasing of Charge upon the Country, by Force of Arms, without any Manner of Cause or Authority.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
August.

Lastly, we are commanded to acquaint you with a Complaint of a high Nature, made by the Commissioners of the Parliament of Scotland against some of your Army, for Violation of the Law of Nations, and the Treaty concluded between both Kingdoms, as may appear unto you by a Copy of their Letter we send you here inclosed: And considering that the Proceedings that they complain of may prove of dangerous Consequence to both Kingdoms, and tend to the embroiling of both Nations in a new War, if a Course be not taken to prevent it, the Houses therefore have thought fit to require you to inform yourself fully therein, and to give them a speedy and full Account of the Business; to the end that they may return such an Answer as may become them to the Commissioners of the Parliament of Scotland. We rest

Your affectionate Friends and Servants,

HUNSDON,
*Speaker of the House of
Peers pro Tempore.*
H. PELHAM,
*Speaker of the House of
Commons.*

Aug 6. After an entire Stop of Business till this Day, (during which Interval, though both Houses
VOL. XVI. O met,

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

August.

The late Speakers, &c. restored to their Seats by the Army.

The Parliament's Commissioners present a Declaration, from General Fairfax and his Council of War, concerning the late Tumult.

met, they did nothing but adjourn *de Die in Diem*) Sir *Henry Vane, junior*, reported, from the Commissioners of Parliament appointed to reside with the Army, an Account of the Proceedings of the Army and Commissioners for these few Days last past; and the Grounds and Reasons that were given unto them for the Removal and March of the Army to this Town, in regard of the Force and Violence offered to the Parliament; and that, when Notice came to the Army of this Violence, the Army, in Pursuance of the Orders of both Houses, was forty Miles distant from the City, and their Quarters scattered near 200 Miles; had almost finished their Proposals for settling the Publick Peace; and were come to a Resolution of sending speedily 8000 Foot and 2000 Horse into *Ireland*: But, upon the Notice of this Violence, they contracted their Quarters. He further acquainted the House, That the General himself was come to *London*, to Sir *Abraham Williams's* House; and that the Army was advanced to the Town, in order to the safe and free Sitting of the Parliament: That, at *Colebrooke*, the Commissioners of the Army delivered unto the Commissioners of Parliament, Heads of Proposals to be treated upon by the Commissioners; of which he read the Title, and, by Command of the House, delivered them in accordingly. These were inclosed in the following Declaration from Sir *Thomas Fairfax* and his Council of War:

Colebrooke, Aug. 2, 1647.

‘SINCE our drawing back to *Reading*, we have applied ourselves, with all Diligence, to frame and hasten an intire Body of all the particular Proposals, which we would tender to the Commissioners of Parliament residing with the Army, to be treated on in pursuance of those general Desires expressed in our former Declarations and Papers, for the securing of the common Rights and Liberties, and a present settling of the Peace of the Kingdom. In which Business,

ness, (notwithstanding the many Interruptions
and Disturbances, which daily Advertisements of
the indirect and treacherous Practices and Pre-
parations of the Committee of Militia, and others
in and about the City of *London* and elsewhere,
tending to a new War, have occasioned, to the
diverting or retarding of our proceeding there-
in) we have made a Progress as speedy as the
Nature and Weight of such a Work would ad-
mit; and, having finished the same, we have de-
livered in an Abstract of the Heads thereof unto
the said Commissioners of Parliament to be treat-
ed upon.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
August.

But the late pernicious Engagement set on
foot in the City, and, much more, that prodi-
gious Violence done to both Houses of Parlia-
ment on *Monday* last, having wholly taken us off
for the present; and rendered all proceeding in
the Way of Treaty thereupon meerly vain and
hopeless, untill it shall please God the Parlia-
ment be righted and vindicated against that Vio-
lation done to it, and restored into a Condition
of Freedom, so as the unquestioned Members of
it may repair together with Safety, and proceed
according to their just Freedom: We have
thought good, in the mean Time, to make this
public Tender of the Heads of the Proposals to
the Consideration of the whole Kingdom; where-
in, though all Circumstances requisite to be deter-
mined in an actual Settlement be not so fully and
perfectly expressed as upon the Treaty intended,
(if not interrupted as before) they might speedily
have been; yet all Men may see and understand,
in these, the Effect and Bottom of our Desires;
whereupon we have sincerely studied, that a pre-
sent Peace might be settled; which same Thing
(with and after such Vindication of the Parlia-
ment as may again render it into a Capacity to
establish the same) we shall still faithfully endea-
vour to the utmost of our Powers; and accord-
ingly shall expect the chearful and hearty Con-

An. 23, Car. 1.

1647.

August.

currence of all those who are, or shall be, satisfied concerning the Integrity of our Intentions to the Peace and Welfare of the Kingdom in these Proposals; or who shall, for the Main, desire or approve of the same Things with us, in order to a Settlement.

And to these Proposals which we here first tender as necessary to a Peace, and upon which we desire the Seal of Peace, (in the Restitution of his Majesty and others to their Rights, and in an Act of Oblivion to be passed) we cannot but add the further Expression of our Desires in some other Particulars; which, though not so essential to Peace as necessarily to precede the settling of it, yet being Matters of a public Nature, and most of them of general Grievance to the Kingdom, which we every where find the Outcries of; and being contained in, or in pursuance of, the same Things expressed in our former Representations and Papers, we shall desire, That, the Parliament being set free, no Time may be lost for a speedy Consideration of them, so as the former Things for the present settling of Peace be not delayed thereby.

By the Appointment of his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax and the Council of War,

J. RUSHWORTH, *Secretary.*

The HEADS of the PROPOSALS agreed upon by his Excellency Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX and his Council of War, referred to in the foregoing Declaration.

August 1, 1647.

With Heads of I. some further Proposals for settling the Peace of the Nation,

‘ **T**HAT the Things hereafter proposed being provided for by this Parliament, a certain Period may, by Act of Parliament, be set for the ending of this Parliament; such Period to be within a Year at most: And, in the same Act, Provision to be made for the Succession and Constitution of Parliaments in future, as followeth:

1. ‘ That

1. ' That Parliaments may biennially be called, and meet at a certain Day, with such Provision for the Certainty thereof, as in the late Act was made for Triennial Parliaments, and what further or other Provision shall be found needful by the Parliament to reduce it to more Certainty; and, upon the passing of this, the said Act for Triennial Parliaments to be repealed.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
August.

2. ' Each Biennial Parliament to sit one hundred and twenty Days certain, unless adjourned, or dissolved sooner by their own Consent; afterwards to be adjournable or dissolvable by the King: And no Parliament to sit past two hundred and forty Days from their first Meeting, or some other limited Number of Days now to be agreed on: Upon the Expiration whereof each Parliament to dissolve of course, if not otherwise dissolved sooner.

3. ' The King, upon Advice of the Council of State, in the Intervals betwixt Biennial Parliaments, to call a Parliament extraordinary, provided it meet above seventy Days before the next Biennial Day; and be dissolved at least sixty Days before the same, so as the Course of Biennial Elections may never be interrupted.

4. ' That this Parliament, and each succeeding Biennial Parliament, at or before Adjournment or Dissolution thereof, may appoint Committees to continue during the Interval, for such Purposes as are, in any of these Proposals, referred to such Committees.

5. ' That the Elections of the Commons for succeeding Parliaments may be distributed to all Counties, or other Parts or Divisions of the Kingdom, according to some Rule of Equality or Proportion; so as all Counties may have a Number of Parliament Members allowed to their Choice, proportionable to the respective Rates they bear in the common Charges and Burthens of the Kingdom; or, according to some other Rule of Equality or Proportion, to render the House of Commons, as near as may be, an equal Re-

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

presentative of the whole ; and in order thereunto, that a present Consideration be had to take off the Elections of Burgesses for poor, decayed, or inconsiderable Towns ; and to give some present Addition to the Number of Parliament Members for great Counties that have now less than their due Proportion ; to bring all, at present, as near as may be, to such a Rule of Proportion as aforesaid.

6. That effectual Provision be made for future Freedom of Elections, and Certainty of due Returns.

7. That the House of Commons alone have the Power, from Time to Time, to set down further Orders and Rules for the Ends expressed in the two last preceding Articles ; so as to reduce the Election of Members of that House to more and more Perfection of Equality in the Distribution, Freedom in the Election, Order in the proceeding thereto, and Certainty in the Returns ; which Orders and Rules, in that Case, to be as Laws.

8. That there be a Liberty for entertaining Dissents in the House of Commons, with a Provision that no Member be censurable for ought said or voted in the House, further than to Exclusion from that Trust, and that only by the Judgment of the House itself.

9. That the judicial Power, or Power of final Judgment in the Lords and Commons, and their Power of Exposition and Application of Law, without further Appeal, may be cleared : And that no Officer of Justice, Minister of State, or other Person adjudged by them, may be capable of Protection or Pardon from the King, without their Advice and Consent.

10. That the Right and Liberty of the Commons of *England* may be cleared and vindicated as to a due Exemption from any Judgment, Trial, or other Proceeding against them by the House of Peers, without the concurring Judgment,

ment of the House of Commons: As also from any other Judgment, Sentence, or Proceeding against them, other than by their Equals, or according to the Law of the Land.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
August.

II. 'The same Act to provide, that Grand-Jurymen may be chosen by and for several Parts or Divisions of each County respectively, in some equal Way; and not remain, as now, at the Discretion of an Under-Sheriff, to be put on or off: And that such Grand-Jurymen for their respective Counties may, at each Assize, present the Names of Persons to be made Justices of Peace, from Time to Time, as the Country hath Need for any to be added to the Commission; and at the Summer Assize to present the Names of three Persons, out of whom the King may prick one to be Sheriff for the next Year.

II. 'For the future Security to Parliaments and the Militia in general, in order thereunto that it be provided, by Act of Parliament,

I. 'That the Power of the Militia, by Sea and Land, during the Space of ten Years next ensuing, shall be ordered and disposed by the Lords and Commons assembled, and to be assembled, in the Parliament or Parliaments of *England*; or by such Persons as they shall nominate and appoint for that Purpose, from Time to Time, during the said Space.

2. 'That the said Power shall not be ordered, disposed, or exercised by the King's Majesty that now is, or by any Person or Persons by any Authority derived from him, during the said Space, or at any Time hereafter by his said Majesty, without the Advice and Consent of the said Lords and Commons, or of such Committees or Council, in the Intervals of Parliament, as they shall appoint.

3. 'That, during the same Space of ten Years, the said Lords and Commons may, by Bill or Ordinance, raise and dispose of what Monies, and for what Forces they shall, from Time to Time, find necessary; as also for Payment of
the

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

the Public Debts and Damages; and for all other the public Uses of the Kingdom.

4. ' And to the end the temporary Security, intended by the three Particulars last precedent, may be the better assured, it may therefore be provided, That no Subjects that have been in Hostility against the Parliament in the late War shall be capable of bearing any Office of Power or public Trust in the Common-wealth, during the Space of five Years, without Consent of Parliament, or of the Council of State; or to sit as Members, or Assistants, of either House of Parliament, 'till the second Biennial Parliament be past.

III. ' For the present Form of disposing the Militia, in order to the Peace and Safety of this Kingdom, and the Service of *Ireland*,

1. ' That there be Commissioners for the Admiralty, with a Vice-Admiral and Rear-Admiral, now to be agreed upon, with Power for the forming, regulating, appointing of Officers, and providing for the Navy, and for ordering the same to and in the ordinary Service of the Kingdom; and that there be a sufficient Provision and Establishment for Pay and Maintenance thereof.

2. ' That there be a General for Command of the Land Forces that are to be in Pay, in *England*, *Ireland*, and *Wales*, both for Field and Garrison.

3. ' That there be Commissioners in the several Counties, for the standing Militia of the respective Counties, consisting of Train'd Bands and Auxiliaries not in Pay; with Power for the proportioning, forming, regulating, training and disciplining of them.

4. ' That there be a Council of State, with Power to superintend and direct the several and particular Powers of the Militia last mentioned, for the Peace and Safety of this Kingdom, and of *Ireland*.

5. ' That the same Council may have Power as the King's Privy-Council, for and in all foreign Negotiations: Provided that the making of
' War

War or Peace with any other Kingdom or State, An. 23. Car. I.
shall not be without Advice and Consent of Par- 1647.
liament.

6. 'That the said Power of the Council of State be put into the Hands of trusty and able Persons, now to be agreed on; and the same Persons to continue in that Power, *si bene se gesserint*, for a certain Term not exceeding seven Years.

7. 'That there be a sufficient Establishment now provided for the Salary of Forces both in England and Ireland; the Establishment to continue untill two Months after the Meeting of the first Biennial Parliament.

IV. 'That an Act be passed for disposing the great Offices, for ten Years, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, or by such Committees as they shall appoint for that Purpose in the Intervals, with Submission to the Approbation of the next Parliament; and, after ten Years, they to nominate three, and the King out of that Number to appoint one for the Succession upon any Vacancy.

V. 'That an Act be passed for restraining any Peers, made since the 21st Day of May, 1642, or to be hereafter made, from having any Power to sit or vote in Parliament, without Consent of both Houses.

VI. 'That an Act be passed for recalling and making void all Declarations and other Proceedings against the Parliament, or against any that have acted by, or under, their Authority in the late War, or in relation to it: And that the Ordinances for Indemnity may be confirmed.

VII. That an Act be passed for making void all Grants, &c. under the Great Seal, that was conveyed away from the Parliament, since the Time it was so convey'd away, except as in the Parliament's Propositions; and for making those void that have been, or shall be, passed under the Great Seal made by the Authority of both Houses of Parliament.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

VIII. ' That an Act be passed for Confirmation of the Treaties between the two Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland*, and for appointing Conservators of the Peace betwixt them.

IX. ' That the Ordinance for taking away the Court of Wards and Liveries be confirm'd by Act of Parliament; provided his Majesty's Revenue be not damnified therein, nor those that last held Offices in the same left without Reparation some other Way.

X. ' An Act to declare void the Cessation of *Ireland*, &c. and to leave the Prosecution of that War to the Lords and Commons in the Parliament of *England*.

XI. ' An Act to be passed to take away all coercive Power, Authority, and Jurisdiction of Bishops, and all other Ecclesiastical Officers whatsoever, extending to any Civil Penalties upon any; and to repeal all Laws, whereby the Civil Magistracy hath been, or is bound, upon any Ecclesiastical Censure, to proceed, *ex Officio*, unto any Civil Penalties against any Persons so censured.

XII. ' That there be a Repeal of all Acts, or Clauses in any Act, enjoining the Use of the Book of Common Prayer, and imposing any Penalties for Neglect thereof; as also of all Acts, or Clauses in any Act, imposing any Penalty for not coming to Church, or for Meetings elsewhere for Prayer or other religious Duties, Exercises or Ordinances; and some other Provision to be made for discovering of Papists and Popish Recusants, and for disabling of them, and of all Jesuits or Priests, from disturbing the State.

XIII. ' That the taking of the Covenant be not enforced upon any, nor any Penalties imposed upon the Refusers, whereby Men might be constrained to take it against their Judgments or Consciences; but all Orders or Ordinances tending to that Purpose to be repealed.

XIV. ' That (the Things here before proposed being provided for settling and securing the Rights, Liberties, Peace, and Safety of the Kingdom)

dom) his Majesty's Person, his Queen, and Royal Issue, may be restored to a Condition of Safety, Honour and Freedom in this Nation; without Diminution to their personal Rights, or further Limitation to the Exercise of the Regal Power, than according to the Particulars foregoing.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

XV. ' For the Matter of Compositions :

1. ' That a less Number out of the Persons excepted in the two first Qualifications, (not exceeding five for the *English*) being nominated particularly by the Parliament, who, together with the Persons in the *Irish* Rebellion, included in the third Qualification, may be reserved to the further Judgment of the Parliament, as they shall find Cause; all other excepted Persons may be remitted from the Exception, and admitted to Composition.

2. ' That the Rates for all future Compositions may be lessened and limited, not to exceed the several Proportions hereafter express'd respectively: That is to say,

' For all Persons formerly excepted, not above a third Part.

' For the late Members of Parliament, under the first Branch of the fourth Qualification in the Propositions, a fourth Part.

' For other Members of Parliament, in the second and third Branches of the same Qualification, a sixth Part.

' For the Persons nominated in the said fourth Qualification, and those included in the tenth Qualification, an eighth Part.

' For all others included in the sixth Qualification, a tenth Part.

' And that all real Debts, either upon Record or proved by Witnesses, be considered, and abated in the Valuation of their Estates in all the Cases aforesaid.

3. ' That those who shall hereafter come to Compound, may not have the Covenant put upon them as a Condition without which they may not compound; but in case they shall not willing-

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

August.

willingly take it, they may pass their Compositions without it.

4. That the Persons and Estates of all *English*, not worth 200 *l.* in Lands or Goods, be at Liberty and discharged; and that the King's menial Servants, that never took up Arms, but only attended his Person according to their Offices, may be freed from Composition, or pay at most but the Proportion of one Year's Revenue, or a twentieth Part.

5. That, in order to the making and perfecting of Compositions at the Rates aforesaid, the Rents, Revenues, and other Dues and Profits of all sequestered Estates whatsoever, except the Estates of such Persons who shall be continued under Exception as before, be from henceforth suspended and detained in the Hands of the respective Tenants, Occupants, and others from whom they are due, for the Space of six Months following.

6. That the Faith of the Army, or other Forces of the Parliament, given in Articles upon Surrenders to any of the King's Party, may be fully made good; and where any Breach thereof shall appear to have been made, full Reparation and Satisfaction may be given to the Parties injured, and the Persons offending, being found out, may be compelled thereto.

XVI. That there be a general Act of Oblivion to extend unto all, (except the Persons to be continued in Exception as before) to absolve from all Trespasses, Misdemeanors, &c. done in Prosecution of the War, and from all Trouble or Prejudice for or concerning the same, after their Compositions past; and to restore them to all Privileges, &c. belonging to other Subjects, provided, as in the fourth Particular under the second general Head aforesaid concerning Security.

And whereas there have been, of late, strong Endeavours and Practices of a factious and desperate Party, to embroil this Kingdom in a new War

‘ War ; and for that Purpose to induce the King, An. 23. Car. I.
 ‘ Queen, and Prince to declare for the said Party ; 1647.
 ‘ and also to excite and stir up all those of the King’s
 ‘ late Party to appear and engage for the same ; }
 ‘ which Attempts and Designs, many of the King’s August.
 ‘ Party, out of their Desires to avoid further Mi-
 ‘ sery to the Kingdom, have contributed their En-
 ‘ deavours to prevent, as for divers of them we have
 ‘ had particular Assurance: We do therefore de-
 ‘ sire, that such of the King’s Party who shall ap-
 ‘ pear to have expressed, and shall hereafter ex-
 ‘ press that Way, their good Affections to the Peace
 ‘ and Welfare of the Kingdom, and to hinder the
 ‘ embroiling of the same in a new War, may be
 ‘ freed and exempted from Compositions, or to pay
 ‘ but one Years Revenue, or a twentieth Part.

‘ These Particulars aforegoing are the Heads of
 ‘ such Proposals as we have agreed on to tender, in
 ‘ order to the settling of the Peace of this King-
 ‘ dom ; leaving the Terms of Peace for the King-
 ‘ dom of *Scotland* to stand as in the late Propo-
 ‘ sitions of both Kingdoms, untill that Kingdom
 ‘ shall agree to any Alteration.

‘ Next to the Proposals aforesaid for the present
 ‘ settling of Peace, we shall desire that no Time may
 ‘ be lost by the Parliament for Dispatch of other
 ‘ Things tending to the Welfare, Ease, and just
 ‘ Satisfaction of the Kingdom ; and in special Man-
 ‘ ner,

1. ‘ That the just and necessary Liberty of the
 ‘ People to represent their Grievances and De-
 ‘ sires, by way of Petition, may be cleared and
 ‘ vindicated, according to the sixth Head in the
 ‘ late Representation or Declaration of the Army
 ‘ sent from *St. Alban’s*. *

2. ‘ That, in pursuance of the same Head in
 ‘ the said Declaration, the common Grievances
 ‘ of the People may be speedily considered of, and
 ‘ effectually redressed ; and in particular,

‘ That

* This Declaration is given at large, in our Fifteenth Volume,
 p. 455.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

August.

‘ That the Excise may be taken off from such
 ‘ Commodities whereon the poor People of the
 ‘ Land do ordinarily live, and a certain Time to
 ‘ be limited for taking off the whole.

‘ That the Oppressions and Encroachments of
 ‘ Forest-Laws may be prevented for the future.

‘ All Monopolies, old or new, and Restraints to
 ‘ the Freedom of Trade to be taken off.

‘ That a Course may be taken, and Com-
 ‘ missioners appointed, to remedy and rectify the
 ‘ Inequality of Rates being upon several Counties,
 ‘ and several Parts of each County, in respect of
 ‘ others, and to settle the Proportions for Land-
 ‘ Rates to more Equality throughout the King-
 ‘ dom; in order to which we shall offer some
 ‘ further Particulars, which we hope may be
 ‘ useful.

‘ The present unequal, troublesome, and con-
 ‘ tentious Way of Ministers Maintenance by
 ‘ Tythes, to be considered of, and some Remedy
 ‘ applied.

‘ That the Rules and Course of Law, and
 ‘ the Officers of it, may be so reduced and re-
 ‘ formed, as that all Suits and Questions of Right
 ‘ may be more clear and certain in the Issues, and
 ‘ not so tedious nor chargeable in the Proceeding
 ‘ as now; in order to which we shall offer some
 ‘ further Particulars hereafter.

‘ That Prisoners for Debt, or other Credi-
 ‘ tors who have Estates to discharge them, may
 ‘ not, by embracing Imprisonment or any other
 ‘ Ways, have Advantage to defraud their Credi-
 ‘ tors; but that the Estates of all Men may be
 ‘ some Way made liable to their Debts, (as well
 ‘ as Tradefmen are by Commissions of Bankrupt)
 ‘ whether they be imprisoned for it or not. And
 ‘ that such Prisoners for Debt, who have not
 ‘ wherewith to pay, or at least do yield up what
 ‘ they have to their Creditors, may be freed from
 ‘ Imprisonment, or some Way provided for, so
 ‘ as neither they nor their Families may perish
 ‘ by their Imprisonments.

‘ Some

‘ Some Provisions to be made, that none
‘ may be compelled, by Penalties or otherwise, to
‘ answer unto Questions tending to the accusing
‘ of themselves or their nearest Relations, in cri-
‘ minal Causes, and no Man’s Life to be taken
‘ away under two Witnesses.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

‘ That Consideration may be had of all Sta-
‘ tutes, and the Laws or Customs of Corporations,
‘ imposing any Oaths; either to repeal, or else to
‘ qualify and provide against the same, so far as
‘ they may extend or be construed to the Mo-
‘ lestation, or Ensnaring of religious and peaceable
‘ People, meerly for Nonconformity in Religion.

3. ‘ That, according to the seventh Head in the
‘ Declaration of the Army, the large Powers gi-
‘ ven to Committees or Deputy-Lieutenants, du-
‘ ring the late Times of War and Distraction,
‘ may be speedily taken into Consideration, to
‘ be recalled and made void; and that such Powers
‘ of that Nature as shall appear necessary to be
‘ continued, may be put into a regulated Way,
‘ and left to as little Arbitrariness as the Nature
‘ and Necessity of the Things wherein they are
‘ conversant will bear.

4. ‘ That, according to the eighth Head in
‘ the said Declaration, an effectual Course may be
‘ taken that the Kingdom may be righted and
‘ satisfied, in point of Accounts, for the vast Sums
‘ that have been levied.

5. ‘ That Provision may be made for Payment
‘ of Arrears to the Army, and the rest of the Sol-
‘ diers of the Kingdom, who have concurred with
‘ the Army in the late Desires and Proceedings
‘ thereof; and, in the next Place, for Payment of the
‘ public Debts and Damages of the Kingdom; and
‘ that to be performed, first, to such Persons whose
‘ Debts or Damages, upon the public Account,
‘ are great, and their Estates small, so as they are
‘ thereby reduced to a Difficulty of Subsistence;
‘ in order to all which, and to the fourth Par-
‘ ticular last preceding, we shall speedily offer
‘ some further Particulars, in the Nature of Rules,
‘ which

An. 23. Car. I. 'which we hope will be of good Use towards public Satisfaction.'

1647.

August.

By the Appointment of his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax, and the Council of War,

JO. RUSHWORTH, *Secretary.*

A Thanksgiving Day appointed for the Army's bringing back the Members that had left the Houses.

The first Thing the Lords ordered this Day, Aug. 6, was to appoint a Thanksgiving for God's great Mercy, in bringing the Members of both Houses of Parliament back again to their Seats, in Safety, and preserving them from Tumults without Bloodshed. Mr. *Marshal* and Mr. *Nye* were ordered to preach before the Members of both Houses that Day, in the Abbey Church at *Westminster*.

The Commissioners of Parliament, (those that attended the Person of the King and those for the Army) declared, that the Reason they had not given the Lords any late Intelligence, was, in regard of the Violence and Force that had been lately used to both Houses in the Tumult. On which their Lordships voted, That they approved of what the Commissioners had done, in omitting any Returns to them of their Employment, in respect of the late great Disturbances.—Next the following Vote was agreed to :

The Lords declare all Proceedings during that Interval to be void.

Resolved, &c. 'That the Ordinance of the 26th Day of *July* last, for revoking and making void the Ordinance of the 23d of the same Month, for settling the Militia of the City of *London*, being gained from the Houses by Force and Violence; and all Votes, Orders, and Ordinances, and other Acts made, or pretended to be made, since the said Ordinance, by any Persons in either of the House, by Colour of Parliament, before the Return of *Edward* Earl of *Manchester*, Speaker of the House of Peers, and *William Lenthall*, Esq; Speaker of the House of Commons, are null and void, and are hereby declared so to be.'

Ordered, That these Votes, &c. should be sent to the Commons for their Concurrence.

Of ENGLAND. 225

When a Letter from Sir Thomas Fairfax, with An. 23. Car. 1.
Declaration inclosed, were both read :

1647.

August,

*the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of Peers, and WILLIAM
BENTHALL, Esq; Speaker of the House of Com-
mons, or either of them.*

Colebrooke, Aug. 3, 1647.

Right Honourable,

IAVING resolved on this inclosed, as the Sense of this Army, upon Occasion of the late
Parliament from
General Fairfax,
inclosing
Parliament, I think fit to tender the same un-
der your; and desire that you would be pleased to
communicate it to the Members of both Houses
in the Army. I remain

Your humble Servant,

T. FAIRFAX.

*DECLARATION of his Excellency Sir Thomas
Fairfax and his Council of War, on Behalf of
themselves and the whole Army, shewing the
Reasons of their present Advance towards the
City of London.*

Colebrooke, August 3, 1647.

WHEN this Army was formerly led by
the manifold Dispensations of God's
Providence, and the Grounds then declared, to
advance towards the City of London, we held it
our Duty to yield the Kingdom the Sum of those
Reasons, which we had to propose on Behalf of
ourselves, wherein we should acquiesce;
and having received from the Parliament some
Degrees of due Satisfaction therein, and some As-
sistance from the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and
Common Council of the City of London, of their
Concurrence with us in those Things; and

CL. XVI. P
from the Original Edition printed at Oxford, by J. Harris
Hills, Printers to his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax, 1647.

226 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

August.

also great Resolution, professed by them, of their
Care and Tenderneſs to preſerve all the Rights
and Privileges of Parliament ſafe, free, and in-
volute from Attempts of all Kinds; we do ap-
peal to God, to the City, and to all Men, what
a ſpeedy Compliance their Deſires for our Re-
moval to a further Diſtance found in this Army;
for preventing all Fears, Jealouſies, and other
Inconveniencies to the City, and to give clear
Teſtimony that we had nothing in our Breſt but
Thoughts of Peace, and the Good and Welfare
both of the Parliament, City, and Kingdom; not-
ſtanding many falſe and ſcandalous Reports raiſed
that we fought our Selves, that we had vile and
wicked Ends, and that nothing would ſatisfy the
Soldiers but the Plunder of the City; the contrary
whereof did manifeſtly appear, when they ſo
readily marched back upon Hopes of Satisfaction
in their Deſires of public Concernment.

Having then, upon the aforeſaid Confidence, ſo
withdrawn; and, out of a juſt Senſe of the Coun-
try's Suffering by quartering, removed the Head-
quarters of the Army above forty Miles from *Lon-
don*, and diſperſed the reſt well nigh 200 Miles,
for the more Eaſe of all Parts, and that we might
give the better Satisfaction to the Kingdom; and
being in this ſecure Way, and labouring after
the ſudden Settlement of the Kingdom, we had
even brought to Perfection the particular Pro-
poſals (included in the Generals of our firſt Repre-
ſentation) to be ſent to the Parliament for a final
Concluſion of all our Troubles; and alſo had
made good Progreſs towards the preſent Relief
of diſtreſſed *Ireland*, by aſſigning a competent
Force both of Horſe and Foot forthwith to have
advanced for that Service.

But the Kingdom's and our Enemies being
moſt vigilant and active to prevent and frustrate
thoſe good Intentions and Endeavours of ours,
(that they might carry on their former evil De-
ſigns, and under-hand Practices, and alſo preſerve
themſelves from the Hands of Juſtice) have en-
deavoured

deavoured to cast the Kingdom into a new and bloody War; and for that End have procured the under-hand Lifting of several Reformadoes and others; have contrived, promoted, and caused to be entered into by several Persons, a wicked and treasonable Combination, as is sufficiently manifested by a Declaration passed thereupon by both Houses of Parliament the 23d of July last, for Prevention of the Disturbances that were like to ensue thereupon: From which Kind of Disorders the City hath been well preserved during the Space of almost four Years, whilst the Militia was in the Hands of the old Commissioners; whereby it appears there was Cause for the Army to intreat the Parliament that the Militia might be returned into the Hands it was in before, as also for divers other good Reasons.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
August.

First, The old Commissioners of the Militia, that have been since left out, were not only Persons without all Exception, having been formerly chosen and approved by the Parliament and City, but also Men of whom the City, Parliament, and Kingdom, have had above four Years Experience in the faithful Discharge of their Trust: Men that ever from the Beginning, in the worst of Times, and in the Occasions of greatest Difficulty, had faithfully and constantly engaged for and with the Parliament in this Cause: Men that were always most desirous of a Peace, but of a safe and well-grounded one, and that had always testified a great Care to prevent all Occasions of embroiling the Kingdom in a new War. Now that, on a sudden, this Trust, which they had faithfully discharged so long, should be taken out of their Hands, and put into the Hands of others, some whereof, at the best, have been very cool in the Service of the Parliament at the Beginning of this War: That this should be pressed, and in a Manner forced upon the Parliament, with such Importunity from the Common Council, that some out of every Ward should be ap-

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

August.

pointed to solicit the Members of the House of Commons, every Day as they went in and out of the House, with Professions, That they would never leave the Door of the House till they were satisfied in their Desires: That they would not be contented with the Militia of the City of London only, unless they might have Power over that of the Suburbs and Out-parts; and all this before the Peace of the Kingdom was settled, or the Propositions sent to the King for that Purpose. These Things ministred great Cause of Suspicion that this Alteration of the Militia was in order to a Design, and to make the Terms of the Peace and Agreement with the King (on which the Security of the whole Kingdom and their Posterity is to be bottomed) more suitable to the private Bargainings and Undertakings of some Men, than to the public Welfare of the whole Kingdom in its Security and Prosperity, for the present and in future Times. But this Design discover'd itself more clearly by such Things as accompanied the Pursuit of this Alteration of the Militia, and ensued upon the obtaining thereof: At the same Time that the Alteration of the Militia was set on Foot, the same Persons, with as much Earnestness, pressed for the Disbanding of this Army, before any Thing was settled for the Security and Liberties of the Kingdom. At the same Time the Common Council was new modelled, and a Lord Mayor chosen that might suit with the present Design in hand: At the same Time (under Colour of Differences in some Circumstances of Church-Government) it was earnestly endeavoured that such as had been constantly true and most faithful to the Interest of this Kingdom, should be disabled to have any Employment in Church or Commonwealth either in *England* or *Ireland*: And, without any Colour or Pretence, divers Persons were left out of the Common Council and Militia, of eminent Deserts and Fidelity, and others brought into their room, that had

had either testified an ill Affection, or little Affection, to the Parliament and their Cause; and such as seemed to withdraw themselves from all Employment in the Beginning of this War, now, at the winding up thereof, are ambitious to thrust themselves into Employments; with a Design, as may justly be suspected, to frustrate and overthrow, in the Close of all, the Fruit and Effect of all the Cost and Blood that hath been spent and spilt in this Cause: And after that with Difficulty, and not without Reluctancy in the Houses of Parliament, they had obtained the Power of the Militia of *London*, and also in the Out-parts, for the Space of one Year, many chief Officers and Under-officers in the Train'd Bands, of known Trust and Fidelity, were displaced, and others of more doubtful Affections placed in their room; little Care was taken of the Honour of the Parliament, which was continually trampled under Foot, and their Authority affronted, by every Rabble of Women, Apprentices, Reformadoes, and Soldiers; which latter Sort of Persons were thereby so encouraged to rise higher and higher in their tumultuous Carriages against the Houses, till at length it is risen to the Height of barbarous and monstrous Violence against the Parliament, that they might set themselves on Work and the Kingdom on Fire again: And now at length the Design appears open faced; and though the Militia be made as the principal Ground of the Quarrel, yet, by the late Vow and Engagement, set on Foot before any Alteration of the Militia, and the pressing so much the Message of the 12th of *May*, and the King's coming to *London* to confirm the same, they shew that the Militia is desired but in order to that Design, and to force the Parliament, being wholly in their Power, to such Terms of Peace as they pleased.

In the next Place, when the Interest of the Common Council, in their Change of the Militia, shall be claimed as the Birthright of the City of *London* (which they never had any Colour

An. 25. Car. I.

1647.

August.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

August.

‘ to pretend to, saving by the Indulgency of the
 ‘ Parliament unto them since this Parliament, in
 ‘ respect of the great Use they have had of them,
 ‘ and the many good Services they have received
 ‘ from them) it is Time for all the Kingdom to
 ‘ look to their Birthrights, if such a Claim shall
 ‘ be held up against both Houses of Parliament,
 ‘ That upon no Occasion whatsoever, nor in no
 ‘ Time of Danger and Distraction whatsoever,
 ‘ they may appoint those that shall have the Power
 ‘ of the Militia of *London* without the Consent of
 ‘ the Common Council, especially when as the
 ‘ Houses shall sit under their Power: The late
 ‘ Example may evidence to all the World who
 ‘ shall be Masters of the Parliament’s Freedom
 ‘ and Resolutions; and common Reason will teach
 ‘ every Man who shall be Masters of the Birth-
 ‘ rights of the whole Kingdom, when there shall
 ‘ be no Army on Foot, when they have the Con-
 ‘ fidence to dispute for the Mastery, notwithstand-
 ‘ ing such an Army as this to check and balance
 ‘ them in Behalf of the Kingdom and Parliament.

Lastly, ‘ The Army discerning how intimate
 ‘ some of the Militia were with some of the eleven
 ‘ accused Members; how forward they were to
 ‘ comply and act with them in their Endeavours to
 ‘ raise a new War; how they made eighteen or
 ‘ nineteen Votes thereunto, together with them, in
 ‘ one Night, all which the Common-Council and
 ‘ Parliament disliked and revoked; how notwith-
 ‘ standing they afterwards secretly promoted their
 ‘ Designs by private Liftings, which now appear
 ‘ to have been still working under Ground:

‘ The Army, we say, observing this, and ha-
 ‘ ving no more in their Thoughts and Desires than
 ‘ to settle a speedy, safe, and well-grounded Peace,
 ‘ and to prevent a new War, found it necessary to
 ‘ advise, That the Militia might be put into the
 ‘ Hands wherein it was formerly, who had appro-
 ‘ ved themselves best to the Army. Parliament,
 ‘ and Kingdom, to be sober-minded Men, and
 ‘ not given to any Practices whereby a new
 War

' War might be kindled; to the Intent that the
 ' Army, being secured by that Means from that
 ' Danger, might with the more Confidence retire
 ' farther from the City, enlarge their Quarters for
 ' the greater Ease of the Kingdom, and intend
 ' wholly the settling of a sure Peace in this King-
 ' dom, and a speedy and effectual Relief of *Ire-*
 ' *land*; which was almost brought to a Period, and
 ' nothing in the Sight of Man could have hinder-
 ' ed, but the cursed Violence upon the Parliament
 ' under Pretence of the Militia; which, according
 ' to our Desire, being restored again into the Hands
 ' of the old Commissioners, by an Ordinance of
 ' both Houses, dated *July 23*: In pursuance of the
 ' afore said treasonable Combination, several Peti-
 ' tions were presented to the Common-Council
 ' of the City of *London*, in the Name of Appren-
 ' tices and others, importing their Desires that
 ' the Militia of the City might continue in the
 ' Hands of the former Commissioners, according to
 ' the Ordinance of the 4th of *May* last: Where-
 ' upon, *Monday, July 26*, the Common-Council
 ' of the City present their Petitions to both Houses
 ' for changing the Militia; wherein the House of
 ' Lords refuse to alter their Resolutions. The
 ' House of Commons answered, They would take
 ' it into Consideration next Morning: Notwith-
 ' standing which, the City and Kingdom cannot be
 ' ignorant with what Rage and Insolency the Tu-
 ' mult of Apprentices, the same Day, forced both
 ' Houses: They blocked up their Doors, swearing
 ' they would keep them in till they had passed what
 ' Votes they pleased: They threatened the Houses
 ' if they granted not their Desires; knocking,
 ' hooting, and hollowing so at the Parliament-
 ' Doors, that many Times the Members could
 ' not be heard to speak or debate; not suffering
 ' the House of Commons to divide for determining
 ' such Questions as were put; crying out, *That*
 ' *those that gave their Votes against them should be*
 ' *sent out to them*; very often and loudly crying,
 ' *Agree, agree; dispatch, we'll wait no longer*; and
 ' in

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

August.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

August.

in this outrageous Manner they continued at the House above eight Hours together, neither the City Guards there present, nor the City, relieving them; by reason whereof the House was forced to vote what that rude Multitude would demand, and then adjourned themselves till next Morning; after which the House rising, (the Speaker and many of the Members going out of the House) they forced them back again into the House, many of the Apprentices pressing in with them; where they stood with their Hats on their Heads, and compelled the Speaker to take the Chair, and the House to vote, in their Presence, what they pleased; committing many other Insolences, as is published by the Speaker of the House of Commons in his Declaration^b, and is too well known by all then present: And during the Time of this execrable Violence done by the said Apprentices, *Westminster-Hall* and the *Palace-Yard* were filled with Reformadoes and other ill-affected Persons designed to back them.

After this, the Houses being adjourned 'till Friday following, upon the *Thursday* the Apprentices printed and posted a Paper in several Places of the City, requiring all their Fellows to be early at the Parliament the next Morning, for that they intended to adjourn by Seven of the Clock, and that for a Month.

Thus the Speakers, with many of the Members of both Houses, were driven away from the Parliament.

This being the true State of Things as they have broke forth within these few Days, (which are so contrary to all those Pretences of Peace, and Detestation of a new War of late so frequently held forth on all Sides) all Men may observe to what Maturity the long-projected Design of some Men (of whom are those that are impeached by us) is now brought, and may be traced in the several Steps thereof, as it hath

tended

^b The Army's thus referring to the Speaker's Declaration seems to confirm the Account given of that Matter at p. 209.

to the Enslaving this Kingdom, and the
tion of all such well-affected People who
not comply with them therein; so as, by
now come to light, the Justness of that
his Army had engaged themselves in, and
at and wonderful Mercy of God in con-
them together, we assure ourselves, doth
early appear to all Men's Eyes and Ap-
pions; and will every Day more and more
nowledged, even by those that have here-
made a Question of it.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
August.

if when this Kingdom hath spent so much
Blood and Treasure, hath passed through
heard-of Dangers, and overcome such
ties so many Years together, all that they
now hope for, and rest in, must only be
he King grants in his Message of the 12th
y last: And if this must be imposed upon
Judgments and Consciences by an Oath
ow, entered into in a tumultuous and un-
Way, and by Outrage maintained, in
ht and Contempt of the Parliament: If
than this should not be accomplished, the
ment itself must be violated and forced in-
Hands of such of the Members thereof as
ecretly fomented and abetted these Prac-
to the end that these hidden Councils and
s of Darknes might, when they come to
ull Birth, have the Image of highest Au-
in the Face of them, the better to gain
thereunto, and secure the Authors of them
punishment: For the Evidence of all which
er ourselves to the Particulars in our Charge
t the Eleven Members, compared with
Passages of late broke forth, before rehear-
Unto which we shall now only add, and
it to the Consideration of all wise and good
with what Artifice and Boldness these
bers have served themselves of those horrid
alts and Violences of their own creating,
d of shewing their Detestation of them,
to intrude themselves into the public ma-
naging

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

naging of Affairs, and inevitably to embroil the Kingdom in a new War; which their own Revenge, and the compassing of their former Plots and Designs, makes them so greedily thirst after. If these Things, we say, must be the End and Upshot of all, what then remains to this poor Kingdom and all true-hearted *Englishmen*, but to join together, as one Man, with their Counsels, Estates, and Lives, in this Way, as our last Refuge under God; which he, by his wise and gracious Providence hath provided and reserved, by keeping up this Army even to a Miracle, so to prevent the aforesaid Evils, and to procure to this dying Kingdom yet a settled Peace and Happiness, if it be his blessed Will?

These Things being seriously considered by us, we have thought fit, in the Name of the Army, to declare, That all such Members of either House of Parliament as are already with the Army, or, for the securing of their Persons, and for the Ends aforesaid, are forced to absent themselves from *Westminster*, that we shall hold and esteem them as Persons in whom the public Trust of the Kingdom is still remaining, though they cannot, for the present, sit as a Parliament, with Freedom and Safety, at *Westminster*; and by whose Advice and Counsels we desire to govern ourselves in the managing these weighty Affairs: And to that End we invite them to make Repair to this Army, to join with us, in this great Cause, we being resolved, and do hereby faithfully oblige ourselves, to stand by them therein, and to live and die with them against all Opposition whatsoever; and, in particular, we do hold ourselves bound to own that honourable Act of the Speaker of the House of Commons, who, upon the Grounds he himself expressed in his Declaration sent unto us, hath actually withdrawn himself: And hereupon we do further engage to use our utmost and speedy Endeavours, that he and those Members of either House that are thus inforced away from their Attendance at *Westminster*,

ster may, with Freedom and Security, sit there, An. 23. Car. I.
and again discharge their Trust as a free and le- 1647.
gal Parliament; and, in the mean Time, we do
declare against that late Choice of a new Speaker
by some Gentlemen at *Westminster*, as contrary
to all Right, Reason, Law, and Custom: And
we profess ourselves to be most clearly satisfied
in all our Judgments, and are also confident the
Kingdom will herein concur with us, that, as
Things now stand, there is no free nor legal
Parliament sitting, being, through the aforesaid
Violence, at present, suspended. And that the
Orders, Votes, or Resolutions forced from the
Houses on *Monday* the 26th of *July* last, as also
all such as shall pass in this Assembly of some few
Lords and Gentlemen at *Westminster*, under
what Pretence and Colour soever, are void and
null, and ought not to be submitted to by the
free-born Subjects of *England*. And that we
may prevent that Slavery designed upon us and
the Nation, and that the Kingdom may be re-
stored to the happy State of a visible Govern-
ment now eclipsed and darkened, we hold our-
selves bound, by our Duty to God and the King-
dom, to bring to condign Punishment the Au-
thors and Promoters of that unparalleld Vio-
lence done to the Parliament, and, in that, to
all the free-born Subjects of *England* that are, or
hereafter shall be; and therefore we are resolved
to march up towards *London*, where we do ex-
pect that the well-affected People of that City
will deliver up unto us (or otherwise put into
safe Custody, so as they may be reserved to a le-
gal Trial) the Eleven impeached Members that
have again thrust themselves into the Manage-
ment of public Affairs, by this wicked Design;
and that all others will give us such Assistance
therein, that the Members of both Houses may
receive due Encouragement to return to *West-*
minster, there to sit with all Freedom, and so to
perform their Trust as shall conduce to the Set-
tlement of this distracted Kingdom; and to in-
dict

AN. 23. CAR. I.
1647.

August.

‘ flict ſuch Punishments upon thoſe late Offenders,
‘ as ſhall deter any for the future to make the like
‘ Attempt.

‘ *We appeal to all the Kingdom if we have not*
‘ *had a very tender Care of the City of London;*
‘ *their Commiſſioners will witneſs it* ; our Lives
‘ have not been dear unto us for the Public Good;
‘ and being now reſolv’d, by the Aſſiſtance of God,
‘ to bring theſe Delinquents to their deſerved Pu-
‘ niſhment, as that than which there cannot be
‘ any Thing of more public Concernment to the
‘ Kingdom, we truſt, if it ſhall come to that, our
‘ Blood ſhall not be accounted too dear a Price
‘ for the Accompliſhment of it; and if any in the
‘ City will engage themſelves, againſt us, to pro-
‘ tect thoſe Perſons, and ſo put the Kingdom again
‘ into a new and miſerable War, the Blood muſt
‘ be laid to the Account of ſuch Perſons as are the
‘ Authors thereof.

‘ And, laſtly, becauſe it is the main Engine of
‘ our and the Kingdom’s Enemies to render us
‘ odious, by poſſeſſing the Minds of Men that we
‘ gape only after the Plunder of this great and
‘ wealthy City; as the Experience of the contrary
‘ Carriage in all Towns that we have taken yield-
‘ eth unto us a Teſtimony beyond the Example of
‘ any Army, ſo we do from our Hearts declare,
‘ that we abhor the Thought thereof: And we
‘ doubt not but the World ſhall ſee our Actions
‘ anſwerable to our Profeſſions, and that we ſhall
‘ not cauſe any Man to ſuffer but by his own De-
‘ fault; and that God will manifeſt we have only
‘ in our Eyes that Juſtice may have a free Courſe,
‘ the Parliament a free Sitting and Voting, and a
‘ full Vindication of the late Violence done to
‘ them.

‘ And as for the City of *Weſtmiſter*, the Bo-
‘ rough of *Southwark*, the Hamlets, and the reſt
‘ of the Suburbs and Out-parts, as we are inform’d
‘ that they are not ſo ready to engage themſelves in
‘ a new War as ſome would have them, ſo we are

‘ ſen-
‘ This Paſſage in *Italic* is omitted in Mr. Ruſſeworth’s *Collection*.

sensible of the hard Condition they are brought
 into, even by them that claim a Right against both
 Houses of Parliament, (a strange Claim against
 a Parliament, though more reasonable against
 others) not to be subjected to a Militia without
 their own Consent; and yet will not be content-
 ed unless they may have others subjected unto
 them, and lay what Burthens they please upon
 them, without allowing them any Part of Vote
 or Consent with them; in which Points of com-
 mon Right and Equity we shall not be wanting,
 in a due Way, to assist them for the obtaining of
 their just Desires and Immunities; it being our
 chief Aim to settle Peace, with Truth and Righte-
 ousness, throughout the Kingdom, and that none
 may be oppressed in his just Freedom and Liber-
 ties, much less the Parliament itself: Which be-
 ing duly settled, we shall be as ready also to assure
 unto the King his just Rights and Authority, as
 any that pretend it never so much for the better
 upholding of an ill Cause, and the Countenance
 of tumultuous Violence against the Parliament.
 The which our honest, just, and necessary Un-
 dertakings, as we are resolved to pursue with the
 utmost Hazard of our Lives and Fortunes, so we
 doubt not but we shall find God's accustomed
 Goodness and Assistance with us therein, till we
 have brought them to a good and happy Conclu-
 sion for this poor, distracted, and languishing
 Kingdom.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 August.

*By the Appointment of his Excellency Sir Thomas
 Fairfax and his Council of War,*

J. RUSHWORTH, *Secretary.*

The same Declaration, from the General, was Sir Thomas
 sent to the City; which being back'd by the whole Fairfax marches
 Power of the Army's Encampment on Hounslow Heath, and a Party of Col. Rainsborough's into that City,
 without Opposi-
 tion;
 Horse entering Southwark, and planting Ordnance
 against the Gate on the Bridge, the Citizens were
 soon brought to a Submission; they consented to
 the

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

August.

And the Citizens reverse all their late Proceedings against the Army.

the General's Proposals, and admitted him into the City; they revoked a ⁸ long Declaration published by Order of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons in Common Council assembled, a few Days before, wherein all the present Confusions were charg'd to the Army's Account; they sent Letters to the General, by a Committee of Aldermen and Commons, to congratulate his Excellency's Arrival in *London*; they gave Orders to prepare for him a Present of a Basin and Ewer of Gold to the Value of above 1000*l.* and also invited him and his Officers to a splendid Entertainment at the *Guildhall*: But the General, well knowing all this to be a forced Compliment, declin'd accepting of these Peace-Offerings; giving the Citizens for a Reason, That the Settlement of the Nation demanded his whole Time and Attention.—Mr. *Ludlow* makes this shrewd Remark upon the Behaviour of the Citizens at this Crisis: 'The Face of Affairs in the City was at this Time very various, according to the different Advices they received; for upon the Report of the Advance of the Army, and the taking of some of their Scouts, they cried out, *Treat, Treat*: And at another Time, being informed that Men lifted in great Numbers, the Word was, *Live and die, Live and die*; but when *Southwark* had let in part of the Army, and joined with them, they return'd to the former Cry of *Treat, Treat*; to which the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council consenting, were ready to admit the Army as Friends, being not able to oppose them as Enemies.'—To this Lord *Holles* adds ^b, 'That, some few Days after, Sir *Thomas Fairfax* and the whole Army marched in Triumph, with Lawrel in their Hats as Conquerors, through the subdued City of *London*, to shew it was at his Mercy; which, says his Lordship, was an airy Vanity, I confess above my Understanding, and might have raised a Spirit of Indignation, not so easily to have been laid. But a high-

^a This Declaration of the City is in *Rushworths*, Vol. VI. p. 648.

^b *Memoirs*, p. 168.

higher Insolency of an Army compos'd of so mean People, and a more patient humble Submission and Bearing of a great and populous City, but a little before so full of Honour and Greatness, was, I think, never heard of.'

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
August.

To return to *Westminster*.

The Lords, having read the foregoing Declaration from the General and his Council of War, to shew their Gratitude for his signal Services, voted, That they approved of it, and of all his Proceedings in bringing up the Army in Pursuance of those Ends: That he should have the Thanks of their House for the same; and that he be desired to take Care, for the future, that the Parliament sit in Safety and Freedom, to discharge the great Affairs of the Kingdom, and be protected from Tumults and Disorders. Ordered also, That a Chair be set for him within the Bar of the House, when he is called in to receive their Thanks. Accordingly the Earl of *Mulgrave* and the Lord *Wharton*, being appointed to go to the General and bring him to the House, he came, and was placed in a Chair; when the Speaker acquainted him with the Order, and gave him Thanks in the Name of the House of Lords. The same was done to him also by the Commons.

The General receives the Thanks of both Houses.

Ordered, 'That a Committee of Lords may be named to meet with one from the Commons, to examine into the Matter of Force and Violence done to the two Houses of Parliament, and to find out the Persons that have been Actors, Abettors, Contrivers, Promoters, or Encouragers of it; to state the Matter of Fact, and to report the same to the House with their Opinions on it, what they think fit to be done for the Vindication of the two Houses, and for their future Security.' Agreed to by the Commons.

Inquiry ordered to be made after the Authors of the late Tumults.

An Ordinance was pass'd for making Sir *Thomas Fairfax* Constable of the *Tower of London*, with Power

An. 23. Car. I. 1647. Power to make a Lieutenant under him for one Year, unless both Houses, in the mean Time, should otherwise order.

August.

Aug. 6. Post Merid. The Parliament, to shew their Gratitude to the Army still further, ordered a Month's Pay to be provided and freely bestowed on the Non-Commission Officers and private Soldiers of Horse, Foot, and Dragoons of the Army.

Power was also given by the Houses, to their Committee, for finding out the Persons concerned in the late Tumults, that they should also enquire for and find out the Promoters, Framers, or Contrivers of the Engagement and Association, declared against by the Houses the twenty-fourth of *July* last, or that have been engaged by it. Also to examine who have raised or acted, or endeavoured to raise, any Force in Maintenance of the said Engagement and Association, declared against by the Houses.

All Reformado Officers and Soldiers were ordered to depart from *London*, and not to come within twenty Miles of it.

After the Proceedings of this busy Day were ended, the Lords seem to have taken a long Recess; they did not meet again till the tenth; the Committees of both Houses being busy all this Time in searching after the Authors and Contrivers of the last Riots; nor was the House of Commons less deeply employed, for they sent up, that Day, to the Lords, an Order of their own, That untill their House had received Reparation for the Force and Violence offered to both Houses, they would not meddle with any particular Business; which the Lords also agreed to.

The Lords pass an Ordinance for annulling all Proceedings during the Absence of the Speakers, &c.

The House of Commons had met on the ninth, but did nothing material, except debating, in a Committee of the whole House, an Ordinance sent down from the Lords, for the making void all Acts, Orders, and Ordinances, from the Violence offered to the Parliament till the Return of both Speakers, viz. those concerning the Militia of

the City of *London*, and the Declaration against Engagement, with that for the King's Coming: He were to be declared void for that Time, a Declaration to be drawn accordingly, and these Votes the Part thereof. The House being resumed, this Report made, the Question was put, Whether to agree as aforesaid? The House being divided, the Numbers were 95 Yeas, and 94 Noes; three Members, who were present at putting the Question, and yet withdrew into the Committee-room, and affirmed they were not told, being desired to vote, declaring in the Negative, the Speaker gave it accordingly.—A remarkably full Session, for the Time, and shews how near the Parties of Presbyterian and Independent were upon the Scale; which was evidently turned in favour of the latter by the great Weight of the Majority: Who, like the surly *Goth*, in *Roman Story*, were ready to throw in the Sword upon the least occasion.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

August.

To which the
Commons refused
their Consent.

Aug. 13. The *Journals* of both Houses begin Day with an Order of Thanks to Mr. *Marshall* and Mr. *Nye*, for their great Pains taken the day before; and that they be desired to print and publish their Sermons.

On Engagement of the Members of both Houses absented themselves and went to the Army, read in that of the Lords, *in hæc Verba*:

Die Mercurii, 4to Augusti, 1647.

WE the Members of both Houses of Parliament, who absent ourselves from the Service of the Parliament, by reason of the Force and Violence thereunto offered by a tumultuous multitude, having received from his Excellency *Thomas Fairfax*, a Declaration, intituled, *A Declaration of his Excellency and his Council of War, on the Behalf of themselves and the whole Army, shewing the Grounds of their present Ad-*

The Engagement
of the Members
that left the
Houses, and went
to the Army,

242 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

August.

‘*vance towards the City of London: And having*
 ‘*perused the same, we look upon it as a Declara-*
 ‘*tion full of Truth; the Matter of Fact being well*
 ‘*known unto most of us, who have been Eye and*
 ‘*Ear-witnesses thereof; full of Christian, noble, and*
 ‘*public Affection to the Good, Peace, and Prosper-*
 ‘*ity of this Kingdom; full of Integrity and Faith-*
 ‘*fulness to the true Interest of the *English* Nation;*
 ‘*and full of undaunted and generous Resolution to*
 ‘*assert the Honour and Freedom of the Parliament;*
 ‘*and effectually to vindicate it from the Force and*
 ‘*Violence whereby it hath been of late trampled*
 ‘*under the Feet of a Rabble of People, unto which*
 ‘*Force it is still exposed, so as it may be exercised*
 ‘*upon them at Pleasure. And whilst the Parlia-*
 ‘*ment remaineth in such a Condition, although it*
 ‘*be not dissolvable but by Act of Parliament, yet it*
 ‘*is suspended from acting as a Parliament: In all*
 ‘*these Things, and generally throughout, our*
 ‘*Sense so fully agreeth with what is expressed in*
 ‘*that Declaration of the Army, that we cannot but*
 ‘*receive it with much Approbation, and also with*
 ‘*great Thankfulness to God in the first Place;*
 ‘*and next, under him, to this ever-faithful Ar-*
 ‘*my, for that tender Sense expressed therein of our*
 ‘*Honour and Security, who absent ourselves from*
 ‘*the Parliament, in regard of that Force; and for*
 ‘*that high Engagement of the Army to live and*
 ‘*die with us in this Cause: Whereupon we can-*
 ‘*not but mutually engage ourselves, as hereby we*
 ‘*do, to live and die with Sir *Thomas Fairfax* and*
 ‘*the Army, in Vindication of the Honour and*
 ‘*Freedom of Parliament: And we cannot but ob-*
 ‘*serve the special Providence of God in holding*
 ‘*up so extraordinarily this Army, and reserving it*
 ‘*to take off the Reproach and Scorn of this Na-*
 ‘*tion, and to raise up again, from the Depth of*
 ‘*Contempt, that once so-much-honoured and*
 ‘*high esteemed Name of a Parliament.*

‘*And whereas in the said Declaration it is de-*
 ‘*sired, That we, as Persons upon whom the*
 ‘*public Trust still remaineth, tho’, for the pre-*
 ‘*sent,*

sent, we cannot exercise the same in a parliamentary Way, would advise his Excellency and his Council of War in such Things as may be for the Good of the Kingdom, and for attaining the Ends aforesaid; we do declare that we shall be ever ready to do it, upon all Occasions, in such a Capacity as we may, till we shall be enabled again to discharge our Trust in a free Parliament; which we conceive we can never do, untill the Houses of Parliament may be absolute Judges and Masters of their own Securities: And that such traiterous and audacious Offenders as have endeavoured, with so high an Hand, to destroy the highest Authority, (as by the Particulars, so fully and clearly expressed in the Declaration of the Army, may appear) shall receive condign Punishment; or, at least, the Parliament put in such a Condition as that we may be able to bring them thereunto: And we trust in God, through his accustomed Blessing upon this Army, and his Assistance in their honest and just Undertakings, the Parliament shall speedily be put again into a Condition to sit like a Parliament of *England*: And we hope that every true-hearted *Englishman* will put his helping Hand to so necessary, so publick, and so honourable a Work as is the Vindicating of the Freedom and Honour of the Parliament, and wherein the Freedom and Honour of all the freeborn People of this Nation are involved.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

MANCHESTER, *Speaker of the House of Peers.*

SALISBURY,	NORTHUMBERLAND,
MULGRAVE,	HOWARD,
DENBIGH,	GREY of Wark,
KENT,	SAY and SELE.

WILLIAM LENTHALL, *Speaker of the House of Commons.*

PHILIP LISLE,	JOHN FIENNES,
THOMAS GREY,	ARTH. HESSLERIGGE,
WILLIAM PIERPOINT,	WILLIAM ARMYN,
HENRY MILDMAI,	JAMES TEMPLE,
NATHANIEL FIENNES,	EDMOND PRIDEAUX,

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

MILES CORBETT,	GODFREY BOSVILLE,
JOHN DANVERS,	HENRY DARLEY,
FRANCIS ALLEN,	THOMAS BOONE,
JOHN EVELYN,	PETER TEMPLE,
GEORGE FLEETWOOD,	PHILIP SMITH,
GEORGE FENWICK,	MICHAEL LIVESAY,
JOHN BLACKISTONE,	HENRY HAMMOND,
THOMAS SCOTT,	GREGORY NORTON,
JAMES SCOTT, <i>Major</i> ,	THOMAS JERVOISE,
ROGER HILL,	WILLIAM CONSTABLE,
HENRY MARTYN,	WILLIAM SAY,
CORNELIUS HOLLAND,	EDMUND LUDLOW,
OLIVER ST. JOHN,	EDWARD DUNCH,
WILLIAM LEMON,	JOHN BINGHAM,
WILLIAM MONSON,	AUGUSTINE SKINNER,
HUMPHRY EDWARDS,	JOHN TRENCHARD,
JOHN WEAVER,	SAMUEL MAYNE,
JOHN CORBETT,	BENJAMIN WESTON,
THOMAS LISTER,	FRANCIS THORNHAGH,
HENRY SMITH,	LAWRENCE WHITAKER,
NICHOLAS LOVE,	JOHN CROWTHER,
FRANCIS PIERPOINT,	GEORGE PIGGOTT,
HENRY LAWRENCE,	JOHN BAMPFIELD.
THOMAS OUGAYNE,	

Of which the
Lords declare
their Approba-
tion :

The Lords approved of this Engagement, and ordered it to be communicated to the Commons for their Approbation also. At the same Time they sent a Message to remind the Commons of those Votes sent from the Lords to them on the 6th Instant, together with a Declaration from Sir *Thomas Fairfax* and the Council of War, sent down at the same Time : That the Lords do desire the Concurrence of the House of Commons to those Votes, and to the Approbation of the said Declaration ; conceiving it to be essential to the Vindication of the Honour and Freedom of the Parliament : That having hitherto received no Answer therein, they conceive it fit and necessary at this Time, to express to that House, that they hold themselves acquitted and discharged of any ill Consequence that may ensue upon such a Precedent,

dent, and, by that, occasion the Retardment of An. 23. Car. 1.
the Settlement of Peace. 1647.

But the Commons had debated the Army's last Declaration, on the 10th till late at Night; when But the Com-
the Question was put, Whether to agree with the mons not con-
Lords in this Declaration? and it was carried in curing therein,
the Negative by 110 against 76.

Another Part of the Lords Message was to let the Commons know, That they were informed the Committee of the City of *London* did still act under Pretence of that Order, drawn from the House by Force, on the 26th of *July* last; which they conceive is likely to tend to the Disturbance of the Peace of the Parliament and City: 'The Lords do declare that, by so doing, they act without Authority; and whatever they shall act or do in that Kind, they account them answerable for.' The Commons Consent was desired also to this Particular; as likewise to an Ordinance for giving Power to a Sub-committee to examine Persons upon Oath, under Secrecy, concerning the Force and Violence offered to the Parliament.

Lastly, To let them know that this House intended to adjourn to *Wednesday* the 18th Inst.

The Lord *Montague*, from the Committee appointed to attend the King's Person, sent Word to the Lords that the King had acquainted them with his Resolution to go, the next Day, to *Oatlands*, where they should attend him. Dated from *Stoke*, *August* 12.

August 18. The House of Lords met again according to Adjournment, when they received a Message from the Commons of several Particulars, but nothing satisfactory as to their former Votes as yet. This Affair had been again canvassed in that House the Day before, and they had two Divisions upon it, very near run; the one,

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

A Conference is
held thereupon.

Whether the Question should be now put? which was carried by 77 against 72: The other, to agree with the Lords in their Declaration; lost by 73 against 75. And though the Commons sent up an Ordinance of their own the next Day, with the same Title as the former, yet the Lords rejected it on the first Reading: Whereupon it was ordered to have a present Conference with the Commons thereupon; the Managers of which being returned, Mr. *Lisle* reported that the Earl of *Manchester* delivered the Sense of the Lords to this Effect:

‘The Lords having formerly sent a Vote, of the 6th Instant, to the House of Commons, declaring that all the Acts and Orders passed, under the Force upon the Houses the 26th of *July* last, and since, untill the Return of the Speakers, were null and void; and having desired the Concurrence of the House of Commons thereunto, as also to several Declarations, the one of Sir *Thomas Fairfax* and the Council of War, in the Name of themselves and the Army; the other of the Lords and Commons which were with the Army; which the Lords having approved of, did likewise desire their Approbation of the said Declarations; and having received no Answer, being after by their Lordships put in mind of all those Particulars, have therefore desired this Conference, to let them know that their Lordships conceive themselves bound, in Justice to the Kingdom and Parliament, to insist upon those Votes and Declarations, and to desire their Concurrence in the Votes and Approbation of the said Declarations, for these Reasons, viz.

1. ‘It being apparent to all the World, and acknowledged by both Houses, that there was a visible, horrid, insolent, and actual Force upon the Houses of Parliament; and many Members, with both the Speakers, forced from the said Houses; it will prove a dangerous Example and Precedent to maintain the Exercise of an Authority, as then lawful, at the Time when the Parliament lay under such a Force to be exercised upon it at pleasure.

2. ‘If

2. ' If any, sitting under such Force, may exercise the Authority of Parliament, and those Acts which they shall do at that Time be accounted valid, and not null, it will not be in the Power of any to vindicate and deliver the Parliament from such Force and Violence; but they will be liable to Censure for resisting such Authority as is pretended to be lawful in such a Case; and those who have now acted under such Authority, to raise Forces and cast the Kingdom into a new War, will, under Pretence of that Authority, be free from being questioned for the same, though some of them may have been the principal Agents in contriving this Mischief.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
August.

' The Lords, in their last Message, did express to that House, that if the great Affairs of the Kingdom, and the Settlement of the Peace thereof, shall be longer retarded for Want of their Concurrence in that which the Lords judge to be essential to the Vindication of the Honour and Freedom of Parliament, they conceived it fit and necessary to express that they held themselves acquitted and discharged of any ill Consequences that might ensue: Thereupon the Lords have commanded me to declare the same unto you again; and that they may acquit themselves to all the World, to have used their Endeavours that the Parliament may be put into a Condition speedily to go on for the Settlement of the Peace of the Kingdom, so much desired by them, they have appointed me to offer unto you, in pursuance of their Votes, an Ordinance for declaring void and null all Ordinances, Votes, Orders and Acts made and done since the Force upon the Houses, from July 26 untill August 6, to which they desire your Concurrence.'

Hereupon the Question being put for reading the said Ordinance sent from the Lords, it was carried in the Affirmative by 86 against 63; and the same was twice read and committed.

248 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 23. Car. 1. A Letter from the Commissioners of Scotland
1647. was read :

August. For the Right Honourable the SPEAKER of the
House of PEERS pro Tempore,

Worcester-House, Aug. 17, 1647 -

Right Honourable,

The Scots Com-
missioners com-
plain of their Se-
cretary's being
stopped at New-
castle.

WE cannot but, with great Sense of the
many Injuries we suffer daily, acquaint
your Lordships therewith as they fall out.

Not long ago we made known to the Honour-
able Houses, that the Earl of *Lauderdale*, one of
our Members, was stopped violently, and denied
Access to his Majesty, by Sir *Thomas Fairfax's*
Soldiers, contrary to the Agreement betwixt the
Kingdoms, whereof, as yet, we have had no Re-
paration; and now our Secretary, Mr. *Chiesly*,
being sent by us to the Kingdom of *Scotland*, is
stopped and detained at *Newcastle* by the Gov-
ernor thereof, Mr. *Lilbourne*; alledging such to be
the Condition of Affairs now betwixt the King-
doms, that, without the General's Order, he
was not to permit any to pass. Mr. *Chiesly* told
him, that the Kingdom of *Scotland* had done no-
thing that might give Cause to interrupt their se-
mer Correspondency and mutual Amity; de-
claring that he would not give Ground of a Breach
of that happy Union betwixt the Nations, shew-
ing unto him our Pass, which ever heretofore has
been reputed, to our own Servants, sufficient;
and telling him he was our Secretary, sent by us
into *Scotland*; and if that could not procure him
Liberty of Passage, he hoped he would acknow-
ledge the Authority of the Speaker of the House
of Commons Pass as a sufficient Warrant: But
he answered, he was to obey the General's Or-
ders, and if he could not produce that, he would
not let him pass.

If this be not an high Infringement of the Law
of Nations, and of the public Faith betwixt the
Kingdoms, yea, and of your own Authority

ve it to yourselves to judge; hoping your
 ships will cause Reparation to be made to
 Kingdom of *Scotland* for those Multitude of
 s; such as the Intercepting of our Letters,
 olent stopping their Commissioners from the
 and now denying their Servants free Pas-
 that Kingdom, which, we conceive, the
 rable Houses would not have taken well
 like Acts of Violence had been done to
 Commissioners Servants, whilst they were
 land.

ffectual Remedies against such Injustice
 olence be not seasonably provided by the
 m of the Honourable Houses, we cannot
 w we can be here, in the Capacity of Com-
 mers, to discharge the Trust committed to
 We rest

Your Lordships humble Servants,

CHARLES ERSKINE.
 HEN. KENNEDY.
 RO. BARCLAY.

answer to this Letter was drawn up, read,
 red to be sent to the Commons for their
 ence; but it is not entered in the *Journals*.

20. A Letter from Sir *Thomas Fairfax*,
 Remonstrance or Declaration of the Army
 was read in both Houses: The latter
 long, for which Reason Mr. *Rushworth*
 en no more than one single Paragraph of
 ch, he says, relates particularly to the
 f the whole, viz. the purging of the House
 nions from those Members of it the Army

But as this Remonstrance contains an
 storical Narrative of the Times, we shall
 t Length; and more especially because,
 e *Collector* has omitted it, it is now no
 lse to be found, that we know of, but in
 ds *Journals*: Observing only, that the
 House

An. 27. Car. I.
 1647.
 August.

we leave it to yourselves to judge; hoping your Lordships will cause Reparation to be made to the Kingdom of *Scotland* for those Multitude of Injuries; such as the Intercepting of our Letters, and violent stopping their Commissioners from the King, and now denying their Servants free Passage to that Kingdom, which, we conceive, the Honourable Houses would not have taken well if the like Acts of Violence had been done to their Commissioners Servants, whilst they were in *Scotland*.

‘ If effectual Remedies against such Injustice and Violence be not seasonably provided by the Wisdom of the Honourable Houses, we cannot see how we can be here, in the Capacity of Commissioners, to discharge the Trust committed to us. We rest

Your Lordships humble Servants,

CHARLES ERSKINE.
HEN. KENNEDY.
RO. BARCLAY.

An Answer to this Letter was drawn up, read, and ordered to be sent to the Commons for their concurrence; but it is not entered in the *Journals*.

August 20. A Letter from Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, with a Remonstrance or Declaration of the Army closed, was read in both Houses: The latter very long, for which Reason Mr. *Rushworth* hath given no more than one single Paragraph of; which, he says, relates particularly to the design of the whole, viz. the purging of the House of Commons from those Members of it the Army disliked. But as this Remonstrance contains an exact historical Narrative of the whole, we give it at Length; and more particularly the Collection of the same, where else to find the same, the Lords

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

250 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
August.

House of Lords voted their Approbation of this Remonstrance; ordered that a Letter should be sent to Sir Thomas Fairfax from their Speaker, to give him Thanks for the Continuance of his Care to preserve the Honour and Freedom of Parliament; and that both the Letter and Declaration should be printed and published.

The Letter, in which the Army's Declaration was inclosed, is as follows:

*For the Rt. Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.*

My Lord, Kingston, Aug. 19, 1647.

Another Letter
from Sir Thomas
Fairfax,

THE tender and deep Sense which myself and the Army have of the Difficulties and Dangers under which your Lordship, with the Right Honourable Lords, and faithful and worthy Members of the House of Commons, lately driven away to the Army (as also ourselves and others that love the Peace of the Kingdom and Freedom of Parliaments, notwithstanding the said just and honourable Resolutions, Proceedings, and Endeavours of the Right Honourable House of Peers) do still lie under, hath produced this Remonstrance from us; whereof I have here inclosed sent your Lordship a Copy, and those Considerations and Resolutions therein expressed; which as they are, in the present Case, most necessary for your Lordships, ours, and the Kingdom's Safety, Quiet, and Welfare, so we hope they will appear just and honest, and accordingly be accepted and approved by your Lordships, as proceeding from the hearty Affections and sincere Intentions of your Lordship's and the Kingdom's Servants here, and especially of

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

THO. FAIRFAX.

A REMONSTRANCE from his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax, and the Army under his Command, concerning their just and clear Proceedings hitherto, in the Behalf of the Parliament, Kingdom, and themselves.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

At the Head-quarters at Kingston, Aug. 18, 1647.

WHEN, by the Blessing of God upon the Endeavours of this Army and other Forces of the Parliament, the adverse Garrisons within this Kingdom were dissipated and reduced, a present Quiet and Freedom of Trade, and all Commerce and Business restored to all Parts of the Kingdom, and an hopeful Way made for settling of a sound and lasting Peace, on good Terms, for the Interest of the Kingdom: Instead of the hoped Fruit of our Labours and Hazards, and of the Kingdom's vast Expence, (in the dispensing of Justice and Righteousness, and the settling and upholding of common Right and Freedom to the Subjects of this Nation) we found immediately the cross Workings of a strong and prevalent Party in the Parliament and Kingdom, who (walking under the Mask of the Parliament's Friends, but being, in Truth, Men of corrupt and private Ends and Interests, different from, and destructive to, the real and common Interest of the Kingdom) made use of their Power to obstruct and pervert Justice, to injure, oppress, and crush the peaceable and well-affected People of the Kingdom; to abridge and overthrow all just Freedom and Liberty, and drive on Designs to set up a Party and Faction in the Parliament and Kingdom, and (by the Advantage of a perpetual Parliament) to domineer over, and enslave the Kingdom to Posterity: And, for that End, to make such a Peace with the King, if any, as without any just Provision for the common and true Interest of the People, and Security thereof for the future, would serve only to make up and establish their own Greatness,

And a Remonstrance from him and the Army, in Vindication of all their Proceedings.

and

An. 23. Car. 1.^e

1647.

August.

and the affected Domination of themselves and their Party over all others.

To all which Ends, as, before this Parliament, the ignominious Names of *Puritan* and *Non-conformist*, and the specious Pretences for settling of Order, Decency, and Uniformity in Religion, were made use of, to the Prejudice, Trouble, and suppressing of all that appeared, either for the Truth and Power of Religion, or for the Rights and Liberties of the Kingdom, and against advancing, at once, both of an Ecclesiastical and Civil Tyranny; so this Generation of Men, in the Application of the Parliament's Power, (succeeding the former in the Exercise of the King's) have made use of the odious Names of *Brownists*, *Anabaptists*, *Independents*, *Hereticks*, *Schismaticks*, or Sectaries of one Sort or other, to blast such Men, in whom the Truth and Power of Religion, or a just Sense of the common Interest of the Kingdom hath appeared; and have held forth the Pretences of Reformation and Uniformity, to colour and countenance their Designs of setting up their own irreligious or Pharisaical and domineering Faction, to the Oppression of all other People: And herein they have had a great Advantage to further their aforesaid Designs, by reason of the Jealousies which many conscientious Men of the Presbyterian Judgment have entertained concerning this Army, concerning divers other eminent and worthy Instruments of the Kingdom's Good (being in Places of public Trust and Power) who were supposed to be of the Independent Way.

In pursuance of their aforesaid Designs, they endeavoured, and by their Power and Influence upon the Parliament, and the Advantage of such Pretences as aforesaid, very much prevail'd, to put out of all Places of Power or public Trust, the most sober and conscientious Men, and such as had approved themselves faithful to the public Interest throughout all the late Troubles, and to put in debauch'd and dissolute Men, or such as would,

for

for Advantage, serve their private Interests; and for that End (in Cases where they could not otherwise prevail) procured such Garrisons to be slighted, such Powers to be recalled, though more necessary to have been continued, which they found in the Hands of Persons of the former Sorts; and such to be continued, though less necessary, as they found in the Hands of the latter. And, the better to strengthen themselves in their Designs, closing with a very powerful Party in the City of *London*, they first, with much Activity, endeavoured, and prevailed, to new-model the Common Council, and form the same to their own Party; and then stirred them up to petition, amongst other Things concurrent to their Ends, for the Alteration of the City Militia, who by their continual, violent, and pressing Importunity at the Parliament's Doors, wrung from the Parliament an Ordinance for that Purpose; whereby they procured the Power of that Militia (the special Influence whereof upon the City and Kingdom, and upon the Parliament itself, being the only Guard they had for their safe Sitting, is evident to all Men) to be taken out of those Hands in which it had been continued without Prejudice, and with great and known Security and Advantage both to the Parliament, City, and Kingdom, throughout the late Troubles, and this without any Exception, either then or since made against them; and to be put into the Hands of such others as were, at best, of doubtful Affections to the Interest of the Parliament and Kingdom; or, indeed, to Men given up and engaged to the private Interests and Designs of the said factious Party; as hath since too evidently appeared, and as in the late Declaration of the Army, concerning the Grounds of our Advance towards *London*, is more fully demonstrated. And finding this Army not for their Turns, they made it their main Work to disband or break it in Pieces, even before the Relief of *Ireland* was provided for, or the Peace of this Kingdom settled.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

And

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

August.

‘ And though all this went under the Pretence
 ‘ of easing the present Burthens of the Kingdom,
 ‘ yet at the same Time they designed and went
 ‘ about to put the Kingdom to the Expence and
 ‘ Trouble of raising and forming a new Force,
 ‘ under Pretence as for the Service of *Ireland*, but
 ‘ evidently designed, and so framed, as to serve
 ‘ their own Ends and Purposes aforesaid in *Eng-*
 ‘ *land*: And many of them being filled and act-
 ‘ ed with personal Envy, and others with Ma-
 ‘ lignity of Principles and Interest against this Ar-
 ‘ my, and the Work of God by it, it would not
 ‘ serve their Turns to break or disband it, but it
 ‘ must be done with all possible Dishonour, Inju-
 ‘ ry, Oppression and Provocation that they could
 ‘ put upon it. And it was too evident that their
 ‘ Endeavour was not only to put it off without the
 ‘ Honour or Satisfaction due to it for the Service
 ‘ it had done, but to disband it on such Terms as
 ‘ to subject and expose all, and even the most faith-
 ‘ ful, Servants of the Parliament and Kingdom,
 ‘ both in the Army and elsewhere, unto Oppres-
 ‘ sion or Undoing, or to the Mercy of their own
 ‘ and such other Men’s malicious and inveniomed
 ‘ Spirits which could promise no better. For the
 ‘ more full and particular Demonstration of all
 ‘ which, we refer all knowing Men unto the Prac-
 ‘ tices and Proceedings against this Army, unto
 ‘ the Times, by their Procurement, appointed for
 ‘ the Disbanding of it in several Parts, without just
 ‘ and equal Satisfaction; which have been in part
 ‘ remonstrated in Papers sent from this Army, and
 ‘ published before our coming up to *St. Alban’s*.

‘ Upon Consideration of all this, and upon the
 ‘ Resolutions (which their own Abuses and Pro-
 ‘ vocations, put upon the Army, had raised in the
 ‘ whole Body of it) not to disband without further
 ‘ Satisfaction and Security from the like Abuses in
 ‘ future, we did, in our Representation or Decla-
 ‘ ration sent from *St. Alban’s*, express in general
 ‘ what Things we desired, besides our Concern-
 ‘ ments as Soldiers, to see done or provided for
 ‘ before

before our Disbanding, for settling the Peace of the Kingdom, and securing the common Rights and Liberties thereof, which we were called out to defend and vindicate, and had so long fought for; and having, therewithall, impeached several Members of the House of Commons for their unjust Practices and Designs, to such Purposes as are before expressed, and for endeavouring, in prosecution thereof, to engage this Kingdom in a new War, we added some further Desires, for Prevention of that Mischief of a new War to the Kingdom, and for our own present Security from immediate Ruin, while those other Things might be treated on or considered; and upon the granting of some of them in part, and Hopes given of some others, tho' we could not obtain the rest, and especially not that which we hold most just, equal, and necessary, *viz.* The positive Suspension of those impeached Members from sitting in the House, as Judges in their own Cause, and from their Power in Committees, whereby they have had the Advantage to raise War against us, and to make new Disturbances in the Kingdom; yet the said impeached Members, pretending to withdraw themselves from the Parliament untill their Causes should be heard and tried, and the House giving Consent thereunto, we, out of our Tenderness to Parliament Privileges, and our earnest Desires to yield all Observance to the Parliament, and Satisfaction to the City, (who pretended a full Concurrence with us in our declared Desires for settling the Peace and Liberties of the Kingdom) did, at the Parliament's Command and the City's Request, withdraw the Army to the desired Distance from *London*, and dispersed it further to several Parts of the Kingdom for the Ease of the Country; and proceeded, in a peaceable and regular Way, to prepare and present more particular Charges against the said impeached Members, which, within a few Days after, we accordingly sent up to the House: And the said impeached Mem-

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

August.

Members (having put in a dilatory Answer thereto, with a Plea and Demurrer to divers Particulars therein) pretended that (to avoid any Disturbance or Interruption to the present Proceedings for settling the Public Affairs by the Interposal of their private Cause) they desired Leave and Passes to travel for some Months; which accordingly the Speaker of the House of Commons was ordered, or authorized, to give them, and we (presuming on the House's Caution for their Forthcoming to be tried when the Affairs of the Kingdom were settled, which upon their first Motion of withdrawing we had insisted on) did not gainsay; and thereupon we proceeded in a quiet and hopeful Way to prepare more particular Proposals, in pursuance of our former general Desires, for the present settling of the Peace of the Kingdom, to be tendered to the Commissioners of Parliament residing with the Army for that Purpose: But finding that, while we were thus peaceably proceeding, the said impeached Members, notwithstanding their pretended Desires to travel, did continue in and about London, very active and busy to raise War, or make Disturbances in the Kingdom; and that the Committee of Militia there did comply with them therein, by daily listing of Men, and other Preparations towards War, and sheltering to that End, yea, and entertaining into Service those Reformadoes who, by Ordinance of Parliament, were by them to have been put out of the Liberty of Communication; and finding continual Journeies and Disturbances to our said Proceedings bred in the Army, by the daily Reports of Alarms thereof from the City, we made a particular Address to the Parliament for the restoring of the City Militia into those Hands in which it was before the Ordinance of the 4th of May last; for the Reasonableness of our Desires, where (supposing that we had such a Cause to insist on some Removal of that Power out of the Hands

unto which it was then put, as here before is partly expressed, and in our late Declaration is more fully set forth) we dare confidently appeal to all Men, not engaged against us, whether, for the present Safety and Quiet of the City upon such a Change, and to prevent those Dangers or Disturbances to or in the City, which the Want of a Militia during the Interval (betwixt the ceasing of one and new forming of another) might give Occasion and Advantage unto, especially in such a Juncture of Affairs, there could be any other Way so expedient as to render that Change but an immediate reverting into those Hands in which it was so lately before, who would make up a Militia ready formed to succeed immediately in the Place of the other, without any considerable Intermission or Delay; and whether, at a Time when Jealousies and Distrusts were both so risen and hurtful, as they might occasion no less Distraction or Interruption to any quiet Settlement or Proceedings thereunto, than real Attempts of Mischief would, there could be any Proposal more reasonable or hopeful to beget a Confidence and Acquiescence, as to that Point, in the Parliament, the City, and the Army, than to have that Power restored, for the present, into those Hands, of whose Fidelity to the Common Interest we had all found so ample and unquestioned Proof throughout the most dangerous Times?

Upon our Address, therefore, to the Parliament for that Purpose, the Army being at such Distance as aforesaid, both Houses were pleased, on the 23d of July last, to pass an Ordinance for the returning of the Militia into those Hands, and repealing the Ordinance of the 4th of May, by which it had been changed as before.

Hereupon, hoping that all would quietly succeed to a Settlement in this Kingdom, we went securely to finish our Proposals for that Purpose, the Heads whereof have been since published; withdrew the Head-Quarters to a farther Distance; dispersed the Army to larger Quarters,

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
August.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

August.

for more Ease to the Country; and, upon a Recommendation of the Business of *Ireland* from the Parliament, we had, in less than a Week's Space, prepared and ordered a considerable Force, no less than 4000 Horse and Foot, as Sir *John Temple*, employed from the Parliament about that Business to us, can testify, for a present Relief thereunto: But the restless and treacherous Malice of the Enemies to our and the Kingdom's Peace, taking the supposed Advantage of our Distance and dispersed Posture, which their fair Pretences of peaceable Intentions had induced us into, first they did, without all Colour of Authority, contrive and set on Foot in the City, and many of them entered into a mischievous and desperate Vow and Engagement, tending to the Subversion of the Freedom of Parliament, and the Liberties of this Nation; to the frustrating of those just and public Ends, for which so much Blood and Treasure hath been spilt and spent in the late War, and to the raising of a new War against the Parliament and their Army; which said Engagement both Houses of Parliament did, by their Declaration of the 23d of *July*, adjudge and declare to be High Treason in all that should promote or abet the same; and, within a few Days after, to wit, on *Monday July 26*, there was a Petition brought to the Parliament by the Sheriffs, and some Aldermen and Common Council Men, in the Name of the City of *London*, for the recalling of the said Ordinance of the 23d of *July* concerning the Militia, and the returning of the Militia into those Hands in which it was put by the Ordinance of the 4th of *May*; which Petition was immediately followed and backed with a tumultuous Confluence of Apprentices, and other dissolute and desperate Persons, who committed most horrid and unheard-of Violence upon both Houses, enforcing them to recall both the said Declaration of *July 23*, concerning the said Engagement, and also the said Ordinance of the same Date,

con-

concerning the Militia ; and compelling the Speaker of the House of Commons to resume the Chair after the House was adjourned, and the House to pass such farther Votes concerning the King's present coming to *London*, &c. as they the said Rioters did please ; neither the Guard from the City that then attended the Houses, nor the Lord Mayor, Sheriffs, or any Authority in the City, though sent to for that Purpose, taking any Course to suppress the said Tumult, or relieve the Parliament against that Violence, though it was continued for the Space of eight Hours : And the Houses having next Day adjourned till *Friday, July 30*, there were printed Tickets fix'd upon Posts in and about the City the Day before, inviting the same Persons to the like Confluence at *Westminster* against the Houses next Meeting ; all which hath been more fully, or more assuredly, made known by the Declaration of the Speaker of the House of Commons concerning the same.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

By this Means the Speakers of both Houses, together with most of the Lords, and a very great Number of the most faithful and unquestionable Members of the House of Commons, were driven away, so as they could not with Safety attend their Service in Parliament, nor with Freedom discharge their Trust to the Kingdom therein ; but were forced to fly to their Army for Safety ; so as there was not, nor could then be, any free Meeting or legal Proceeding of Parliament : Notwithstanding which, divers Members of both Houses (who, by the Carriage and Sequel of the Business, will appear to be of the same Party and Confederacy with the aforesaid Enemies to our and the Kingdom's Peace, and with the Authors and Actors both of the said treasonable Engagement and the tumultuous Force upon the Parliament) taking this Opportunity of Time to carry on their Designs, when very few were left, but of their own Party, did continue

An. 22. Car. I.

1647.

August.

to meet in the usual Places at *Westminster*: And having, under Pretence of a Necessity for continuing the Parliament by Adjournment, drawn in some few well-minded Members to sit with them, out of a Scruple least the Parliament should fall for Want of Adjournment, took upon them the Name of both Houses of Parliament: And having, on *Friday, July 30*, chosen a new Speaker, did proceed to vote and act as a Parliament, and adjourned from Time to Time; but of what Party and Confederacy the most of them were, and to what Ends and Interests they acted, will appear by what they did; whereof we shall, for the present, give a Taste in some Particulars, hoping that shortly the whole Journal of their Proceedings may be made public.

First, The said Members of the House of Commons, convened as aforesaid, immediately voted and called in, as to the Service of the House, the Eleven impeached Members; and also those who, upon former Votes of the House, were suspended, or under Question to be put out for Delinquency, and had put in their Cases. With this pretended House of Commons, thus composed, and four or five Lords of the same Model, for a House of Peers, they proceed to set up a Committee for Safety, whereof all or most of the said impeached Members were a Part. This Committee they appointed to join with that same pretended Committee of the City Militia, whose Power was obtained only by the tumultuous Force and Violence aforesaid. To these Committees the most or main of their Proceedings refer; and, by divers pretended Votes, Orders, and Ordinances, procured in the Name of one or both Houses of Parliament, larger Powers were given to these two Committees, for raising of Forces, appointing Chief Commanders, and other Officers; and other vast, unlimited, or unusual Powers were given them; all tending to the raising and levying of a new War within this
King-

Kingdom; upon which many Forces, both of An. 23. Car. I.
 Horse and Foot, were actually levied, and other 1647.
 Preparations of War made: All which were
 intended and designed in Justification, Prosecution, and Maintenance of the aforesaid treasonable Engagement, and of the said Force and Violence done to the Parliament, or of the very same Ends and Interests, and to oppose and hinder the Restitution of the Houses of Parliament to their Honour and Freedom, and the Advance of this their Army for that Purpose, being then upon a March to conduct to *London* the Speakers and Members of both Houses, who, by that Violence, were driven away as aforesaid: Besides the Consideration of the Persons into whose Hands these Powers were committed, this is abundantly evident many other Ways; and especially by that Declaration of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council of *London*, which was first, by that pretended Committee of Safety, ordered, and then, by the pretended Houses, without reading a Word of it, approved, to be published in the Parish Churches, with an Exhortation to the People to take up Arms in Maintenance of the Ends therein expressed; which, though the Pretences were for the Defence of the King, Parliament, and City, then alledged to be in great Danger; (when as indeed none were in Danger but only the Authors, Actors, and Abettors of the traitorous Practices aforesaid) yet the true Ends thereof appeared clearly to be the same with the said treasonable Engagement and Tumult against the Parliament; all of them concentrating, as in other Things, so especially in this, *viz.* To have the King brought up to *London*, without Delay, or any nearer Approach of the Army. And to all these the succeeding Votes of the pretended Houses, for the same Thing, did speedily echo the same Note.

Concerning which Matters (not to examine what Alteration of the Case, since both Houses,

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

and both Kingdoms also, of *England* and *Scotland*, resolved, That it was not safe the King should come to *London*, untill he had given Satisfaction and Security to his People, in relation to those public Ends for which so much Blood and Treasure had been spent) we shall only say thus much to these Men's Intentions and Designs in the Business, That had the King come up to *London*, as they have so often desired and attempted, it is apparent they intended, and would have made use of it, rather to lay the stronger Foundations of a new War, (upon the Ruins of that public Interest contended for in the former, and of all those that had with most Candor, Clearness, and Simplicity of Heart appeared and acted for the same) than any Way to settle thereby a safe and well-grounded Peace. And since they could not rationally expect so easy an obtaining of the King's Person to *London*, upon such a pretended Vote or Declaration of their Desire thereof, it is as evident that they could intend nothing thereby but a more plausible Pretence and Foundation of Quarrel against this Army; thereby to engage or incline to their Assistance the King's Party, and such others as might be caught with the Apprehension thereof as a speedy Way to Peace, the Thing so generally longed for; and by such Assistance gained, the better to ruin this Army, and those faithful Members of Parliament who were retired to it.

For our Parts, we shall rejoice as much as any to see the King brought back to his Parliament; and that not so much in Place, as in Affection and Agreement, on such sound Terms and Grounds as may render both him and the Kingdom safe, quiet, and happy; and shall be as ready as any to bring his Majesty to *London*, when his being there may be likely to produce (not greater Disturbances or Distractions, but) a Peace indeed; and that such as may not, with
the

the Shipwreck of the Public Interest, be shaped
and moulded only to the private Advantages of
a particular Party or Faction; but bottomed chief-
ly on Grounds of common and public Welfare
and Security: And if, without regard to these
Considerations, we would have brought his Ma-
jesty with us to *London* in our late Advance thi-
ther, which our Enemies could not hinder or pre-
judice us in, we had no Cause to doubt, but, as
to Men, we might have had all the Advantages
which our Adversaries promised to themselves
thereby, added to the Strength and Interest of the
Army; and have inverted the Disadvantages up-
on them that they intended against us thereby, so
as his Majesty's so-much-desired Coming to *Lon-
don* might have been much to their Prejudice,
and our Advantage and Security, if we had re-
garded only our own Particulars: But (as at
present our Consciences bear clear Witness to
ourselves, so) we hope God will, in the Issue,
make it clear to others, that we have not mind-
ed, nor been acting, our own Work or Interests,
but the Kingdom's, and every honest Man's in
it.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

August.

Mean while, to return to our Purpose, we
think it is sufficiently cleared, That the Proceed-
ings of those Members, or the major Part of
them, that continued to sit at *Westminster* during
the Absence of the Speakers, the Powers by them
given, the Forces by them levied, and other
Preparations of War thereupon made, were all
designed and driven on in Prosecution and Main-
tenance of the said treasonable Engagement, and
of the Force done upon the Parliament, or for
the same Ends and Interests with them, and to
oppose the Advance of this Army towards *London*,
for Restitution of the Parliament to Honour and
Freedom, and indeed to raise a new War in the
Kingdom, against the Parliament and their Ar-
my, for the Destruction thereof. And the same
may yet further appear by this, that those very
Apprentices, Reformadoes, and others about the
City

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

City, who were the chief Actors in the said Engagement and Tumult, were afterwards most trusted and employed, and most active in those Preparations for War.

By what we have here said, and what hath been declared and published from us, and from the Speakers and aforesaid Members of both Houses, and by the whole Series of our own and our Enemies Actions and Carriages, compared together, it may appear how tender we have been, not only of the Authority and just Privileges of Parliament, and of the Safety, Peace, and Welfare, both of the Kingdom and the City, but even towards those our Enemies themselves; seeking only Things necessary for the common Good of the whole, and that, if possible, without Ruin or Hurt to any; and yet how maliciously, treacherously, and unworthily we have that while been dealt withall by those our Enemies, and by a factious and powerful Party, especially in the Parliament and City, combining with them; and what clear Cause we have had, both for all that we have formerly desired or done, in Prevention of our own Ruin and the Kingdom's Disturbance; and also what just Grounds for our late Advance to *London*; the good Service whereof, especially in restoring the Parliament to a Condition of Safety, Honour, and Freedom thereby, hath been, without any seeking of ours, acknowledged by both Houses, with Thanks to us, and public Thanksgiving to Almighty God for it; and a further Trust hath been thereupon committed to the General, for taking Care with his Army to safeguard the Parliament.

The Houses being thus restored to a Condition of present Safety, Honour, and Freedom, two Things seem clearly remaining to be done, which our own, and most Men's Expectations are most set upon, *viz.* First, To vindicate the Honour, Freedom, and Safety of Parliament from the like Affronts and Violence in future, and the Army

Army and Kingdom from Danger of the like Disturbances, whilst Things shall be in a Debate or Treaty for a Settlement; and then to proceed unto a speedy Settlement of the Peace of the Kingdom.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
August.

The latter of these is first in our Intentions, being nearest to the ultimate End; and we shall earnestly desire that, in order thereunto, the Proposals of the Army, whereof the Heads are published, may be speedily considered and brought to a Resolution. But considering that the Debates of them may take up some Time e'er they be agreed on all Hands, and the framing of them into Bills, and perfecting of the same, will require much more; something must first be done in the former, for a present Security to the Parliament from like Affronts or Violence, and to the Army and Kingdom from the like Disturbances to the Peace thereof, by any farther Advantage which the Time like to be spent in the settling of Peace may afford to our watchful, restless, and, we doubt, implacable Enemies.

First, therefore, to these Ends, (unless it should be thought fit to secure the Parliament, by keeping the whole Body of the Army, or so great a Part thereof to remain continually in and about London, as might be sure to over-power any future Tumults or Force that may arise out of the City, which neither the Welfare of the City and Ease of the Parts adjacent, nor the Safety of the Kingdom, in respect of the present Posture of Affairs, will admit) it is absolutely necessary that there be speedy and exemplary Justice done upon, at least, the chief Authors and Abettors of the said treasonable Engagement, and of the said Force done to the Parliament, and upon the chief Actors in Maintenance and Prosecution thereof, whereby Men may be deterred from the like in the future: And this is also as necessary to the Security of the Army and Peace of the Kingdom, since it is apparent by all that hath been said, and by infinite other Evidences, too many

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

August.

many to recount, that both the said Engagement, and the Force done to the Parliament, and the Power of the City Militia thereby gained, and the succeeding Votes and Orders of the pretended Houses (but indeed of that Faction that are our professed Enemies) in Maintenance and Prosecution thereof, and the Forces thereupon levied, put under the Command of Major-General *Massey*, and others our professed Adversaries, were all designed and directed to the Ruin and Destruction of this Army, and the raising of a new War against us in this Kingdom; and having had such Experience of their restless Malice and cruel Intentions towards us, notwithstanding our Tenderness and Lenity towards them, and of their treacherous Dealings so soon as they thought they had the Advantage, notwithstanding all their Semblances of Compliance to a Composition, what Reason is there to expect but that, if, by our Patience and Delays, they apprehend in future the like or other Advantage, they will break out again into the like or worse Attempts of Violence and War, if all escape with Impunity for these?

But as to this Point of Security by exemplary Justice in an ordinary Way, we see our Hopes almost frustrated; for tho' our Desires and Resolutions to that Purpose, expressed in our late Declaration of the Grounds of our Advance towards *London*, were then seconded with the declared Approbation and concurrent Resolutions of the Speakers and Members of both Houses that were driven away to the Army, and with their Engagement to live and die with us therein; and tho', in pursuance thereof, the Right Honourable the House of Peers have, since their Restitution, begun and proceeded to declare null and void all that was done in the Name of both Houses while they lay under the Power of that tumultuous Violence, and to give their more authentic Approbation to our said Declaration made in Behalf of the said Speakers and Members while they were

vere with the Army, and in Behalf of the Honour and Freedom of the Parliament; and to give their like Approbation to the concurrent Declaration and Engagement of the said Speakers and Members made to us while they were with us; yet the House of Commons hath not only not concurred with the Lords in any of those Things, but rather seem to have cast them aside; and upon the Question concerning those very Votes of the said 26th of *July*, to which the Houses were by the said Violence enforced, whether they should be declared null and void, it was carried in the Negative, that the Question should not be put: By the Consequences whereof, which are many Ways very sad to this poor Kingdom, and more than we can recount; and by all subsequent Proceedings in that House in relation to the whole Business, we clearly find that the Members of that House, who, after the Violence done to it, and during the Absence of the Speaker and the other Members thereby driven away, proceeding in the Name of that House as aforesaid, procured the pretended Powers, and did make the pretended Votes, Orders, and Ordinances aforementioned; and, many of them, were chief Actors thereupon for the levying of War in Prosecution and Maintenance of the aforesaid treasonable Engagement and Force done to the Parliament, and for the opposing, resisting, and destroying of this the Parliament's Army in its Advance to *London*, for the Restitution of the Parliament to its Honour and Freedom, being conscious of their own Guilt and Danger thereby; yet, presuming on their Interest in the House, and the Patience and Liberty of this Army, do continue to intrude themselves and to sit and vote there; and, by their present Interest in the House, do use their utmost Endeavours, and very much prevail, to obstruct and avoid the bringing of any to Justice who have acted under their pretended Authority; knowing to be their own Case and Concernment in Point of Impunity, as well as conducing to their Fac-
tion

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

tion and Interest; and for that Cause they labour
 as for Life, to uphold the Things past and done,
 and the Authorities given by them and their Fac-
 tion, in their and the Apprentices pretended Par-
 liament, yea even those very Votes and Authori-
 ties wrested from the Parliament by that palpable
 Force of July 26, to be good and valid untill
 they be repealed, as if past in a free and legal
 Parliament.

In which Point, and all Questions touching
 upon it, we find they presume upon, and are
 strengthened by, the Concurrence of divers other
 Members, who having, perhaps with harmless
 Intentions, continued to sit with them during
 the Speaker's Absence as aforesaid, though they
 consented not to any of their mischievous Votes
 and Orders, or treasonable Proceedings aforemen-
 tioned, may yet fear themselves to be involved
 in the same Case and Danger, by having sat with
 them: And thus, by the Concurrence of these
 two Parties in the House as to that Point, and the
 Interest which both these Parties have with others
 in the House, especially upon a Matter of saving
 one another; and by the partial Respects of
 some others in the House, for the saving of their
 Friends out of the House, who have acted under
 the Authority, and for the evil Ends aforesay-
 ed, we find an absolute Obstruction to the
 bringing to Justice or questioning of any who
 have acted in the late levying of War against us
 and against the Vindication of the Parliament
 Freedom, or in the said treasonable Engage-
 ments; yea, or in Abetment of the tumultuous
 Violence upon the Parliament itself; neither can
 we find or hear of any one Person hitherto brought
 to Justice or Question for any of those Things; but
 all seem to be either justified, or at least protect-
 ed from Justice, by the Power and Prevalence
 of those Members in Parliament, who are, ma-
 ny of them, as we can make appear, equally
 guilty of, and, others, in some Kind obnoxious
 for, the same Thing: And thus not only of

st Expectations of Vindication to the Parliament, and Security to ourselves and the Kingdom from the like treasonable and turbulent Practices in future, by exemplary Justice for what hath been so done, are frustrated; but even the Safety and Immunity of the Speakers, and those faithful Members of both Houses that were given away by the Violence aforesaid, and the Immunity of the Army in advancing to *London*, bring them back and restore the Parliament to Honour and Freedom, which hath been acknowledged by public Thanksgiving to God for what aforesaid, is subjected and exposed to Question; wherein theirs, and ours, and the King's Enemies obtrude themselves to be the Judges: For if those pretended Votes, Orders, and Ordinances, whereby War was levied against them and us, were then good and valid; though they should now be repealed; yet we, with the Speakers, and those Members aforesaid, in opposing of them while they were in Force, must needs remain Transgressors still; and yet God and we are thanked for it. What a Mock is this to God and Man?

But to return to the more serious Consideration of our Case, in relation to the Security of the Parliament, Kingdom, and ourselves, against the like turbulent and treasonable Practice in future; since, by the Means aforesaid, no Security or exemplary Justice can at present be had to deter any from the like, we wish all Men to consider what Straits we are in this Case put upon.

That which is the main Work of the Kingdom, and which we most earnestly thirst for and tend upon, *viz.* The settling of a Peace, and Consideration of our Proposals in order thereunto, will ask Time to bring it to an Issue; and when done, the relieving or remedying of the pressing Grievances of the Kingdom will take up and require the Sitting of the Parliament for some further Time, though, upon the settling

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

An. 25. Car. 1.

1647.

August.

of a Peace, a Period be set for the certain ending of it. Now, for the Body of this Army, or so great a Part of it as may serve to over-power any future Tumults or Force that may arise in or from the City, to continue hereabouts so long, the Condition of the Country round about, and the Necessities of the City, in Point of Provision, cannot well bear it; and, we doubt, foreign Forces, that are already upon the Wing, and turbulent Spirits, that in several Parts of the Kingdom are beginning Insurrections if we continue fixed here, will have such Opportunity, and take such Encouragement therefrom, as that they may, e'er long, necessarily call us off. Should we now or hereafter, while the Parliament sits, draw off the Army from about the City, without exemplary Justice upon some, would not the same, or more dangerous, Tumults and Violences probably return upon the Parliament; and the like, or worse, Practices of raising a new War be revived, with more Advantage to our Enemies, more Danger to us and the Kingdom, and less Hopes of appeasing it so easily and happily as the former, while the same violent and factious Spirits, both in the Parliament and elsewhere, shall continue in the same Power and Opportunities as formerly; and both they and all others shall have before their Eyes the Encouragement of that Impunity and Protection, yea rather that Justification, which they have hitherto found from within the Parliament itself in the past Practices aforementioned, though as grossly treasonable as any they can hereafter run into? Should we or any others, for the obtaining of exemplary Justice upon some, proceed to impeach any for their past treasonable Practices, what Hopes of Justice or of a timely Dispatch therein can we have, while such a prevailing Party of Men, interested and concerned in the same Things, shall, in the House of Commons, continue to be Judges thereof; or at least be ready to avow and justify the Offenders therein, as having acted under their

' their pretended Authority? In this Strait there-
 ' fore, though we ever have been and shall be most
 ' tender of all just Privileges of Parliament, yet
 ' finding the Root of these and other Difficulties
 ' to the Parliament, Kingdom, and ourselves, to
 ' lie in this, *viz.* That those Members of the
 ' House of Commons who, during the forced Ab-
 ' sence of the Speakers of both Houses, continuing
 ' to sit and act as a Parliament, did procure and
 ' consent to the pretended Votes, Orders, and Or-
 ' dinances aforementioned for levying of War; and
 ' that, as is before demonstrated, in direct Prose-
 ' cution or Maintenance of the aforesaid treason-
 ' able Engagement, and the Violence done to
 ' the Parliament; and for the opposing, resisting,
 ' and destroying of this the Parliament's Army in
 ' its Advance towards *London*, only to restore the
 ' Speakers and Members of both Houses that were
 ' driven away, and the Houses themselves, to their
 ' Honour and Freedom; and who are thereby, and
 ' by their late owning and avowing of the same,
 ' and many of them, as we can prove by acting
 ' personally in the said treasonable Practices, be-
 ' come Parties to the same, do yet take the Bold-
 ' ness to sit and vote in Parliament, especially in
 ' the House of Commons. We say, finding the
 ' main Root of our Difficulties and Dangers to lie
 ' in this,

' First, we appeal to all Men, Whether it be
 ' just or tolerable, that any Privilege of Parlia-
 ' ment should, contrary to the Law of Nature,
 ' make a Man Judge in his own Case and Con-
 ' cernment? And we wish those Men themselves to
 ' consider, if we had come to an Engagement with
 ' the Forces raised by virtue of their pretended
 ' Votes and Ordinances, and that thousands had
 ' been slain, and that we had made our Way by the
 ' Sword, Whether they would then have expected
 ' to have sat as Judges on us therein? And we
 ' are sure it is no Thanks to them that it hath been
 ' otherwise; and had we found those Members
 ' in

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

Ap. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

in Arms against us, and subdued and taken them,
 Whether had they not been in the Condition
 of Prisoners of War? And if so then, having
 put Arms into the Hands of others against us, and
 still maintaining it, Whether can they, in strict
 Justice, challenge any better Condition from us?
 But that, contrariwise, we should suffer either
 that those whom, by the Course of War which
 they had chose to engage in against us, we might
 justly make our Prisoners, should, in a Course
 of Law, become our Masters and Commanders;
 or that those who the other Day did, in an hostile
 Manner, endeavour to have been our Execu-
 tioners, should, now we have by Force brok-
 en their Preparations against us, become our Judges;
 we suppose no reasonable Man, nor themselves
 when they well consider it, can expect from
 us.

Upon all these Considerations of the Justness
 of the Cause, and the Necessity of the Thing
 for the Safety of the Parliament, Kingdom, and
 this Army, (having no other Way left timely to
 remedy the Difficulties we are put upon, or pre-
 vent the growing Dangers of future Violence
 unto the Parliament, and Disturbances to the
 Kingdom, or to secure the Parliament in a quiet
 Proceeding to settle the Peace of the Kingdom
 and, in such Case, the Safety of the People be-
 ing the Supreme Law) we do protest and declare
 That if any of those Members, who, during the
 Absence of the Speakers and the rest of the
 Members of both Houses, forced away by the
 tumultuous Violence aforesaid, did sit and vote
 in the pretended Houses then continuing at
 Westminster, shall hereafter intrude themselves
 to sit in Parliament, before they shall have given
 Satisfaction to the respective Houses, concern-
 ing the Grounds of their said Sitting at West-
 minster, during the Absence of the said Speakers;
 and shall have acquitted themselves by sufficient
 Evidence, that they did not procure or give
 their

their Consent unto any of those pretended Votes, Orders, or Ordinances, tending to the raising and levying of a War, as is before declared, or for the King's Coming forthwith to London, we cannot any longer suffer the same; but shall do that Right to the Speakers and Members of both Houses who were driven away to us, and to ourselves with them, all whom the said other Members have endeavoured, in an hostile Manner, most unjustly to destroy; and also to the Kingdom, which they endeavoured to imbroil in a new War, as to take some speedy and effectual Course whereby to restrain them from being their own, ours, and the Kingdom's Judges in those Things wherein they have made themselves Parties; by this Means to make Way that both they and others that are guilty of, and Parties to, the aforesaid treasonable and destructive Practices and Proceedings against the Freedom of the Parliament and Peace of the Kingdom, may be brought to condign Punishment; and that at the Judgment of a free Parliament, consisting, duly and properly, of such Members of both Houses respectively, who stand clear from such apparent and treasonable Breach of their Trust, as is before expressed.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
August.

By the Appointment of his Excellency and the General Council of his Army.

JO. RUSHWORTH, *Secretary.*

Next follows the Lettter of Thanks to the General, which contains no more than what is already exprest in the Order for it. How the House of Commons relished this last Declaration from the Army will shortly appear. However, it plainly shews they were in no better Situation than before, but rather more under the Power of the Sword; and, no doubt, hastened the Agreement between the two Houses: For,

The same Day, the Commons sent up another Draught of an Ordinance for making void all Votes,

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

August.

The Ordinance
for making void
all Proceedings
during the Ab-
sence of the
Speakers, passes
both Houses.

Orders, and Ordinances, in the Time of the Absence of the Speakers; which, after some Debate, the Lords agreed to. It was in every Respect answerable to that which had been brought into the House of Lords before, and passed there, except in the following Proviso:

‘Provided always, That no Person shall be impeached or punished for their Actings, by, or upon, or according to, the aforesaid Votes, Orders, and Ordinances, unless he or they shall be found guilty of contriving, acting, or abetting the visible and actual Force aforesaid; or being present at, or knowing of, the said Force, did afterwards act upon the Votes so forced; or were guilty of entering into or promoting the late Engagement for bringing the King to the City, upon the Terms and Conditions expressed in his Majesty’s Letter of the 12th of May last.’

The Commons had warmly debated every Clause of this Ordinance: For no less than three Divisions, on the Question, appear in their *Journals*, of the 19th Instant, all so near in Number, as 96 against 93, 85 against 83, and 87 against 84, before the General’s Letter and Remonstrance were delivered to that House; which, after reading, silenced all their Debates; and, the next Day, the Ordinance was passed, as above, and sent to the Lords by Sir *John Evelyn*.—In Lord *Holles’s Memoirs* we are informed, that to enforce this Declaration, a Party of 1000 Horse were drawn up in *Hyde-Park*; *Cromwell* and *Ireton* making menacing Speeches in the House, and Guards out of the Army besetting the Doors and Avenues thereof.

Aug. 22. The Commons sent up to impart to the Lords some Intelligence they had received from *Ireland*, of a decisive Victory over the Rebels in that Kingdom. The Particulars of the Battle, &c. being in Mr. *Rushworth’s Collections**, and rather foreign

* *Collections*, Vol. VII. p. 779.

foreign to our Purpose, we omit; observing only, An. 23. Car. I.
that the Parliament order'd a Day of Thanksgiving 1647.
for it, to be first kept in *London* and *Westminster*,
and afterwards all over *England*. August.

August 24. There is a Recess from any material
Business in both Houses, except that this Day the
House of Commons were somewhat alarmed with
an Information that Mr. *Anthony Nicholl*, one of the
Eleven Members accused by the Army, was esca-
ped out of the Serjeant's Custody. All the Ports
in *England* and *Wales* were ordered to be stopped,
and all Officers belonging to them were required
not to suffer him to pass through them. So great
a Dread was had of the Army at this Time. Mr.
Whitlocke writes ^d, 'That Mr. *Holles*, Sir *Philip*
Stapylton, Sir *William Lewis*, Sir *William Waller*,
Sir *John Clotworthy*, and Mr. *Long*, went in one
Ship for *France*; where, soon after, that gallant
Gentleman, Sir *Philip Stapylton*, died of the Plague
at *Calais*: And that some of them went into other
Parts, or retired to their own Countries and lived
privately.' Mr. *Holles* went to *St. Mere Eglise*, in
Normandy, where he resided several Years, and
wrote his *Memoirs*.
Some of the
Members im-
peach'd by the
Army retire to
different Parts.

Thus the Army got rid of the most able Mana-
gers against them; which, as Mr. *Ludlow* ob-
serves, 'was their principal Aim in their Prosecu-
tion of the Eleven Members.'

August 26. A Letter was read from Lord *Mon-*
tague, dated at *Oatlands*, August 24, informing the
Lords, That, the Night before, the King was
pleased to tell them he intended to go this Day to
Hampton-Court, whither they were to attend
him. And,
The King re-
moves to Hamp-
ton-Court.

August 27. The Lords and Commons agreed to
the Propositions for Peace, with the Addition of a
Proviso, after a Conference, in which the latter
gave the following Reasons for their insisting, te-
naciouſly,

S 2

^d *Memorials*, p. 259.

^e *Memoirs*, Vol. I. p. 197.

276 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 25. Car. 1.
1647.

September.

Propositions of
Peace ordered to
be sent to him
there.

naciously, to the Propositions as they came from them, without any further Alteration:

‘Because it was the Resolution of both Houses, with the Consent of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, to send the same Propositions now as were sent to the King at *Newcastle*: That great Prejudice would ensue, if they were not speeded; for so much Time will be elapsed, if there be any Alterations in them, because they must then be sent to *Scotland* also, which will very much retard the settling the Peace of the Kingdom.’ The Lords debated this Matter some Time; but at last agreed to it, and ordered the Propositions, after having the Consent of the *Scots* Commissioners to them, to be sent to the King.

September 1. A Letter from the *Scots* Commissioners was read:

For the Right Honourable the SPEAKER of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.

Worcester-House, August 30, 1647.

Right Honourable,

‘WE are commanded from the Committee of the Estates of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, to deliver this inclosed Letter to both the Houses of the Parliament of *England*, and to desire that a speedy Answer may be returned thereto, that the Messenger, who is sent to attend the same, may be hastened back; we therefore entreat your Lordship to communicate the said Letter to the Honourable Houses, and rest

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

CHA. ERSKINE.
HEN. KENNEDY.
ROB. BARCLAY.

For

For the Right Honourable the LORDS and COMMONS, assembled in the Parliament of England at Westminster.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
September.

Edinburgh, Aug. 21, 1647.

Right Honourable,

WE have heard, and not without Amazement, that the Earl of *Lauderdale*, one of the Commissioners employed by this Kingdom, having, in Pursuance of our Directions, repaired to his Majesty, was, in a violent Manner, forced away by some Soldiers in *Sir Thomas Fairfax's* Army, contrary to the Law of Nations, and a particular Agreement betwixt the Kingdoms. We do likewise find that Letters and Messengers, directed to us from our Commissioners, have been intercepted; whereby that happy Correspondence, which hath been formerly betwixt the Kingdoms, is interrupted; and, after serious Deliberations, we thought good to desire from the Houses of Parliament a Reparation of those Injuries, especially of that done to the Earl of *Lauderdale*, which we look upon as done to this Kingdom; nor can we, in reason, think, though we should be silent, that the Houses of Parliament will suffer so great an Offence to pass unpunished. And because we cannot expect a free Intercourse and Communication of Affairs betwixt the two Kingdoms for the future, unless there be a Protection of the Persons of our Commissioners from all Injury and Violence, and a free Passage for Messengers, Packets, and Letters betwixt us and them; we do further desire, That we may have Assurance under the Hands of the Speakers of both Houses, and of *Sir Thomas Fairfax* and his Council of War, that our Commissioners, and such others as shall be employed by us hereafter, with their Retinue, or such as shall have Passes from us, shall have free Access to his Majesty, and to the Houses of Parliament, and be permitted to stay there, and return thither

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

September,

at their Pleasure, without any Molestation or Restraint whatsoever; as also that all Messengers, Packets, or Letters sent from us to them, or from them to us, shall freely pass without any Manner of Interruption: And to the end all these may be the better observed, we desire Intimation may be made thereof to all Commanders of Garrisons, and other Officers and Soldiers; whereunto we desire and expect your speedy Answer by the Bearer.

We desire also that there be a free Commerce and Traffick also to all the Subjects of this Kingdom, as in former Times before these late Troubles. I rest

Your affectionate Friend

and humble Servant,

LOUDON, *Cancellarius.*

The Lords ordered this Letter to be communicated to the House of Commons, and to desire their Concurrence that the Consideration of the Matter of Fact be referred to the Members of both Houses that are of the Committee of both Kingdoms, to consider what is fit to be done thereupon, and to make Report thereof to the Houses: Also that the Propositions of both Kingdoms, for a safe and well-grounded Peace, shall be presented to the King on *Tuesday* next; that the *Scotts* Commissioners be acquainted therewith, and that they be desired to go along with such a Committee of Lords and Commons as shall be appointed by both Houses to present the same, and the Concurrence of the House of Commons to be desired herein.

The same Day the Sub-committee of Lords and Commons, appointed to examine into the Force used to the Parliament, &c. made some Report of it to this Effect:

A new Militia
constituted in
London.

That it is the Opinion of the said Committee,
That a new Militia be constituted, in the City of
London,

London, by Ordinance, and only fitting Persons An. 23. Car. I.
employed in it: That the Train'd Bands and 1647.
Auxiliaries of the *Tower-Hamlets* shall be under the immediate Command and Power of the Constable of the *Tower* and his Lieutenant, &c. That it be referred to the General and his Officers to consider what constant and ordinary Guard will be fit for the Safety of the *Tower*; and, admitting the Army be removed from the City, what shall be done with the Line of Communication and the Forts about *London*?

September.

'That it is the Opinion of the Committee, in order to the Safety of the Parliament and City, that they should take such principal Persons of the City into Custody, as have had a Hand in the late Tumult, and have endeavoured to raise a new War: That they report the State of their Misdemeanors to the Houses, to be brought to speedy Justice; to the end that such as are faulty may be removed, and fit Persons put into such Places of Trust as they now enjoy.

'*Lastly*, That the Houses may be moved to consider of their Power, concerning the Adjournment of the Parliament unto some other Place; for untill that be declared, it is very difficult to offer what may be for their future Security, otherwise than by the Body of the Army.'

At the same Time was presented to the Lords the Answer of the General and his Officers to the Points referred to them by this Sub-committee.

'That as to the Point concerning the Line of Communication, and Forts about the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and Borough of *Southwark*, wherein you have asked our Opinion, we answer, That we conceive it necessary that the whole Line of Communication, as also the Forts upon and about the same, be effectually slighted, before the Army draws off from their present Quarters about the City.

'That as to the other Part, concerning the Guards at the *Tower*, they would send their Opinion in three or four Days.'

Sept.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

September.

Sept. 2. Pursuant to Part of this Advice, both Houses, this Day, passed an Ordinance for resetting the Militia of *London, &c.* in the old Hands; and also to another, for effectually slighting all the Works and Forts about the City.

Various Alter-
cations between
the English Par-
liament and the
Scots Commis-
sioners about the
Propositions of
Peace.

The Propositions for Peace having been ordered to be shewn to the *Scots* Commissioners, for their Assent to them, before they were presented to the King, the *Scots* returned for Answer, 'That they did expect to hear from the Parliament in Answer to some Letters they had sent to them, concerning some late Affronts and Violence done their Members, for which no Reparation was as yet given, before they returned their Sense of the whole Business, or could conceive themselves to be in a sufficient Security for presenting his Majesty with the Propositions for Peace, especially where that Army is which acted these Things: Therefore they desired a Safe-Conduct, conformable to the said Letter in all Points.'

The Committee of Parliament answered the *Scots*, 'That whereas, in their Paper then given, they say, *That before they return their Sense of the whole Business they do expect, &c.* the Committee desired to know, whether by these Words, *the whole Business*, they intended any other Thing than the joining with the Committee of Parliament, in presenting the Propositions to the King? And, for the Safe Conduct desired, whether they intended any Thing else than a Safe-Conduct for those Persons, who were to be employed in presenting the said Propositions?'

To this the *Scots* Commissioners replied, 'They thought their former Paper was so clear, that it needed no Explanation; but, to satisfy the Parliament's Commissioners, desiring to know what they intended by those Words, *the whole Business*; they relate to the several Votes and Orders delivered to them about the Propositions themselves, which they had not yet perused; and to the Shortness of Time for presenting them to his Majesty, appoint-
ed

ed without their Knowledge : And as to the Safe-
Conduct desired by them, they expected it to be
for all such Persons and Ends, as are fully expres-
sed in the Letter of the Committee of Estates of
Scotland, the 21st of *August* last ; and having thus
cleared the Thing, they desired that both Papers
might be reported to the Honourable Houses.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
September.

Upon the reading of these Matters in the House
of Lords, it was ordered to be referred to a Com-
mittee to consider of a proper Answer to be re-
turn'd to the *Scots* Commissioners upon those Pa-
pers, and report the same to the House.

This Answer was drawn up, read, and agreed
to the same Day, and ordered to be delivered to the
Scots Commissioners that Afternoon, as follows :

Right Honourable, September 2, 1647.

WE have received your Lordships Papers
of the first and second of this Instant Sep-
tember, as reported to us from the Members of
both Houses that are of the Committee of both
Kingdoms ; and, having taken the same into
Consideration, do return this Answer, That a
Letter from Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, of the twentieth
of *August* last, in order to your Satisfaction in
that Business concerning the Earl of *Lauder-
dale*, hath been already communicated to you ;
and further, since the Receipt of the Letter of
the 21st of *August* from the States of *Scotland*,
we have put the Business into a Way of Exa-
mination, that we may fully and speedily satisfy
ourselves of the Matters of Fact, and shall do
therein what shall be just and fit to give that
Kingdom Satisfaction : But the Houses being
hitherto not informed of the Particulars thereof,
and having, as yet, not any Proof at all, could
not have expected that it should be taken as an
Occasion to hinder the sending of the Proposi-
tions for the speedy Settlement of the Peace of
the

* We do not find this Letter in the *Journals* of either House,
nor in the *Collections*.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

September.

the Kingdom; and the rather, because as we have not nor shall not maintain any unfit and unjustifiable Deportment towards any of your Members, or any others employed from the Kingdom of *Scotland*, so we have, upon divers Occasions, pass'd by Matters of Offence, and never made Use thereof to obstruct any public Proceedings betwixt the Kingdoms; much less in such Things as immediately tend to the settling the Peace thereof.

And as to the Particular of sending the Propositions to the King on *Tuesday* next, (which Propositions are the same presented formerly to the King at *Newcastle*, except in some few Particulars concerning our own Delinquents and the Bishops Lands, which are given in Security for the 200,000 *l.* paid unto you) we do adhere unto you, that no Time may be lost in a Business of that Consequence; and therefore we do hereby engage ourselves for a Safe-Conduct to such Persons as you shall send to the King upon this Service; and we do desire your Concurrence in injoining your Commissioners to deliver the Propositions to his Majesty at the Time appointed, wherewith we did acquaint you without the least Delay, the very same Day that it was named by the Houses in order to their Consent; assuring you that we hold it our Duties to proceed with Effect and Speed to the Settlement of the Peace of the Kingdom, according to the Trust reposed in us.

Sept. 3. This Day the Lords received from the Scots Commissioners the following Reply to their Paper of Yesterday:

For the Right Honourable the SPEAKER of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.

My Lord,

September 3, 1647.

Though it cannot in Reason be denied, that Violence done to public Ministers gives too just Grounds of the retarding of such pub-

lic

' lic Proceedings, as are necessary to be acted
 ' by them, yet it is not our Mind, nor can it be
 ' collected from the Papers given in to your Lord-
 ' ships from us, that the violent Deportment of
 ' some Soldiers as to the Person of the Earl of
 ' *Lauderdale* is represented by us to hinder the send-
 ' ing the Propositions to his Majesty for the speed-
 ' dy settling the Peace of the Kingdom; but we
 ' cannot but conceive that we have just Reasons
 ' to demand Security to our Persons from that Ar-
 ' my which committeth Violence against the Per-
 ' son of that Nobleman; who, if he were here
 ' present, would be able to clear more of their
 ' uncivil Carriage than we can, being done con-
 ' trary to the earnest Intreaties of some of your
 ' own Commissioners; and, as we are informed,
 ' in Presence of some Colonels of that Army, who
 ' know the Soldiers better than we do: And in
 ' regard the Committee of the States of the King-
 ' dom of *Scotland*, notwithstanding our receiving
 ' and transmitting that Letter from Sir *Thomas*
 ' *Fairfax*, which your Lordship mentions, have
 ' thought fit to desire from the Honourable Houses
 ' a Safe-Conduct, under the Hands of both Speak-
 ' ers, the General Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, and his
 ' Council of War, for Indemnity to their Com-
 ' missioners Retinue and Servants, together with a
 ' free Pass and Repairs for their Messengers with
 ' Letters to and from the Kingdom of *Scotland*;
 ' for the granting whereof we have just Reason to
 ' insist, since a Messenger, on Purpose, at their
 ' Command, doth yet here attend your Lordships
 ' Answer; nor do we know or remember any pub-
 ' lic Offence given of that Nature, especially to
 ' a Commissioner of this Kingdom.

' As to the sending of the Propositions of Peace
 ' to his Majesty; as it is our earnest Desire, so we
 ' hold ourselves bound, and do most willingly a-
 ' gree, to the presenting of them; yet cannot but
 ' conceive ourselves exceedingly straitened in ad-
 ' hering to the Circumstance of so short a Day pe-
 ' remptorily appointed by your Lordships, without
 ' our

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 September.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

September.

‘our Knowledge or Consent, notwithstanding we have attended here these eight Months past, and the Propositions as yet not having been six Days in our Hands; upon Perusal whereof we do find an Addition of a Proviso of above twenty Lines, which we apprehend doth import such material Alteration tending to (if not the destroying, yet) the weakening of some preceding Propositions, which are most considerable, which we desire to be cleared, for the more full satisfying of our Judgments and the Exoneration of ourselves in concurring with your Lordships to present them to his Majesty.

‘We are likewise commanded by the Parliament of *Scotland* to let the Honourable Houses know, that they have deleted out of the Propositions of Peace the Names of some Delinquents, which we shall deliver in to your Lordships before the presenting of them to his Majesty; as also are warranted by them to concur to the expunging of such of yours as the Honourable Houses, in their Wisdoms, shall think fit; nor shall any be more willing and ready to do every Thing that may conduce to the speedy settling of a happy Peace to both Kingdoms according to the Trust reposed in us.’

By Command of the Commissioners for the Parliament of Scotland,

JOHN DOWN.

The Lords ordered this Letter to be communicated to the House of Commons, with this Sense: ‘That their Lordships think fit that the Member of both Houses that are of the Committee of both Kingdoms do meet this Afternoon; and that they do endeavour to clear those Things which the *Scottish* Commissioners express themselves by their Paper of the third of *September* instant, to be unsatisfied in; and further to acquaint them, that the House do adhere for sending the Propositions to the King on *Tuesday* next.’ To this the Commons gave their Concurrence.

Sept.

OF ENGLAND. 285

Sept. 6. This Dispute is still continued in the An. 23. Car. 1.
following Papers read this Day in the House of
Lords: 1647.

Die Saturni, 4to Septembris, 1647.

*At a Committee of the Members of both Houses that
are of the Committee of both Kingdoms.*

IN Pursuance of an Order of both Houses of
the third Instant, we do acquaint your Lord-
ships, that, upon Consideration of the last Paper
sent to the Houses by your Lordships, the Houses
do adhere to their Resolutions of sending the Pro-
positions to the King on *Tuesday* next; and we
are ready to endeavour to clear those Things
wherein your Lordships shewed yourselves unsat-
isfied in your said Papers.

By Command of the same Committee,

GUALT. FROST, *Secretary.*

The Scots Commissioners ANSWER to the foregoing.

September 4, 1647.

BY your Lordships Paper, now presently de-
livered unto us, we perceive that the Honour-
able Houses do adhere to the Resolution of
sending the Propositions on *Tuesday* to his Ma-
jesty, and that your Lordships are ready to clear
those Things wherein we shewed ourselves unsat-
isfied. Your Lordships, in your former
Paper, told us, that the Propositions are the
same presented formerly to his Majesty at *New-
castle*, except in some few Particulars con-
cerning your own Delinquents and the Bishops
Lands: As to the first, although we do not at
all meddle with the lessening of the Compositions
or Fines of your Delinquents, or shall not oppose
any Favour of that Kind which the Houses shall
shew to them, yet because the Orders and Ord-
nances which this Proviso relate to, are passed
since the Propositions were presented to his Ma-
jesty by both Kingdoms; and may, for ought

we

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

September.

‘ we know, not be agreeable to the Propositions
 ‘ as they were then agreed on by the two King-
 ‘ doms, we desire therefore to see these Orders
 ‘ and Ordinances of one or both Houses, as also
 ‘ the two Ordinances for abolishing Archbishops
 ‘ and Bishops, &c. and the Sale of their Lands.

‘ This was the Course formerly observed, and
 ‘ we are confident will be now thought most rea-
 ‘ sonable. We shall shun every Thing which
 ‘ may be a Delay to the settling of an happy Peace,
 ‘ which we have, and shall ever be ready to pro-
 ‘ mote; but we must yet again represent to the
 ‘ Houses the extreme Shortness of the Time, which
 ‘ was appointed without our Knowledge or Con-
 ‘ sent; although, as we said before, we have at-
 ‘ tended here many Months without hearing any
 ‘ Thing of these Propositions.

‘ We do not find the first Part of our last Paper
 ‘ answered; and therefore again, according to the
 ‘ Commands we received from Scotland, we ear-
 ‘ nestly entreat the Honourable Houses to return an
 ‘ Answer to the Letter of the Committee of the
 ‘ Estates of the Kingdom of Scotland, bearing Date
 ‘ the 21st of August, as we have formerly desired.

*By Command of the Commissioners for the Parlia-
 ment of Scotland,*

JOHN DOWN.

Die Saturni, 4to Septembris, 1647.

*At a Committee of the Members of both Houses
 that are of the Committee of both Kingdoms.*

‘ **W**E have considered your Lordships Paper
 ‘ now delivered unto us; and as to the
 ‘ Part thereof that concerns the Earl of *Lauder-
 ‘ dale*, we can give no other Answer than what the
 ‘ Houses have given; and to that concerning the
 ‘ Orders and Ordinances which the Proviso re-
 ‘ lates unto, they are only for admitting such De-
 ‘ linquents to Composition as had not come in
 ‘ within the Time limited by the Propositions for-
 ‘ merly sent to the King, and for settling the
 ‘ Rates of their Compositions, and the Time in
 ‘ which

“ which they should come in; which yet, for An. 25. Car. 1.
 “ your better Satisfaction, we shall endeavour to 1647.
 “ procure you the Sight of very speedily; as also
 “ the Ordinance concerning the Bishops and their
 “ Lands; and we do desire your Lordships Con-
 “ currence in the Delivery of the Propositions to
 “ his Majesty on *Tuesday* next, which is the Time
 “ resolved on by both Houses.

By Command of the same Committee,

GUALT. FROST, *Secretary.*

Upon reading these Papers, the Lords resolved that they approved of the Papers of the 4th of *September*, delivered by the Members of both Houses of the Committee of both Kingdoms then present, unto the Commissioners of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and of the delivering of the same unto them; and that the Concurrence of the House of Commons be desired therein.

Next a Message was brought from the House of Commons by Sir *John Evelyn*, desiring the Lords Concurrence in certain Particulars: The first of these were

INSTRUCTIONS for Philip Earl of Pembroke and Montgomery, Basil Earl of Denbigh, Edward Lord Montague, Sir John Holland, Bart. Sir Walter Erle, Sir John Cook, and Sir James Harrington, Knights, John Crew and Richard Browne, Esquires, or any three or more of them, appointed Committees of both Houses of the Parliament of England, to join with the Commissioners of the Kingdom of Scotland, to present Propositions to the King's Majesty for a safe and well-grounded Peace, and to receive his Majesty's Answer thereupon.

Instructions for the Commissioners of both Houses appointed to attend the King therewith.

I. “ **Y**OU, or any three or more of you, shall
 “ present to the King at *Hampton-Court*,
 “ or elsewhere that the King's Residence shall be, on
 “ *Tues-*

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

September,

Tuesday, being the 7th Day of this Instant *September*, from the Lords and Commons assembled in the Parliament of *England*, the Propositions herewith sent unto you for a safe and well-grounded Peace.

II. 'You, or any three or more of you, are to desire from the King his positive Answer and Consent to the said Propositions.

III. 'Any three, or more of you, are to repair to the Parliament at *Westminster* with all Speed and Diligence, as soon as you, or any three or more of you, shall have received the said Answer from his Majesty; in Expectation of the said Answer you are not make Stay above the Space of six Days next after you shall receive these Instructions:

IV. 'But the said Time of six Days being expired, any three of you are forthwith, without any Delay, to repair to the Parliament of *England*, to give them an Account of your Proceedings.

V. 'And in case the *Scots* Commissioners be not present at *Hampton-Court*, or at such Place where the King's Residence shall be, on *Tuesday* the said 7th of this Instant *September*, to join with you when you shall present the said Propositions to his Majesty; then you, or any three or more of you, are to present the said Propositions to his Majesty alone, and to receive his Majesty's Answer thereunto according to the preceding Instructions.'

The second Particular of the Message sent by Sir *John Evelyn*, was an Order that the Members of both Houses, who are of the Committee of both Kingdoms, do meet this Afternoon, and send to the *Scots* Commissioners to desire them to meet and give them their positive Answer concerning their joining to present the Propositions to his Majesty on *Tuesday* the 7th of this present *September*; the Houses not intending thereby any way to prevent

or

r delay the presenting the said Propositions, To- An. 23. Car. I.
morrow, to his Majesty. 1647.

The Answer returned by the Lords was, That
their House agreed both to this Order and to the
regoing Instructions. September.

The Lord Viscount *Say* and *Sele* reported, from
the Committee of both Kingdoms, two Papers
delivered to them, by the *Scots* Commissioners,
which were read.

September 6, 1647.

WE have received the two Ordinances, More Papers and
touching the abolishing of Archbishops Letters to, and
and Bishops within the Kingdom of *England* and from, the Com-
Dominion of *Wales*, and the Selling of their mittees of Par-
Lands, and we do agree that they be added to liament and the
the Propositions of Peace formerly presented to Commissioners of
his Majesty. Scotland relating
We have also received twelve Or- thcreto,
ders and Ordinances; if the Proviso relate to any
more, we desire likewise to see them, for to those
we have no Exception; and also we desire to
see the Form of the Pardon agreed on by both
Houses, and expressed in the said Proviso, that
there be nothing in it contrary to any former
Propositions.

‘As to the rest of your Lordship’s last Paper of
the 4th of *September*, we shall say no more than
what is said in ours of the same Date; which,
together with this, we desire may be reported to
both Houses of Parliament; and we are confident
the Honourable Houses will not insist so peremp-
torily on so short a Day.

‘By a Letter from the Committee of Estates of
the Parliament of *Scotland*, come to our Hands
this Day, they let us know that they have re-
ceived the Copy of that Letter from Sir *Thomas*
Fairfax, sent to us by the Honourable Houses,
and by us transmitted to them; and that they
expect a more satisfactory Answer from the
Houses, which they commanded us again to
Vol. XVI. T ‘de-

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

September.

desire, and to hasten the same to them with all Speed.

By Command of the Commissioners for the Parliament of Scotland,

JOHN DOWN.

Another Paper from the *Scots Commissioners.*

September 6, 1647.

WE are commanded by the Parliament of Scotland to delete, out of the first Exception, all such of the *Scots Nation* as are taken off by the Parliament of that Kingdom; particularly the Earl of *Traquair*, who is not only reconciled, but sits as a Member of that Parliament, capable of public Trust and Employment; as also the Earls of *Nithesdale* and *Perth*, the Lords of *Ogilvey* and *Itham*, *Irwin* younger of *Drum*, and *Sir Alexander Lesley* of *Auchentul*. We are also warranted, and are willing to agree, to the taking out as many of the *English* as the Houses of Parliament shall think fit.

By Command of the Commissioners for the Parliament of Scotland,

JOHN DOWN.

Next was read a Draught of a Letter, to be sent to the Lord Chancellor of *Scotland*, signed by the Speakers of both Houses.

My Lord,

THE two Houses of the Parliament of *England* have, by their Votes of the 24th of *August*, resolved and declared that this Kingdom is not able to pay the *Scots Army* in *Ireland* any longer, and that they will carry on the War there with their own Forces; and finding it provided and agreed upon by the 13th Article of that Treaty, that, at any Time after the three Months then agreed upon for the Entertainment of the *Scots Army* shall be expired, and that the

two

‘ two Houses of Parliament, or such Persons as shall be authorized by them, shall give Notice to the Council of *Scotland*, or to the Lord-Chancellor there, that, after one Month from such Notice given, the two Houses of Parliament will not pay the *Scots* Army any longer in *Ireland* than during the said Month: The said two Houses of Parliament, in pursuance of the Direction and Agreement in the said 13th Article expressed, have commanded us to give Notice unto your Lordship that, after one Month from this Notice given, they will not pay the said *Scots* Army any longer.

‘ And we do further signify unto your Lordship, That the said two Houses have also declared, that, in case any Thing shall appear to be due to that Army, over and above what they have already received, they will take Care that due Satisfaction be given; and also they will give Order that fourteen Days Pay shall be provided for the common Soldiers of the *Scots* Army, to be paid them at their Dismission, for the carrying of them home, according to the Agreement of the 12th Article of the said Treaty. This is that at present which the two Houses have commanded shall be given Notice of to your Lordship by,

My Lord,

Your Lordship's

Affectionate Friends and Servants.

Notwithstanding all the Remonstrances of the *Scotts* Commissioners, the Lords resolved to adhere to their former Resolutions of sending to the King the next Day; and that the same be immediately signified to the *Scots* Commissioners by the Members of both Houses that are of the Committee of both Kingdoms.

A Draught of a Letter to be sent to the Committee of Estates of *Scotland*, touching the Earl of

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

September.

An. 23. Car. I. *Lauderdale's* Businefs, was read and agreed to, and
 1647.
 {
 September.

Sept. 7. The Lord Viscount *Say* and *Sele* reported a Paper from the *Scots* Commissioners, which was read, shewing their Concurrence in sending the Propositions to the King this Day.

September 6, 1647.

‘ **T**O the Papers, presented by us to your
 ‘ Lordships, and from us to the Honourable
 ‘ Houses, we have received this Answer, That
 ‘ the Lords and Commons ordain your Lordships
 ‘ to meet with us, and to crave our positive An-
 ‘ swer concerning our joining to present the Pro-
 ‘ positions to his Majesty To-morrow the 7th of
 ‘ this Instant; the Houses not intending thereby
 ‘ any Way to prevent or delay the sending the a-
 ‘ foresaid Propositions. There were also read to
 ‘ us Instructions, appointing (as we remember, for
 ‘ we got no Copy) the Commissioners of the Houses
 ‘ to present these Propositions; and if the Com-
 ‘ missioners of *Scotland* were not there that Day,
 ‘ to present them by themselves: We have always
 ‘ been ready, according to the Commands we have
 ‘ received from the Kingdom of *Scotland*, to pro-
 ‘ mote the Cause wherein both Kingdoms are en-
 ‘ gaged, and more especially to concur in every
 ‘ Thing that may tend to the settling of a happy
 ‘ Peace.

‘ We did indeed hope, according to all the for-
 ‘ mer Practices, that the Houses would have been
 ‘ pleased, seeing they have added a new *Proviso*,
 ‘ relating to several Orders and Ordinances of ei-
 ‘ ther or both Houses, to have shewed us those
 ‘ Papers to which this new *Proviso* relates; espe-
 ‘ cially having declared, that we were not to med-
 ‘ dle with the Fines or Compositions of the Delin-
 ‘ quents of this Kingdom, but only that we might
 ‘ be satisfied that nothing was therein contained
 ‘ not agreable to the former Propositions; and
 ‘ we

‘ we earnestly desire that we might not be afflicted-
 ‘ ed to so peremptory a Day, appointed without
 ‘ our Knowledge or Consent, which was not the
 ‘ Course formerly observed ; that we were so
 ‘ far from refusing to go, or putting the Houses to
 ‘ the appointing their Commissioners to present the
 ‘ Propositions of both Kingdoms without us, that,
 ‘ in our Paper of the third of this Instant, we de-
 ‘ clared that it was not our Mind, nor can it be
 ‘ duly collected from our Papers, that the Injury
 ‘ we complained of was represented to hinder the
 ‘ sending of the Propositions ; but rather, as we
 ‘ signified in that Paper, we find ourselves bound
 ‘ to present them ; only we were straitned to ad-
 ‘ here to that peremptory Day : But seeing that
 ‘ the Honourable Houses are pleased still to ad-
 ‘ here to that Day, without answerin ; any other
 ‘ Part of our Papers, as appears by the Instruc-
 ‘ tions and Orders now read to us ; that we may
 ‘ witness our Readiness to use all Means pos-
 ‘ sible for the obtaining a happy Peace, we shall,
 ‘ God willing, be at *Hampton-Court* To-morrow,
 ‘ if we be not again stopped ; and shall concur in
 ‘ presenting the Propositions to his Majesty, as
 ‘ they were agreed on by both Kingdoms, with
 ‘ the Addition of the Ordinance for the abolishing
 ‘ Archbishops, Bishops, &c. and selling of their
 ‘ Lands.’

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 September.

*By Command of the Commissioners for the Par-
 liament of Scotland,*

JOHN DOWN.

‘ This Day the Commons ordered, that the Eleven
 Members, impeached by the Army, should each
 of them appear to answer such Things as should
 be objected against them, at or before the 16th of
October next. Accordingly the next Day,

*Sept. 8, John Glynn, Esq; Recorder of London,
 and Sir John Maynard, appeared in the House of
 Commons, when the Speaker informed them,
 That there had been a Report made, in which*

T 3

were

An. 27. Car. I.
1647.

September.

Proceedings against Sir John Maynard and Mr Glynn, two of the impeach'd Members.

were some Things that highly concerned them. This being read, Mr. *Glynn* instantly gave a general Answer to many of the Matters objected against him, and a particular one to others. After which, the Question being put, Whether *John Glynn*, Esq; Recorder of *London*, be discharg'd from being a Member of this House? it passed in the Affirmative, 58 against 52, and he was discharged accordingly. Sir *John Maynard* refused to answer to any of the Informations that were read against him, but prayed that he might have Counsel assigned him, and withdrew. On which it was resolved, without Division, 'That Sir *John Maynard* be expelled the House and committed Prisoner to the Tower.' Resolved also, 'That an Impeachment of High Treason be prepared and brought in against him.'

The same Day the Commons sent a Message to the Lords to desire them to sit a while, for they had a Business of Importance to communicate to them. And soon after came Sir *John Evelyn*, with other Members, who delivered the Business: The Report of it was postponed to the next Day, and all the Lords ordered to attend the House.

But notwithstanding that Order, we do not find that the Lords went upon the Report; for Sept. 9, the most material Thing done was reading the following Letter from the Scots Commissioners, and drawing up an Answer to it; which, though read and agreed to on a different Day, we put together for the Sake of Connection.

To the Right Honourable the SPEAKER of the House of PEERS pro Tempore,

Hampton-Court, Sept. 8, 1647.

Right Honourable,

Farther Proceedings between the Parliament and the Scots Commissioners,

WE have many Times pressed an Answer to the Letter of the Committee of Estates of the Kingdom of Scotland, bearing Date the 21st of August: This Day another Express

‘ is come to us, requiring us again to call for an
 ‘ Answer to that Letter. They say they are to
 ‘ send some more of their Number into this King-
 ‘ dom for the public Affairs, but when they con-
 ‘ sider what Entertainment some already employed
 ‘ by them have lately received, they are the more
 ‘ earnest to have sufficient Security for those that
 ‘ shall have their Warrant hereafter; in Obedience,
 ‘ therefore, to their Commands, we do most ear-
 ‘ nestly entreat an Answer to that Letter of the
 ‘ 21st of August, and rest

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 September.

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

LAUDERDALE, HEN. KENNEDY,
 CHA. ERSKINE, ROB^T. BARCLAY.

*The Parliament's ANSWER to the LETTER of the
 Estates of Scotland, of the 21st of August, con-
 cerning the Earl of Lauderdale.*

Westminster, Sept. 14, 1647.

Right Honourable,

‘ **W**E have received your Lordships Letter
 ‘ of the 21st of August last, taking Notice
 ‘ of some Violence offered to the Earl of *Lauder-*
 ‘ *dale* by some Soldiers in the Army of Sir *Thomas*
 ‘ *Fairfax*; and although your Commissioners have
 ‘ been informed that the General knew nothing
 ‘ thereof, and hath disavowed the same; yet we
 ‘ have put it into a Way of further Examination,
 ‘ that we might have full Satisfaction of the Mat-
 ‘ ter of Fact; of the Truth whereof, when we
 ‘ are informed, we shall give you Notice; and
 ‘ as we have formerly, upon divers Occasions, pas-
 ‘ sed by Matter of Offence given us, that no Mis-
 ‘ understanding might grow thereupon; so we
 ‘ shall not approve or maintain any unfit or unjusti-
 ‘ fiable Deportment of any towards your Commis-
 ‘ sioners, or any employed from that Kingdom;
 ‘ but, upon Knowledge of the Matter of Fact and
 ‘ Persons offending, we shall do that which is just,
 ‘ to give the Kingdom of *Scotland* Satisfaction in it.
 ‘ And

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

September.

‘ And as to the Security desired under the Hands
 ‘ of the Speakers of both Houses, and from Sir
 ‘ *Thomas Fairfax* and his Council of War, for
 ‘ such as you shall employ, or that shall have Passes
 ‘ from you to have Access to his Majesty and the
 ‘ Parliament, the Houses do declare, That none
 ‘ shall be debarred from having Access to his Ma-
 ‘ jesty who have Warrant from the Parliament of
 ‘ *Scotland*, or from the Committee thereunto au-
 ‘ thorised, except such as are disabled by the Pro-
 ‘ positions agreed upon by both Kingdoms: But
 ‘ as to such Assurance from Sir *Thomas Fairfax*
 ‘ and his Council of War, it hath been formerly
 ‘ refused to the King, when he desired the like
 ‘ from the Generals of the Army of either Nations;
 ‘ and your Commissioners, then here present,
 ‘ joined with the Houses in that Answer to his
 ‘ Majesty.

‘ For the Matter of Trade; we do not find in
 ‘ your Letters any Mention of any particular In-
 ‘ terruption of Trade, nor do we know of any;
 ‘ but when any such do appear unto us we will do
 ‘ that which to Justice shall appertain, and shall
 ‘ be ever ready to do all Things that may preserve
 ‘ a good Understanding and Correspondence be-
 ‘ tween the two Kingdoms. This is that which
 ‘ the Houses have commanded should be represent-
 ‘ ed to your Lordships, and we rest

Your Lordships humble Servants,

MANCHESTER,

*Speaker of the House of
 Peers pro Tempore.*

WILLIAM LENTHALL,

*Speaker of the Commons
 House in Parliament.*

Both Houses adjourned to

Sept. 14. When the Earl of *Pembroke* reported
 to the Lords that, according to the Commands of
 both

both Houses, he had delivered the Propositions for
a safe and well-grounded Peace to his Majesty,
and had brought the King's Answer to them;
and his Lordship presented a Paper, containing
a Discourse between the King and the Commis-
sioners, both which were read as follows :

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
September.

AFTER we had presented, and desired the
King's positive Answer and Consent to, the
Propositions, the King asked, Whether these Pro-
positions were the same which were formerly pre-
sented to him at *Newcastle*? The Earl of *Pem-*
broke told him, That these were the same Propo-
sitions, only that there was an Addition for the
Sale of Bishops Lands, and some Alterations
touching Delinquents. The King then asked,
Whether the Commissioners of *Scotland* did agree
to those Propositions as they were now presented?
The Earl of *Lauderdale* answered, That those
Propositions were the same that were formerly a-
greed on by both Kingdoms; there was only an
Addition for an Ordinance to be passed for the a-
bolishing of Archbishops and Bishops, and Sale of
their Lands, which, by their Instructions, they were
warranted to agree to; and that they were like-
wise commanded to expunge such Delinquents of
the *Scots* Nation as the Parliament of *Scotland*
had taken off; particularly some Persons, whose
Names had been given in to both Houses. He said
likewise, He found a Proviso added; but that
they had that Day received a Declaration from
both Houses, by which it was declared, That
there was nothing therein contained disagreeable
to the former Propositions, saving only in the Mat-
ter of Fines and Compositions of Delinquents.
Upon which his Lordship said, They did concur
in presenting those Propositions. The King
then replied, That he was somewhat surprized
with them, not looking now for them; but he
would give an Answer to them as soon as he
could.

A Report of
what pass'd at
the Commission-
ers presenting
the Propositions
of Peace to the
King.

Upon

An. 25. Car. 1.
1647.

September.

‘ Upon *Thursday* about Ten of the Clock, his Majesty sent us Word, that he would be ready to give his Answer to the Propositions about Four o’Clock, in the Afternoon, and commanded us then to attend him, which we did accordingly; when his Majesty told us, That if this were a Time for Complaint, he might well complain that he had sent many Messages to the Houses, to which he had received no Answer at all: But it now being a Time, said he, for every one to endeavour to do all the Good he can; therefore he had, in as short a Time as he could, prepared his Answer to the Propositions; which, he took God to Witness, was such as, in his Opinion, led to the best Way for settling of an happy and speedy Peace in these Nations: If it were not so in every Man’s Opinion, his Majesty wished we might all be charitable to one another; and so delivered the Answer to us; which, after we had read amongst ourselves, the Earl of *Pembroke*, with the rest of the Commissioners, repairing to the King, desired his Majesty’s positive Answer and Consent to the Propositions: To which the King replied, That what he had delivered to us was his Answer; and that he could give no other, which he conceived was a positive Answer.

Hampton-Court, Sept. 9, 1647.

CHARLES R.

His Majesty’s
Answer to them.

HIS Majesty cannot chuse but be passionately sensible, as he believes all his good Subjects are, of the late great Distractions, and still languishing and unsettled State of this Kingdom; and he calls God to Witness, and is willing to give Testimony to all the World, of his Readiness to contribute his utmost Endeavours for restoring it to a happy and flourishing Condition.

His Majesty having perused the Propositions now brought to him, finds them the same, in effect, which were

were offered to him at Newcastle: To some of which An. 23. Car. I.
1647. as he could not then consent, without Violation of his Conscience and Honour, so neither can he agree to others now; concerning them, in many Respects, more disagreeable to the present Condition of Affairs than when they were formerly presented unto him, as being destructive to the main principal Interests of the Army, and of all those whose Affections concur with them. And his Majesty having seen the Proposals of the Army to the Commissioners from his two Houses residing with them, and with them to be treated on, in order to the clearing and securing of the Rights and Liberties of the Kingdom, and the settling of a just and lasting Peace: To which Proposals, as he conceives his two Houses not to be Strangers, so he believes they will think with him, that they much more conduce to the Satisfaction of all Interests, and may be a fitter Foundation for a lasting Peace, than the Propositions which at this Time are tendered unto him.

He therefore propounds, as the best Way in his Judgment, in order to a Peace, that his two Houses would instantly take into Consideration those Proposals upon which there may be a Personal Treaty with his Majesty, and upon such other Propositions as his Majesty shall make; hoping that the said Propositions may be so moderated in the said Treaty as to render them the more capable of his Majesty's full Concession; wherein he resolves to give full Satisfaction to his People for whatsoever shall concern the settling of the Protestant Profession, with Liberty to tender Consciences, and the securing of the Laws, Liberties, and Properties of all his Subjects, and the just Privileges of Parliaments for the future: And likewise by his present Deportment in this Treaty, he will make the World clearly judge of his Intentions in Matters of future Government: In which Treaty his Majesty will be well pleased, if it be thought fit, that Commissioners from the Army (whose the Proposals are) may likewise be admitted.

His Majesty therefore conjures his two Houses of Parliament, by the Duty they owe to God and his
Ma-

300 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 23. Car. 1. *Majesty their King, and by the Bowels of Compassion they have to their Fellow-Subjects, both for the Relief of their present Sufferings, and to prevent future Miseries, that they will forthwith accept of this his Majesty's Offer, whereby the joyful News of Peace may be restored to this distressed Kingdom.*

1647.
September.

And for what concerns the Kingdom of Scotland, mentioned in the Propositions, his Majesty will very willingly treat upon these Particulars with the Scots Commissioners, and doubts not but to give reasonable Satisfaction to that his Kingdom.

Sept. 17 We yet meet with no Notice taken of Sir *John Evelyn's* Message, delivered to the Lords on the 8th Instant, except that, on this Day, another Message from the Commons is entered, desiring the Lords to appoint a Time when the House of Commons might bring their Proofs and Evidences against seven Lords, Members of that House, impeached by them of High Treason; but nothing more is added at this Time.

Sept. 21. A Letter from Sir *Thomas Fairfax* was read, addressed to the Speaker of the House of Lords.

My Lord,

Putney, Sept. 20, 1647.

Sir *Thomas Fairfax's* Letter, desiring a Restraint of the Press.

I Have inclosed some printed Pamphlets, which are not only very scandalous and abusive to this Army in particular, but indeed to the whole Kingdom in general: My Desire is that these, and all of the like Nature, may be suppressed for the future; and yet (that the Kingdom's Expectation may be satisfied, in relation to Intelligence, till a firm Peace be settled, considering the Mischiefs that will happen by the poisonous Writings of evil Men sent abroad daily, to abuse and deceive the People) that, if the House shall see it fit, some two or three Sheets may be permitted to come forth weekly, which may be licensed, and have some Stamp of Authority with them: And in respect the former Licenser,

Mr.

‘ Mr. *Mabbot*, hath approved himself faithful in An. 23. Car. 1.
 ‘ that Service of Licencing, and likewise in the Ser- 1647.
 ‘ vice of the Houses and of this Army, I humbly
 ‘ desire that he may be restored and continued in
 ‘ the same Place of Licenser.’
 September.

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

THO. FAIRFAX.

Pursuant to this Letter an Ordinance was ordered to be drawn up for restraining the Liberty of the Press, which we shall meet with in the Sequel.

Sept. 22. The Parliament had another great Alarm given them on the Side of *Ireland*; they had Intelligence sent them that the Lord *Inchiquin*, their General, and Col. *Jones*, who had gained the last Victory over the Rebels, had a Design to join with the *Scots* Army there; and, altogether, to declare for the King, Parliament, and Covenant, and resist the *English* Army. The whole of this Affair was communicated to the Lords, this Day, in the following intercepted Letters, which we give from their *Journals*. And first,

A LETTER from Major-General Stirling to the Lord Warriston, at Edinburgh.

My Lord,

Cork, August 31, 1647.

‘ Since I saw you last, I might say much for the
 ‘ short Time which I have been very much
 ‘ troubled; but yet, whatsoever Time I could
 ‘ spend in the public Service, according to the
 ‘ Covenant, I should not think that Time trou-
 ‘ blefome to me. If I should write every Passage
 ‘ of the said Time, I must be mighty troublefome
 ‘ to you; I therefore, as the main Thing, must of
 ‘ Necessity let you know what has been acted a-
 ‘ mong us, for the Public, here in this Army: All
 ‘ of us now are in one entire Mind, and willing
 ‘ to

Several intercept-
 ed Letters and
 Papers relating
 to Ireland.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

September.

to serve the Public according to the National Covenant; which all of us have entirely tied ourselves to, by a new Oath, that we shall, with the Hazard of all our Lives and Fortunes, maintain the Covenant of the two Nations; as we have set forth in a Declaration and Protestation to the Parliament of *England*, the Copy whereof I have sent, with a Letter to the General, to be made known to the States of *Scotland*, desiring to hear from his Excellency his Advice, which we shall not fail to observe according to our best Endeavours. I am desired by our General and Council of War here to signify so much unto the States of *Scotland*, being assured of their best Advice; and therefore, my Lord, to you, as one of them, who is one of those I hope, who is a faithful Man to the Public, and one who is well acquainted with both Kingdoms.

Upon the same Confidence and Knowledge of you, I was commanded to let you know of * * *, and to desire you to confer with the General herein, who has the public Letter from us altogether, signed only by me, I being best known to *Scotland*; to that End I have sent this Bearer, my Servant, to bring me the General's Advice and Answer upon it, with yours; which I humbly desire may be dispatched with all the Haste that may be.

I have writ to this Effect to * * * at *Dublin*, and to *Monro*, who, I humbly desire, may know your Mind herein, that I may hear from him. I shall not doubt of your Answer suddenly, that I may communicate it to those who have intrusted me with so great a Message; and shall be very faithful in communicating the same according to your Directions.

My Lord, I pray present my humblest Service to the Marquis of *Argyle*, to the Chancellor the Earl of *Loudon*, and to my worthy Friend the Lord *Humby*.

My Lord, I have much more to say, but the rest I leave to the Bearer, who will inform your Lord-

‘ Lordship as near as he can. I could have no
 ‘ trustier Messenger. With my Respects to you,
 ‘ I humbly take Leave, and rest

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

September,

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

ROB^t. STIRLING.

Another Letter from Major-General *Stirling*,
 address'd to Major-General *Monro*.

Honoured Sir,

Cork, Aug. 30, 1647.

‘ THIS Bearer, my Servant, I have sent to
 ‘ *Scotland* with a Letter to the General, to
 ‘ signify unto him that all the Officers in this Ar-
 ‘ my have declared themselves for the King and
 ‘ Parliament, according to the National Covenant,
 ‘ in a Remonstrance to the Parliament of *England*,
 ‘ the Copy whereof you have here inclosed; which
 ‘ we all of us in this Army have signed, and are
 ‘ resolved to maintain with the Hazard of our
 ‘ Lives and Fortunes, against all Sectaries or any
 ‘ new modelled Parliament of such. The Ground
 ‘ of our Declaration is upon good Intelligence
 ‘ that Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, a Fox indeed, is march'd
 ‘ to *London*; and there with his Sectary Army, hath
 ‘ possessed himself and them in the Towns and
 ‘ Forts thereof; and therefore I am desir'd to let
 ‘ you know so much by our Council of War; de-
 ‘ siring you would be pleas'd to let me know by
 ‘ your Letter, so near as you may, how you mind
 ‘ to steer your Course since we are so resolved to
 ‘ be your faithful Friends, which I shall faithfully
 ‘ communicate unto them according to Direction.

‘ I humbly intreat your Honour would be pleas'd
 ‘ to dispatch this Bearer away for *Scotland*, for the
 ‘ Ship is to stay till he return to you again. This
 ‘ also I have made known unto Sir *Patrick* * * *,
 ‘ to signify so much to Col. *Jones* and his Army,
 ‘ if he finds them to be that Way inclined.

‘ Sir, I should desire, when any Occasion offers,
 ‘ to hear from you, that we may be the more ser-
 ‘ viceable to the good Cause we have in Hand.

‘ Sir,

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

September.

‘ Sir, I must not forget to tell you, that we have
 ‘ been most Part in the Field this Summer, and
 ‘ have done very good Service, and much ; the
 ‘ Particulars I leave to the Bearer’s Relation, and
 ‘ with any other Particulars you may trust him, as I
 ‘ am informed, he is a * * * of your own, and
 ‘ is a very honest Man : That is only by the way.

‘ Sir, be assured that if there be any Service here,
 ‘ wherein I may be serviceable, either to *Scotland*
 ‘ or yourself, there shall none be more ready and
 ‘ willing than he who is

Your Honour’s

Most affectionate and humble Servant,

ROB^t. STIRLING.

The Remonstrance of the Officers in the *Irish*
 Army, mentioned in the foregoing Letter.

*An HUMBLE REMONSTRANCE to the High and
 Honourable Court of Parliament from the Of-
 ficers and Soldiers of the Army in Munster.*

Declaring,

‘ **T**HAT we having received late Advertise-
 ‘ ment out of *England* of great Distractions
 ‘ and Distempers ; and sundry of us having the
 ‘ former Experience that, during the Lord Lieu-
 ‘ tenant’s Abode here, divers Persons in Places of
 ‘ Trust and Confidence were, under Pretence of
 ‘ new modelling the Army, turned disgracefully
 ‘ out of their Places and Employments ; some ruin-
 ‘ ed in their Fortunes, and others prosecuted for
 ‘ their Lives, notwithstanding the apparent Service
 ‘ performed by them, in Preservation of the State’s
 ‘ Interest here, with the Hazard of their Lives and
 ‘ loss of their Estates, which they sacrificed to that
 ‘ End ; and that for no other Reason than because
 ‘ they sought to maintain the Interest of the Au-
 ‘ thority of the Parliament of *England*, according
 ‘ to their Ordinances and the National Covenant :
 ‘ We

' We, therefore, being sadly apprehensive how An. 23. Car. I.
 ' much the Interest of the Parliament may be pre- 1647.
 ' judic'd, both in that and this Kingdom, by such
 ' as endeavour the Innovation of Government;
 ' and also sensible of what is requisite to be acted
 ' by us, in order to our own Preservation, do hold it
 ' our Duty to preserve the Authority of the Parlia-
 ' ment, according as it is now established here,
 ' untill we receive Assurance that our Submission to
 ' any other Power shall be consonant to their Plea-
 ' sure, whereunto we shall always readily subscribe;
 ' but, for the Reasons before expressed, we desire
 ' that, before any other Power or Government be
 ' established over us, they will be pleased to secure
 ' us against the Scorn and Practice of our Adver-
 ' saries; by whose Means many of us will other-
 ' wise undoubtedly be exposed to Contumely and
 ' unworthy Usage; and not only the Memory of
 ' our best Services defaced, but also deprived of
 ' future Hope of Employment or Sustenance: And
 ' therefore we humbly desire that it may receive
 ' no sinister Interpretation, if we expect and de-
 ' sire, in pursuance of the like Course held with
 ' the Army in *England*, that the High and Honour-
 ' able Court of Parliament would be pleased, before
 ' they make any such Alteration in the Govern-
 ' ment here, first to cause Payment of, or Assurance
 ' and Security to be past for, all the Arrears due
 ' unto the Officers and Soldiers of this Army, for
 ' their present and past Services, either in *England*
 ' or this Kingdom; together with such other As-
 ' surance and Security for our Indemnity, the Pre-
 ' servation of the Common Interest in *Ireland*, as
 ' well to ourselves, as to the rest of the oppressed
 ' and distressed Inhabitants of this Province; and for
 ' the securing unto our Clergy the Exercise of their
 ' Function, and the Enjoyment of their Livings,
 ' according to the Ordinance of Parliament; with
 ' a Concession of such other reasonable and mo-
 ' derate Requests and Proposals, as may be con-
 ' sistent with Justice, upon an indifferent Debate
 ' of our Desires; without which we may in nowise
 ' VOL. XVI. U ' account

September.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

September.

‘ account ourselves secured against the Practices of
 ‘ our Adversaries, of whose Oppression, Fury, and
 ‘ Rigor some of us have had several Examples.
 ‘ And because we may not leave any just Grounds
 ‘ for our Adversaries to asperse us, (which they will
 ‘ earnestly endeavour, as we have Reason to be-
 ‘ lieve by the Sight of several printed Pamphlets
 ‘ somented by them) with a Suspicion that we in-
 ‘ tend any other Thing than a dutiful Obedience
 ‘ to the lawful Authority of Parliament, and a care-
 ‘ ful and Christian Regard to our own just Prefer-
 ‘ vation, we do hereby manifest and declare, That
 ‘ we shall not, in the least Measure, delay or re-
 ‘ tard the vigorous Prosecution of the War here
 ‘ against the bloody Rebels to the best and utter-
 ‘ most of our Power and Ability; but will con-
 ‘ stantly employ all our Endeavours to advance
 ‘ the same, unless extreme and irresistable Necessity
 ‘ restrain us; which we hope it will be the Piety
 ‘ and Care of the Honourable Houses to prevent
 ‘ by seasonable Supplies: Wherefore, if these shall
 ‘ be afforded unto us, we do faithfully promise,
 ‘ by God’s Blessing, to give a good Account; and
 ‘ doubt not but to yield such clear Account of
 ‘ our Integrity and candid Intentions, as will fully
 ‘ refute the Scandal and Calumnies of our unjust
 ‘ Adversaries; which being presented to the High
 ‘ and Honourable Court of Parliament, we hum-
 ‘ bly desire may be taken into their serious Con-
 ‘ sideration.’

Whereupon the
 Parliament order
 a Reinforcement
 of Troops to be
 sent over to that
 Kingdom.

After reading all these Papers in the House of
 Lords, the following Votes concerning the Army
 and Garrisons, sent up by the Commons, were
 read and agreed to, viz.

‘ Resolved by the Lords and Commons assem-
 bled in Parliament, 1. That, for the present Re-
 lief of *Ireland*, there be five Regiments of Foot,
 of 1200 Men a-piece, drawn together.

2. ‘ That four Regiments of Horse, of 600
 ‘ Men a-piece, be drawn together.

3. ‘ That

3. ' That there be drawn together five Companies of Dragoons, of 100 Men a-piece, four of them to be join'd to the four Regiments of Horse by the Commanders of those four Regiments; and the other Company of Dragoons to be join'd to Col. Jones's Regiment, and commanded by him.

4. ' That the Commissioners of the Army do confer and debate with the General, or such as he shall appoint, how all the Forces, designed by these Votes for *Ireland*, may be fitted and put in a Readiness to be speedily transported into *Ireland*.

5. ' That the Field Officers and Captains, that shall command these Forces in *Ireland* in a Regimental Way, shall be presented to the Houses for their Approbation; and that it be referred to the Commissioners of the Army to confer with the General, or such as he shall appoint, for that Purpose.

6. ' That, for the present Security of this Kingdom, untill Affairs be better settled, and in order to the future Relief of *Ireland*, 7200 Horse be kept up in *England*.

7. ' That, for the Purposes aforesaid, 1000 Dragoons be kept up in *England*.

8. ' That, for the same Purpose, there be kept up, within this Kingdom, 18,000 Foot.

9. ' That, for the Purposes aforesaid, 200 Firelocks be kept up within this Kingdom.

10. ' That the whole Matter concerning the Settlement of the Garrisons of the Kingdom be referred to the Consideration of the General, and the Commissioners appointed to reside with the Army, who shall confer and debate with him, or whom he shall appoint, upon the same; and that such Gentlemen of the House of Commons, that desire to represent any Thing concerning the Garrisons in their several Counties, may have Notice to be there present, if they shall think fit.

11. ' For all these Forces designed for *Ireland* it is agreed there be one Month's Pay paid them, by way of Advance, at the Water Side; and, for their Arrears, the Proportion following, viz.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

September.

‘ For such of the 2000 aforesaid, as left the Army, two Months Arrears; and for the rest of that Number, that were not of the Army, but have since joined to them, one Month’s Arrears.

‘ For Col. *Birch*’s Foot, one Month’s Arrears to what they have had already.

‘ For the 3000 out of *Wales, Devonshire, Cheshire, Yorkshire, and Lancashire*, two Months Arrears.

‘ And for the Horse and Dragoons, two Months Arrears.

‘ For stating the Accounts, and settling the Certainty of all these Forces, it is agreed,

‘ For those of the Army to go for *Ireland*, and such of the Train as are to be reduced, that the Committee of the Army and Treasurers at War do state their Accounts, deducting for free Quarter of private Soldiers and Troopers, for which one Half is offered to be abated.

‘ For the rest, that Letters be written to the several Committees of the Counties under which they served, upon a List signed by the Colonel under whom they shall now go for *Ireland*, to require the several Committees, with all Diligence, to state the Accounts of the Persons mentioned in such Lists, according to the late Instructions of both Houses, and give Debentures.

‘ For the rest of the Forces that remain in the Kingdom after these two Bodies for *England* and *Ireland* be compleated, that they be forthwith disbanded by the respective Committees of the Counties, upon Advice with the General; and that they do pay them two Months Arrears, and they to be repaid by the Parliament, if the said Counties be not already enabled by the Parliament thereunto.’

Sir John Gaire,
Lord Mayor of
London, im-
peached of High
Treason.

Sept. 27. A Message was brought up from the House of Commons by Sir *Peter Wentworth* and others, that he was commanded by the Knights, Citizens, and Burgesses of that House, to impeach Sir *John Gaire*, Knt. now Lord Mayor of the City of *London*, of High Treason; and he did, in their Names; and of all the Commons of *Eng-land*,

land, impeach Sir *John Gaire*, Knt. of the same: An. 23. Car. 1.
That the House had already secured him in the
Tower of *London*; and they desired their Lordships
would appoint a speedy Day, and they would be
ready to bring up their Articles, Proofs, and Evi-
dences against him.

1647.
September.

An Order from both Houses was sent to the
City, to elect another Lord Mayor in the Room
of Sir *John Gaire*. Accordingly Alderman *John
Warner* was elected into that Office.

Sept. 30. This Day both Houses passed an Or-
dinance against unlicensed and scandalous Pam-
phlets, and for better regulating of Printing; which,
since it is not in Mr. *Rushworth's* Collections, and
is one of the severest Restraints upon the Press
we have yet met with, we give the following Ab-
stract of it:

THE Lords and Commons in Parliament as-
sembled, taking Notice of the many sedi-
tious, false and scandalous, Pamphlets daily print-
ed and published in and about *London* and *West-*
minster, and thence dispersed into all Parts of
this Realm, and other Parts beyond the Seas;
to the great Abuse and Prejudice of the People,
and unsufferable Reproach of the Proceedings of
the Parliament and their Army: For the better
Suppression thereof, and Prevention of the like
Inconveniences for the Time to come, do order
and ordain,

An Ordinance
for restraining
the Liberty of
the Press.

I. That what Person soever shall make, write,
print, publish, sell, or utter, any Book, Pamphlet,
Treatise, Ballad, Libel, or Sheet of News, what-
soever, or cause so to be done, except the same
be licensed by both or either House of Parliament,
or by such Persons as shall be thereunto authori-
zed by one or both Houses of Parliament, with
the Name of the Author, Printer and Licenser
thereunto prefixed, shall, for every such Of-
fence, suffer, pay, and incur the Punishment,
Fine, and Penalty hereafter mentioned, viz. The

Maker,

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

September.

‘ Maker, Writer, or Composer of any such unlicensed Book, &c. shall forfeit and pay 40s. or be imprisoned in the common Goal for the County or Liberty where the Offence is committed, or the Offender shall be found, untill he shall pay the Sum, so that the said Imprisonment exceed not forty Days. The Printer to pay 20s. and suffer the like Imprisonment till he pay the same, the said Imprisonment not to exceed twenty Days; and likewise to have his Press and Implements of Imprinting seized and broken in Pieces. The Bookseller or Stationer to forfeit and pay 10s. or to be imprisoned in like Manner till he pay the same, the Imprisonment not exceeding ten Days: And the Hawker, Pedlar, or Ballad-Singer to forfeit and lose all his Books, Pamphlets, or printed Papers exposed to Sale; and also to be whipped as a common Rogue in the Liberty or Parish where the said Offender shall be apprehended, or the Offence committed.

II. ‘ The severall and respective Commissioners for the Militia, in *London, Middlesex, and Surrey*, and all Mayors and other Head-Officers of Corporations, and all Justices of the Peace of the severall Counties, Cities, and Liberties in *England and Wales*, and every of them, in their respective Liberties and Jurisdictions, are hereby authorized and required to put this Ordinance in Execution; and all Constables, Headboroughs, and other Officers, are hereby authorized and required to put this Ordinance in Execution; and, together with such Assistance as they shall call unto them, to enter into any Shop or House where they shall be informed, or have good Cause to suspect, any such unlicensed Pamphlets or Papers are printed or sold, and to seize the same, and likewise all Presses and Implements of Printing, and to bring them, together with the Offenders, before the said Commissioners, Mayors, &c. or any one of them; so that the Fines, Pains, and Penalties before-mentioned may be inflicted

‘ inflicted upon the Offenders, according to the An. 23. Car. I.
‘ Intent and Meaning of this Ordinance. 1647.

III. ‘ The View of any one Justice of the Peace, Head-Officer, or Commissioner aforesaid, or the Oath of one credible Witness, (which Oath, in such Case, they are hereby authorized to administer) shall be a sufficient Conviction of any Offender in the Cases before recited; and the same Justices of the Peace, Mayors, &c. have hereby Authority to dispose of one Moiety of the Fines paid by virtue of this Ordinance, to the Collectors of the Poor for the Liberty or Parish where the Offence is committed, and the other Moiety to the Person who shall discover and prosecute the said Offenders. September.

IV. ‘ All Persons acting any Thing by virtue of this Ordinance shall be indemnified by Authority of both Houses of Parliament.

‘ Provided always, That the Penalties in this Ordinance expressed, shall not extend to acquit any Person that shall make, write, print, publish, or sell, or cause to be so done, any Books, &c. that shall contain any seditious, treasonable, or blasphemous Matter; but the Offenders in that Kind shall be liable to such further Penalties as, by the Laws of this Land, are provided, or by Authority of Parliament shall be adjudged, according to the Penalty of such Offences.’

In pursuance of this Ordinance Mr. *Gilbert Mabbot* was appointed Licenser of the Press, upon the Recommendation of Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, in his Letter of the 20th of this Month.

The Commons sent up a Vote they had made, That the Parliament should, once again, make Application to the King for those Things which the Houses judge necessary for the Welfare and Safety of the Kingdom. Agreed to by the Lords. The Parliament resolve to make another Application to the King;

But this Vote was first strongly debated in the House of Commons, though, upon the Question, it was carried by a large Majority, 70 against 23.

October

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

October.

October 1. Pursuant to this Vote, an Order was made to acquaint the *Scots* Commissioners with it; and that, in order to perfect it, both Houses had taken into Consideration what Things to propound and insist upon for the Interest of the Kingdom of *England*, which they hoped to have finished in twenty Days; and that then the Houses would impart the Particulars of them to those Commissioners. In like Manner the Parliament would join with the *Scots* in insisting on the same Things for the Good of their Kingdom, which were in the last Propositions, unless the Estates there had agreed, or shall agree, to any Alterations: And if any such be made, the Houses desired to hear of them within the Time limited, that no more Time may be lost in sending of them all together to the King.

Both Houses were now busy for some Days, in preparing their new Propositions for the King, and several Articles of them were debated and agreed to; the Consequences whereof will be shewn in the Sequel.

And pass an Ordinance against Delinquents.

The Parliament also, at this Time, passed an Ordinance for disabling Delinquents from bearing any Office, or having any Voice or Vote in the Election of any Mayor, Recorder, Sheriffs, Aldermen, &c. in any City, Borough, or Town Corporate, Universities, or other Place in the Kingdom of *England* or Dominion of *Wales*.

Oct. 7. A Letter from the Committee of the Estates of *Scotland* was read, and ordered to be sent down to the House of Commons, in *hæc Verba*:

For the Right Honourable the LORDS and COMMONS in the Parliament of England, assembled at Westminster,

Edinburgh, Sept. 27, 1647.

Right Honourable,

The *Scots* Commissioners agree to call home their Army from *Ireland*.

YOUR Letter of the 6th of this Month, containing your Resolutions for Discharge of the

the *Scots Army in Ireland*, upon the 12th and
 13th Articles of the Treaty made in that Be-
 half, being presented to his Majesty's Privy-
 Council of this Kingdom, and by them commu-
 nicated to us, to whom the Care and Disposal of
 that Army is intrusted by the Parliament of this
 Kingdom, according to our Commission of the
 19th Day of *March* last; and we having taken
 the same into Consideration, are most willing that
 the Treaty mentioned therein, concerning the
Scots Army in Ireland, and which was assented
 to by both Houses upon the 7th of *August*, 1642,
 be punctually observed in all the Articles thereof;
 which being equally obliging to reciprocal Per-
 formances, we do declare, in the Name of this
 Kingdom, that the Kingdom of *England*, mak-
 ing good what by Articles of the Treaty, espe-
 cially the 6th and 11th, their publick Faith
 is engaged for, *viz.* That Payment shall be made
 to the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and their Army, of
 all Dues that shall arise upon that Treaty; and
 that when the *Scots Army*, employed in the Ser-
 vice of *Ireland*, shall be discharged, they shall be
 disbanded by Regiments, and no lesser Propor-
 tions, and so many of them paid off as shall be
 disbanded, and the Residue kept in Pay untill
 they shall be disbanded; and that the *Scots Ar-*
my shall be entertained by the *English* for three
 Months from *June* 20, 1642, and so long
 after till they be discharged; and that they
 shall have one Month's Pay advanced when
 they are first mustered in *Ireland*, and there-
 after shall be paid from Month to Month;
 and that there shall be a Muster-Master appoint-
 ed by the *English* Muster-Master-General, to
 make strict and frequent Muster of the *Scots Ar-*
my; and that what Companies of Men shall be
 sent out of *Scotland*, within the Compass of
 10,000 Men, shall be paid upon their Musters
 in *Ireland*, though they make not compleat Re-
 giments; and the common Soldiers receiving
 their fourteen Days Pay at their Dismission to
 carry

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.

October.

AN. 25. Car. I.

1647.

October.

carry them home, then the Army shall be forth-
with disbanded and turned home.

And we are confident that, when the Honour-
able Houses shall remember what Miseries that
Army hath endured, through not due Payment
of what the Kingdom of *England* was obliged to
for them; what Temptations they have with-
stood, and how constant and faithful they have
been to this Service and to the Crown of *Eng-
land*, they will find it just that, as is promised in
their Letter, Care be taken for their due Satis-
faction before they be recalled from the Service;
and that, either upon Account of all the Parti-
culars, or upon a general Estimate to be agreed
on for the whole. This is the Expectation of
the Kingdom, and is hereby, in the Name of
the Committee of Estates thereof, signed by

Your Lordships

Affectionate Friend and Servant,

LOUDON, *Cancellarius.*

Oct. 8. Information was given to the Lords,
That whereas divers Ordinances had passed both
Houses of Parliament for the regulating the Uni-
versity of *Oxford*, and they had granted a Com-
mission, under the Great Seal of *England*, for that
Purpose; yet Dr. *Fell* took the Boldness upon
him to execute the Vice-Chancellor's Place, dis-
obeying all Ordinances and Powers of the Parlia-
ment; speaking insolent Words against them; won-
dering what Great Seal it is the Commission was
seal'd with, and questioning how the Parliament
came by a Great Seal. Whereupon the Lords
declared the said Dr. *Fell* to be no Vice-Chancel-
lor of that University, and ordered that he should
be sent for as a Delinquent, to answer the same at
the Bar of that House.

Oct. 10. The following Letter from Colonel
Jones in *Ireland*, was read this Day to the Lords:

To

To the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER, An. 23. Car. 1.
Speaker of the House of LORDS. 1647.

My Lord,

Dublin, Sep. 27, 1647.

October.

According to the Commands on me laid, I have given the Acknowledgment of the Houses to the Officers here; who had all of them, in their respective Commands, very well merited of the Public in the late Service at *Dungan-Hill*, with which your Lordships Sense of that their Service they rest very well satisfied: However some of them had before resented something, they being passed over, while others were remembered, in the Rewards of that Service dispensed by the Houses.

Col. Jones's Account of the State of the Rebels in that Kingdom.

Preston's Papers, commonly called the Cabinet, (though with no Cabinet) shall be sent by the first sure Hands. I gain'd them in a scattered Way, from several Hands, as they were snatch'd up in the Field. It was expected they might have given us other Discoveries than, upon Perusal, I find in them; so as, had it not been in Obedience to the Commands therein laid on me, I should not value them worthy so great taking Notice of.

I have sent a Ship to *Munster* with those Letters thither directed, and appointed to be hence transmitted to the Lord *Inchequin*, in Colonel *Stirling's* Letter to Major-General *Monroe*; in which, among other intercepted Papers I have formerly sent thither, there was Mention made of a Vessel which was to attend the Return of his Servant *Downing*, the Bearer of those Letters; that Vessel being, as is probably conceiv'd, the *Charles* Frigate, belonging to the Lord *Inchequin*, but in the Parliament's Pay, I made stay of; wherein I desire your Lordship's Pleasure.

I had before intimated my Resolutions for taking the Field, but hitherto I could not compass the doing of it, partly in the Unseasonableness of the Weather, wherein the naked and bare-

footed

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

October.

‘ footed Soldier had been endangered; partly, ob-
 ‘ serving the Enemy’s Motion, whereby I might
 ‘ find how to direct my Course; and partly, ex-
 ‘ pecting the Northern Forces, commanded by Co-
 ‘ lonel *Monk*. Now I find the Rebels drawn to
 ‘ an Head, under the Command of their *Ulster*
 ‘ General, *Owen Roe*. As for *Preston*, he is drawn
 ‘ out of the Field for the securing of *Kilkenny* and
 ‘ *Waterford*, of both which Places he is made
 ‘ Commander.

‘ The Strength of the *Ulster* Rebels is given
 ‘ out to be about 8000 Horse and Foot, with
 ‘ whom are joined about 1800 Foot and 500 Horse
 ‘ of the *Leinster* Forces, Part of *Preston*’s Com-
 ‘ mand.

‘ Yesternight I had Intelligence from Colonel
 ‘ *Monk*, of his marching with 1500 Foot and
 ‘ 550 Horse, and that this Night he will be at
 ‘ *Dundalk*. On *Saturday* next, God willing, I
 ‘ shall set forward with the Forces here: The
 ‘ Lord of Hosts go along with us.

‘ Very great are the Discouragements of this
 ‘ Soldiery in the Want of all Things, the Store
 ‘ and Treasure here being wholly exhausted above
 ‘ ten Days since; so as I am put to the utmost
 ‘ of my Shifts for Provision and Pay for the Ar-
 ‘ my, which cannot hold out long, if not speedily
 ‘ supplied. It would be a Matter of exceeding
 ‘ great Discouragement, should I, through Want,
 ‘ be forced from out of the Field, as formerly I
 ‘ have been, after the Fight of *Dungan-Hill*. I
 ‘ should fail in my Duty to the Service, did I
 ‘ not thus represent to your Lordship the Necessi-
 ‘ ties of the Army; and I should be very much
 ‘ wanting to the Trust by the Houses reposed in
 ‘ me, in sitting down under any Discouragement
 ‘ less than Impossibilities; which I assure your
 ‘ Lordship I shall never do, resolving, notwith-
 ‘ standing all Difficulties, to let slip no Opportuni-
 ‘ ty for promoting this Service to the utmost of my
 ‘ Power; and relying on your Lordship’s Care of
 ‘ sup-

‘ supplying us as fully and as speedily as may be An. 23. Car. I.
‘ possible; so, humbly taking Leave, I remain

1647.
October.

My Lord,

Your Lordship's devoted Servant,

NICH. JONES.

Oct. 14. All this while the Impeachment of the House of Commons against the seven Lords had laid dormant in that House, and no farther Notice is taken of it in their *Journals*, than what is before given; till this Day we find that a Message from the Commons was sent up, declaring, ‘ That having long since brought up an Impeachment of High Treason, against *James Earl of Suffolk*, *Theophilus Earl of Lincoln*, *James Earl of Middlesex*, *George Lord Berkely*, *Francis Lord Willoughby*, *John Lord Hunsdon*, and *William Lord Maynard*, they desire their Lordships would please to appoint a Time when the House of Commons should bring up their Proofs against them. The Answer was, That the Lords appoint that Day Fortnight for the Purpose.

A Day appointed for the Trial of the seven Peers impeached by the Commons.

Oct. 15. The Lords ordered, That such of their Members as were within twenty Miles of *London*, should be summoned to attend the House the 19th Instant; and those Lords which were further off, to attend on that Day Fortnight; their Answers to be returned to the House; and all such Lords as were then in Town not to be absent without sufficient Excuse be made for them. This Order for Attendance, we suppose, was made so strict on account of the Impeachments.

A Call of both Houses.

The Commons had a Call of their House some Days before this; when it appearing that about 240 of their Members were absent^a, a Fine of twenty Pounds a-piece was set upon those whose

Ex-

^a Their Names are all entered in the *Commons Journals*, Oct. 1647.

318 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 23. Car. I. 1647. Excuses were not allowed; a second Call was ordered; and the Members to be summoned.

October.

Oct. 15. The Lords having, for several Days, debated the new Propositions to be sent to the King; this Day they were perfected, and all the separate Articles of them agreed to by that House. The Commons had several Divisions on different Points in these Propositions; particularly, *Oct. 13.* no less than three on the single Article of limiting the Time of the Settlement of Presbyterian Church-Government in *England*. The latter of which, on the Question, Whether it should be for seven Years? was carried in the Negative, by 41 against 33. It was then resolved, That the Time should be to the End of the next Session of Parliament after the End of this. They sent this Day also to let the House of Commons know it was their Opinion a Committee of both Houses should be appointed, to join with the Commissioners of *Scotland*, to carry the Propositions to the King; to enforce, by Reasons and Arguments, the Justness and Necessity of his Majesty's giving his Consent unto them; and, humbly, to desire and insist upon his positive Answer and Consent, and to return to the Houses within ten Days.

Oct. 19. This being the Day appointed for a Call of the House of Lords, and some of them sending their Excuses that they were not in Health, it was ordered to put off the Call to this Day Se'en night.

A Report from the Visitors appointed to regulate the University of Oxford. Having mentioned the University of *Oxford*, in the Case of *Dr. Fell*, we here subjoin an Entry made in the *Lords Journals*, on the 22d of this Month, relating to the Conduct of that whole Body on this particular Occasion.

The Earl of *Pembroke*, then lately appointed Chancellor by an Ordinance of Parliament, reported from the Committee of Lords and Com-

mons

mons appointed to regulate that Univerſity, ' That the Viſitors having ſent a Summons to Dr. *Pell*, then exerciſing the Place of Vice-Chancellor, and alſo to the Heads of Houſes, Doctours, Proctors, Profeſſors, and Delegates of that Univerſity, ſeverally, by a Mandatory, they came accordingly. And firſt they told the Commiſſioners, ' They did not know by what Authority the Viſitors did ſend for them; and thereupon deſired a View and Copy of their Commiſſion, which was granted them. After Peruſal thereof, they brought in their ſeveral Answers; which were to this Effect:

An. 23. Car. 2.
1647.
October.

' That they could not ſubmit to this Viſitation, becauſe they could not acknowledge any Viſitors but the King, or ſuch as were immediately ſent by his Majeſty.

' This was the Answer of the Delegates, choſen in a Convocation the firſt of June laſt, and appointed to give in their Answer in the Name of the Univerſity, conſiſting of ſixteen Doctours and thirteen Maſters of Arts.

' The Prebendaries of *Chriſt Church* preſented the ſame Answer.

' Others ſaid, They could not bring in their Registers, Statutes, &c. according to the Viſitors Order, becauſe of the Oaths which they had taken to obſerve the Statutes of their reſpective Houſes; which, as they ſay, binds them not to reveal the Secrets of their Colleges; which they muſt needs do, if they ſhould obey the Order ſent unto them from the Viſitors: That by Statutes ſome Biſhops were appointed to be Viſitors of the ſeveral Colleges; and therefore they could not, without Perjury, ſubmit to this Viſitation.

' Theſe were the Answers of the Heads of *New College*, *All Souls*, *St. John's*, *Wadham*, *Queen's*, *Univerſity*, *Braſen Noſe*, *Lincoln*, and *Exon*.

' Some added to this Answer, That ſeveral of their Society, whoſe Conſent was requiſite, were abſent from the Univerſity, and therefore they could not ſend in their Books. And theſe were *Baliol College*, *Oriel*, and *Corpus Chriſti*.

' Dr.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

October.

“*Dr. Potter*, the President of *Trinity College*, answered, He could not get a Resolution of the Fellows, without whose Consent he could not come by the Books required by Order.

“*Dr. Pelham*, the Vice-President of *Magdalen*, denying his Appearance, sent by the Visitors Mandatory this Answer, That his Business was within the College, and that he neither had, nor would, have any Thing to do in meddling with any general Business out of the College.

“*Sir Nathaniel Brent*, the Warden of *Merton College*, professed before the Visitors, that they should have the Books of his College whenever they called for them.

“*Mr. Langley*, the Master of *Pembroke College*, put in by Ordinance of Parliament, brought in what Books he could find; for he was opposed by *Mr. Whitwick*, who pretended to be Master, and had been put out by the Parliament.

“*Jesús College* submitted to the Visitation, and sent in their Books according to Order.

“The Beadles of the University being required to bring in their Staves, the Ensigns of their Office, answered, The Vice-Chancellor had them; who told them he could not deliver them without the Consent of the whole University.

“*Dr. Fell*, exercising the Place of Vice-Chancellor, being five several Times sent to by the Visitors to appear before them, and to bring in the Ensigns of his Office, refused to come, and also to send what was required; whereupon the Visitors made an Act, by which they divested him of that Office he pretended to, and also another Act for adjourning the Term till the 15th of *November* next: Notwithstanding which Act *Dr. Fell* did begin the Term, contrary to the Orders of the Visitors, which they had published to the University, and of which they had sent him a Copy.”

After this, both Houses agreed to refer the Consideration of this Report from the Visitors, to the Committee of Lords and Commons appointed for
regu-

regulating that Univerſity, and to apply effectual Remedies as the Caſe ſhall require. An. 23. Car. I. 1647.

November.

Oct. 28. After the Lords ſent up the new Propoſitions to the Houſe of Commons, mentioned on the 15th, they voted that no more Additions or Alterations ſhould be made in them; but the Commons demurred to this, and deſired a Conference with the Lords about them; the Altercations in which, on Terms and Phraſes, take up ſo many Pages in the *Lords Journals*, that it would be tedious even to give an Abſtract of them.

Nov. 3. This Day the Commons, according to Order, had a ſecond Call of their Houſe; but, before it, the Queſtion was put, Whether ſuch Members as did not appear at the Call, and were not excuſed, ſhould forfeit 20*l.* it paſſed in the Negative, 152 againſt 112, in all 264, the largeſt Number we have noted for ſome Years; tho', on a Diſviſion the very next Day, the Numbers were only 43 againſt 41.

Nov. 6. A Letter from the Scots Commiſſioners, to the Speaker of the Houſe of Commons, was read.^a

S I R, Worcester-Houſe, Nov. 5, 1647.

AS upon the Removal of his Maſteſty from Holdenby, againſt his Will, by a Party of the Army under the Command of Sir Thomas Fairfax, we expreſſed our Senſe, and the Reſentment of the Kingdom of Scotland, of that violent Action: So the Committee of Eſtates of the Parliament of Scotland, finding that his Maſteſty is ſtill kept within the Power of that Army, thought themſelves bound to endeavour to know the Certainty of his Condition. In Obedience to their Commands we applied ourſelves to his Maſteſty, that from himſelf we might know the Truth thereof; who was pleaſed to ſhew us his

A Letter to the Parliament from the Scots Commiſſioners, preſenting for a Perſonal Treaty with the King.

VOL. XVI. X Uſage

^a From the Original Edition printed by Robert Ibbetſon, and li- cented by Gilbert Mabbot. The Copy given in Mr. Roſſbavorth's Collections, Vol. VII. p. 264, is extremely incorrect, as will appear upon Compariſon.

An. 25. Car. 1.

1647.

November.

Usage ever since he came from *Newcastle*; but for his present Condition, he really professeth he cannot but refer us to know it from the two Houses of Parliament and the Army.

Both Houses, by many Professions and Engagements, have declared to the Kingdom of *Scotland* that they would take Care of the Preservation of his Person, his just Power and Greatness, which both Kingdoms have sworn not to diminish; and the Parliament of *Scotland*, upon the King's going to *Holdenby*, did declare against all Harm, Prejudice, Injury, or Violence to be done to his Royal Person. Therefore, in Pursuance of the Trust committed to us, we make this Address to the Honourable Houses; conceiving it needless to apply ourselves to the Army, who, we suppose, are or ought to be under their Command; desiring to know from them the Certainty of his Majesty's Condition; and the rather, for that we are informed there are Intentions in the Army for removing him from *Hampton-Court*.

The Kingdom of *Scotland* finding that their Stability and Happiness doth so much depend upon the Safety and Preservation of his Majesty's Royal Person: And being resolved that no Alteration of Affairs shall ever separate them from the Duty and Allegiance they owe unto his Majesty, nor from their constant Resolution to live in all Loyalty and Obedience under his Government, have often shewn their earnest Desires, and contributed their utmost Endeavours, towards the Composition of these unhappy Differences: And the Houses of Parliament having, by their Votes of the 28th of *October* last, intimated unto us their Resolution to apply themselves to his Majesty, and that they are preparing Propositions to be tendered to him; we desire that they may be expedited and communicated to us, that, according to our many Engagements and Relations, there may still be a Conjunction of Councils in those Things that are for the common Peace and joint Interest of both Kingdoms.

And

‘ And for the better asserting them, for clearing of
 ‘ his Majesty’s Doubts, and for giving and receiving
 ‘ mutual Satisfaction, we do desire, in the Name
 ‘ of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, that there may be a
 ‘ personal Treaty with his Majesty, as the best and
 ‘ readiest Means to obtain the joint Desires of both
 ‘ Kingdoms; and, for that Effect, that the King
 ‘ might be invited to come to *London*, with the
 ‘ Honour, Freedom, and Respect due to his Ma-
 ‘ jesty; or at least remain at *Hampton-Court*, and
 ‘ not to be under the Power and Restraint of the
 ‘ Soldiers, where both Kingdoms may make their
 ‘ free Applications to him without any Danger of
 ‘ such Stop or Affront as hath been already com-
 ‘ mitted against a Commissioner of *Scotland*, for
 ‘ which no Reparation hath been yet made, and
 ‘ that his Majesty be no more carried about with
 ‘ the Army at their Pleasure.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 November.

‘ These we conceive to be the most probable
 ‘ and effectual Means for attaining a happy Peace,
 ‘ and settling of Religion, restoring his Majesty
 ‘ to his just Rights, and continuing and strength-
 ‘ ening a good Understanding betwixt these King-
 ‘ doms, which are most earnestly desired by the
 ‘ Kingdom of *Scotland*; and shall be constantly
 ‘ and faithfully endeavoured by

Your Lordship’s humble Servants,

LOUDON,	H. KENNEDY,
LAUDERDALE,	ROB ^t . BARCLAY.
CHA. ERSKINE,	

The Lords ordered that this Letter from the
Scots Commissioners should be referred to a Com-
 mittee of their House, to consider of an Answer to
 it; and to send to the Commons to desire they
 would appoint a proportionable Number of their
 Members to join with them therein.

Nov. 9. This Day, according to former Order,
 the House of Lords was called over; and the Gen-
 tleman-Usher gave an Account that all the Lords,

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

November.

A Fine, of 100 l.
each, upon such
Lords as were ab-
sent at a Call of
that House.

then absent, had Notice given them to attend the House according to Order: On which it was agreed to set a Fine of 100 l. on each of them that had been summoned and did not appear, unless some Affidavit was made that they were not able to attend by reason of ill Health. The aforesaid Fine to be estreated in the *Exchequer*, unless Cause be shewn to the contrary, within a Week. But, amongst all the Peers, there was only the Lord *Herbert of Cherbury* fined; and he making his Excuse next Day, that his ill State of Health would not permit him to attend the Service of the House, the Fine was remitted, and he had longer Time given him; as there was to the rest of the Absentees, which were no more than four Lords, some to a longer and others to a shorter Date.

Nov. 10. On this Day it was that the Commons sent up the Preamble to the Propositions finally concluded, which was read in these Words:

‘The Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament do declare, That the King of *England*, for the Time being, is bound in Justice, and by the Duty of his Office, to give his Assent to all such Laws as, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, shall be adjudged to be for the Good of the Kingdom, and by them tendered unto him for his Assent; and, in pursuance thereof, do offer the ensuing Propositions to *his Majesty*, to be made Laws, for a present settling of a well-grounded Peace.’

Major-General *Stirling* and Lieutenant-Colonel *Marshall*, being brought from *Ireland*, were committed to the Custody of the Serjeant of the House of Commons for the present.

The King escapes
from Hampton-
Court:

Nov. 12. After both Houses had laboured with their Propositions so long, and were at last delivered of them, they were dreadfully alarmed this Day, with Intelligence from the Lord *Montague*, That the King had escaped the Night before from
Hampton-

Hampton-Court; and that the following Papers, all of his own Hand-writing, were found upon the Table in his Chamber.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

November.

And first, was read his Majesty's Letter to the Lord *Montague*, one of the Parliament's Commissioners appointed to attend him.

Hampton-Court, Nov. 11, 1647.

Montague,

First I do hereby give you, and the rest of your Fellows, Thanks for the Civilities and good Conversation that I have had from you. Next I command you to send this my Message, which you will find upon my Table, to the two Houses of Parliament; and likewise to give a Copy of it to Col. Whaley, to be sent to the General. Likewise I desire you to send all my Saddle-Horses to my Son the Duke of York; as for what concerns the Resolution I have taken, my declaratory Message says so much that I refer you to it; and so I rest

His Letter to the Lord Montague on that Occasion,

Your assured Friend,

CHARLES R.

Next the King's Message was read :

For the SPEAKER of the House of LORDS *pro Tempore*, to be communicated to the Lords and Commons in the Parliament of England, at Westminster, and to the Commissioners of the Parliament of Scotland, and to all my other Subjects, of what Degree, Condition or Calling, forever.

Hampton-Court, Nov. 11, 1647.

CHARLES R.

Liberty being that which in all Times hath been, but especially now is, the common Theme and Desire of all Men, common Reason shews that Kings, less than any, should endure Captivity; yet I call God to witnes with what Patience I have endured a tedious Restraint; which so long as I had

His Message to the Parliament,

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

November.

any Hopes that this Sort of my Suffering might conduce to the Peace of my Kingdoms, or the hindering of more Effusion of Blood, I did willingly undergo; but now finding, by too certain Proofs, that this my continued Patience would not only turn to my personal Ruin, but likewise be of much more Prejudice than Furthurance to the Public Good, I thought I was bound, as well by natural as political Obligations, to seek my Safety, by retiring myself, for some Time, from the public View both of my Friends and Enemies. And I appeal to all indifferent Men to judge, if I have not just Cause to free myself from the Hands of those who change their Principles with their Condition, and who are not ashamed openly to intend the Destruction of the Nobility, by taking away their Negative Voice, and with whom the Levellers Doctrine is rather countenanced than punished: And as for their Intentions to my Person, their changing and putting more strict Guards upon me, with the discharging most of all those Servants of mine who formerly they willingly admitted to wait upon me, do sufficiently declare. Nor would I have this my Retirement misinterpreted; for I shall earnestly and incessantly endeavour the Settling of a safe and well-grounded Peace wherever I am, or shall be; and that, as much as may be, without the Effusion of more Christian Blood; for which how many Times have I desired, pressed to be heard, and yet no Pardon to me? And can any reasonable Man think that, according to the ordinary Course of Affairs, there can be a settled Peace without it, or that God will bless those who refuse to hear their own King? Surely no. Nay, I must farther add, that, besides what concerns myself, unless all other chief Interests have not only a Hearing, but likewise just Satisfaction given unto them, (to wit, the Presbyterians, Independants, Army, those who have adhered to me, and even the Scots) I say there cannot (I speak not of Miracles, it being, in my Opinion, a sinful Presumption, in such Cases, to expect or trust to them) be a safe or lasting Peace. Now as I cannot deny but that my personal Security is the urgent Cause of this my
Re-

Retirement, so I take God to witness, that the Public Peace is no less before my Eyes; and I can find no better Way to express this my Profession, (I know not what a wiser Man may do) than by desiring and urging, that all chief Interests may be heard, to the end each may have just Satisfaction. As for Example; the Army (for the rest though necessary, yet, I suppose, are not difficult to content) ought, in my Judgment, to enjoy the Liberty of their Consciences, and have an Act of Oblivion or Indemnity, which should extend to the rest of my Subjects; and that all their Arrears should be speedily and duly paid, which I will undertake to do, so I may be heard, and that I be not hindered from using such lawful and honest Means as I shall chuse.

To conclude: Let me be heard with Freedom, Honour, and Safety, and I shall instantly break thro' this Cloud of Retirement, and shall shew myself really to be Pater Patriæ.

Then a Letter of the King's to Col. Whaley was read.

Hampton-Court, Nov. 11, 1647.

Col. Whaley,

I Have been so civilly used by you and Major Huntingdon, that I can't but, by this parting Farewell, acknowledge it under my Hand; as also to desire the Continuance of your Courtesy, by your protecting my Household Stuff and Movables of all Sorts, which I leave behind me in this House, that they be neither spoiled nor embezzled; only there are three Pictures here, which are not mine, which I desire you to restore; to wit, my Wife's Picture in Blue, sitting in a Chair, you must send to Mrs. Kirk; my eldest Daughter's Picture, copied by Belcam, to the Countess of Anglesea; and my Lady Stanhope's Picture to Carew Rawleigh. There is a fourth Picture, which I had almost forgot; it is the Original of my eldest Daughter, (it hangs in the Chamber over the Board next to the Chimney) which you must send to my Lady Aubigney. So, being confi-

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

November.

And another
Letter to Col.
Whaley.

dent

An. 23. Car. 1. *dent that you wish my Preservation and Restitution,*
1647- *I rest*

November.

Your Friend,

CHARLES R.

P. S. *I assure you that it was not the Letter you shewed me To-day that made me take this Resolution, nor any Advertisement of that Kind; but I confess that I am loath to be made a close Prisoner, under Pretence of securing my Life.*

I had almost forgot to desire you to send the black-grey Bitch to the Duke of Richmond.

The Letter to the King, above referred to, was read, subscribed only with E. R.

London, Nov. 9, 1647.

May it please your Majesty,

An anonymous Letter to the King advising his Escape.

IN Discharge of my Duty, I can't omit to acquaint you, that my Brother was at a Meeting last Night, with eight or nine of the Agitators; who, in Debate of the Obstacles which did most hinder the speedy effecting of their Designs, did conclude it was your Majesty, and so long as your Majesty doth live you would be so; and therefore resolved, for the Good of the Kingdom, to take your Life away; and that to that Action they were well assured that Mr. *Dell* and Mr. *Peters*, two of their Preachers, would willingly bear them Company; for they had often said to these Agitators, your Majesty is but as a dead Dog. My Prayers are for your Majesty's Safety, but do too much fear it can't be whilst you are in those Hands. I wish with all my Soul that your Majesty were at my House in *Broad-Street*, where I am confident I could keep you private till this Storm was over; but beg your Majesty's Pardon, and shall not presume to offer it as Advice; 'tis only my constant Zeal to your Service, who am

Your Majesty's dutiful Subject,

E. R.

The

The Speaker acquainted the House with a Letter he receiv'd from Lieutenant-General Cromwell, that the King went last Night, with nine Horses, over *Kingston* Bridge.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
November.

Ordered, ' That the King's Letter to the Lord *Montague*, and his Majesty's Message, be communicated to the House of Commons. The Lords also declared that they were fully satisfied that the Lord *Montague* had, with all Fidelity and Diligence, performed the Trust wherein he was employed by both Houses, in attending on the King at *Hampton-Court*; and that this Accident of the King's going from *Hampton-Court* did no way reflect upon his Integrity, neither his Lordship nor the rest of the Commissioners having the Command of the Guards there.'

Nov. 13. Col. *Whaley* made a Narrative to the Lords, concerning his guarding of the King, and the Manner of his Majesty's Escape from *Hampton-Court*. Afterwards the Speaker, in the Name of the House, gave the Colonel this Answer, That the Lords were fully satisfied with his free and ingenuous Relation, and also with his former faithful Service, especially with his Carriage in this Business, for which the House did give him Thanks.

A Letter from the Scots Commissioners was read, directed to the Speaker of the House of Lords,

Right Honourable, Nov. 13, 1647.

' THIS Morning we have heard a Report that his Majesty is gone from *Hampton-Court*; therefore we have thought it incumbent on us to desire that both Houses would make known to us the Certainty thereof, to the end we may be the better enabled to give an Account to the Kingdom of Scotland; and so we rest

The Scots Commissioners Letter to the Lords thereupon.

Your Lordships humble Servants,
LOUDON, H. KENNEDY,
LAUDERDALE, ROB. BARCLAY.
CHA. ERSKINE,

Another

An. 25. Car. I.
1647.

November,

Another Letter, directed as before, from Sir
Thomas Fairfax was read.

Putney, Nov. 13, 1647.

My Lord,

And another
from General
Fairfax.

THIS Morning Col. *Whaley* hath been with
me, and given me an Account, as far as
yet he understandeth, of all Circumstances ap-
pearing about the King's going away; all which
the Commissioners of both Houses, as he saith,
do know as fully as he; and therefore they be-
ing, as he foretelleth me, gone to acquaint the
Houses therewith, I forbear, for this Day, to
command his Attendance on the Houses, espe-
cially in regard that there is yet some Need of the
Continuance of his Guard and Care at *Hampton-*
Court, for the safe keeping of those whom he hath
secured, to be examined concerning the King's
Escape; about whom I desire the Houses would
take some Order what should be done with them,
for the Examination of them or otherwise.

I shall To-morrow go to *Ware*, according
to former Resolution, to rendezvous the Army,
and shall be there untill *Monday* towards Night,
to receive your Commands.

Your very humble Servant,

T. FAIRFAX.

The Commons
declare it High
Treason to con-
ceal the King's
Person.

On the Day the first News of the King's Escape came to the House of Commons, a Question was proposed, That what Person soever should harbour or conceal the King's Person, or know of any that did, and shall not reveal it immediately to the Speakers of both Houses, should be proceeded against as a Traitor to the Common-wealth, forfeit his whole Estate, and die without Mercy. There were two Divisions on this Question; the first, Whether it should be now put? which was carried by 58 against 48; then the main Question being put, it passed in the Affirmative, 61 against 50.

But

But the Houses were not very long in Suspence what was become of the King; for this Morning, *Nov. 15*, a Letter from Col. *Hammond*, Governor of the Isle of *Wight*, was received, and read in these Words:

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
November.

*For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of PEERS pro Tempore,*

My Lord, Comes, Nov. 13, 1647.

I Hold it my Duty to give your Lordship an Account of the King's unexpected coming into this Island, and of the Manner of it; which was thus:

Col. Hammond
sends Advice of
his Majesty's
Arrival in the
Isle of Wight.

This Morning, as I was on the Way passing from *Carisbrook-Castle* to *Newport*, Mr. *Asburnham* and Sir *John Berkley* overtook me; and, after a short Discourse, told me, That the King was near, and that he would be with me that Night; that he was come from *Hampton-Court* upon Information that there were some intended to destroy his Person, and that he could not with Safety continue any longer there; and that finding his Case thus, he chose rather to put himself in my Hands (being a Member of the Army, whom, he saith, he would not have left, could he have had Security to his Person) than to go to any other Place. Being herewith exceedingly surprized at present, I knew not what Course to take; but, upon serious Consideration, weighing the great Concernment that the Person of the King is of, in this Juncture of Affairs, to the Settlement of the Peace of the Kingdom, I resolved it my Duty to the King, to the Parliament, and Kingdom, to use the utmost of my Endeavours to preserve his Person from any such horrid Attempt, and to bring him to a Place of Safety; where he may also be in a Capacity of answering the Expectation of Parliament and Kingdom, in agreeing to such Things as may extend to the Settlement of those great Divisions and Distractions abounding in every Corner there-

of

An. 27. Car. I.

1647.

November.

of. Hereupon I went immediately with them over the Water, taking Capt. *Basket*, the Captain of *Cowes-Castle*, with me, and found the King near the Water Side: And conceiving myself no way able to secure him there, I chose, he desiring it, to bring him over into this Island, where he now is.

My Lord, my Endeavours, as for my Life, shall be to preserve and secure his Person. And I humbly desire I may receive the Pleasure of the Parliament in this great and weighty Matter; and that the Lord will direct your Councils to his Glory and the Kingdom's Good and Peace, shall be my Prayer; and my Endeavour shall ever be to express myself, in all Things in my Power,

My Lord,

Your Lordship's and the Kingdom's

most humble and faithful Servant,

ROBERT HAMMOND.

A Committee of both Houses was appointed to meet that Afternoon, and consider what was fit to be done with the Person of the King, and report the same, that Orders might be sent down to Col. *Hammond* accordingly.

The Reasons for the King's making his Escape from *Hampton-Court*, and throwing himself into the Hands of Colonel *Hammond*, in the Isle of *Wight*, are variously accounted for by the Contemporary Historians, according to their different Dispositions and Affections, and are far too tedious to be here recited: But a Reference thereto may not be unnecessary^b.

Nov. 16. A Letter from Sir *Thomas Fairfax* was read. Mr. *Rushworth* has abridged this Letter,

^b *Ludlow's Memoirs*, Vol. I. p. 214 to 222. — *Hobbes's History of the Civil Wars*, p. 200. — *Holles's Memoirs*, p. 186, 7. — *Warwick's Memoirs*, p. 305 to 308. — *Clarendon's History*, Vol. V. 8vo. Edit. p. 76 to 86. — *Whitlocke's Memorials*, p. 279.

Of ENGLAND. 333

ter, and has not given any Part of the Petition at the End of it; but as it has ever been the Method of these Inquiries to publish these Affairs sent to the Parliament at full Length, we shall make no further Apology for this Insertion.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
November.

To the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.

My Lord, Hertford, Nov. 15, 1647.

I Rendezvoused this Day three Regiments of Foot and four of Horse, viz. of Horse, my own Regiment, Col. Rich's, Col. Fleetwood's, and Col. Twisleton's; and of Foot, my own Regiment, Col. Pride's, and Col. Hammond's. When they appeared all at the Place of Rendezvous, I tendered to them, and had read at the Head of every Regiment, this inclosed Paper, which was very acceptable to them, and to which they have given very full and ready Concurrence, professing Readiness to serve you and the Kingdom; which I hope will be constantly and honestly by them performed; and I can't but attribute great Acknowledgment to Almighty God, in making these poor Men so unanimous, in such Things as I think do, and will, conduce to an happy Settlement of this poor Kingdom.

General Fairfax's Letter concerning a Mutiny in the Army.

They profess likewise an absolute Submission and Conformity to the antient Discipline of the Army, by which I hope to order it to your Satisfaction; there came thither also two Regiments without Orders, viz. Col. Harrison's, of Horse; and Col. Lilburne's, of Foot. These two had been very much abused and deluded by the Agents who had their Intercourses at London, and were so far prevailed withall that, when they came into the Field, they brought with them, in their Hats, a Paper commonly call'd *The Agreement of the People*, being very much inflamed towards Mutiny and Disobedience; but truly I perceived the Men were meerly cozened and abused with fair Pretences of those Men which acted in the London

Coun-

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

November.

‘ Councils; for Col. *Harrison*’s Regiment was no
 ‘ sooner informed of their Error, but, with a great
 ‘ deal of Readiness and Chearfulness, they submit-
 ‘ ted to me, expressing the same Affection and Re-
 ‘ solution of Obedience with other Regiments; and
 ‘ I believe you will have a very good Account of
 ‘ them for Time to come. As for Col. *Lilburne*’s,
 ‘ they were put into those Extremities of Discon-
 ‘ tent, that they had drawn away almost all their
 ‘ Officers; and came in marching up near to the
 ‘ Rendezvous, contrary to the Orders, the chief-
 ‘ est Officer with them being a Captain-Lieutenant,
 ‘ whom I have secured on purpose to try him at a
 ‘ Council of War; and, for Example Sake, drew
 ‘ out divers of the Mutineers, three whereof were
 ‘ presently tried and condemned to Death; and, by
 ‘ Lot, one of them was shot to Death at the Head
 ‘ of the Regiment, and there are more in Hold to
 ‘ be tried. I do find the same Regiment likewise
 ‘ very sensible of their Error, and testifying much
 ‘ seeming Conformity to Commands; so that I
 ‘ doubt not but I shall be able to give you a good
 ‘ Account of that Regiment also. And indeed I
 ‘ do see that the *London* Agents have been the great
 ‘ Authors of these Irregularities, and with some of
 ‘ better Quality have not been their Abettors.

‘ Major *Scot* came to the Rendezvous, and did
 ‘ carry himself very factiously; not only testifying
 ‘ his own Discontent, but stirring up others also
 ‘ to the same; whereupon I desired him to with-
 ‘ draw out of the Field, and repair to the Parlia-
 ‘ ment; and commanded an Officer to attend him
 ‘ to the House of Commons.

‘ I thought it my Duty to give your Lordships
 ‘ this further Account, that Col. *Rainborough*,
 ‘ with some others, tendered this inclosed Petition,
 ‘ together with the *People’s Agreement* annexed
 ‘ thereunto. And, by what Hands I yet know
 ‘ not fully, very many Copies of the same Agree-
 ‘ ment were dispersed among the Soldiers, thereby
 ‘ to engage them; but, blessed be God, all proved
 ‘ ineffectual; and, I may repeat it once again, I
 ‘ never

never yet, upon any Rendezvous, found Men
 better composed and better satisfied at parting
 than these nine Regiments were; and I trust in
 God, if a just Care be taken to answer their rea-
 sonable Desires, they will still so continue: But
 give me Leave to say, that I hope, out of a good
 Affection to you and this poor Kingdom, it
 will be your Lordships Glory and Honour to
 make such Use of this Mercy, as that all the
 World may see that which I know you intend,
 to wit, a speedy Settlement of those Things that I
 was bold to present to the House of Commons in
 my late Addresses, and the easing of this poor
 Kingdom of free Quarter; by providing future
 Pay, that so no free Quarter be taken, nor the
 Soldiers put to Shifts, nor I be unable to uphold
 the Discipline of the Army; that they may be satis-
 fied in their Arrears, according to the former De-
 sires, and the Act of Indemnity made full, and
 those other Things concerning the Soldiers in
 this Paper performed.

An. 23. Car. 1.
 1647.
 November.

I shall very much rejoice in the next Place,
 that you will please to anticipate all our Desires
 in those Things which concern the Settlement
 of the Kingdom; which, though they do not
 move so properly from us as Soldiers, yet, as *En-
 glishmen*, who have engaged ourselves by our fe-
 veral Declarations to the Kingdom, we cannot
 but continue our humble and earnest Desires that
 they may be settled to Satisfaction; and we hope
 it will not be any Regret to you that we become
 your Remembrancers therein; and, my Lord,
 believe me, you will find Expedition will be the
 Life of all the Things which concern the Soldiers
 and the Kingdom.

We shall have our other Rendezvous with what
 Convenience may be, of the Issue of which you
 shall receive a speedy Account. There be four
 Regiments of Horse, one in *Wales*, viz. Col.
Hatton's; Col. *Scroop's*, in *Somersetshire*; Col.
Tomlin's, in *Lincolnshire*; Col. *Thornbagh's*, in
Nottinghamshire; of which I have very good Assu-
 rances

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

November.

‘ rances that they will be very faithful and obedient to you and the Discipline of the Army.
 ‘ Having troubled you thus much, I rest

Your Lordship's most humble Servant,

THOMAS FAIRFAX.

To his Excellency Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX, our noble General,

The HUMBLE PETITION of many Officers and Soldiers under his Command,

Sheweth,

‘ **T**HAT, in Judgment and Conscience, we engaged in War against the King under your Excellency's Command, to preserve and vindicate the Freedom of our native Countries, and of the Parliament in order thereunto :

‘ That, by the Blessing of God, all those our Enemies are fallen or fled before us ; that, for the same Ends, for our Rights, and for our Services, we were forced to hazard ourselves in disputing the Parliament's Commands ; and those our Opposers have likewise been subdued :

‘ That the Countries have petitioned your Excellency to procure the long expected Settlement of their Freedoms :

‘ That we have waited many Months for the securing to us, and all the free-born People, their native Rights, and for our Indemnity and Arrears as Soldiers ; and our Hearts bleed to see our Country consume under continued Distractions and heavy Oppressions :

‘ That we see no Hope of Indemnity for us and our Assistants, nor of settling the Foundations of Freedom, but by entering into this *Agreement* ; which we herewith offer unto your Excellency, desiring your Concurrence therein :

‘ That

‘ In the Margin of the *Lords Journals* is this Entry, ‘ The People's Engagement was annexed to this *Petition*, with these Words printed on the back Side, in Capital Letters, *viz.* **ENG-LAND'S FREEDOM, SOLDIER'S RIGHTS.**’—But we find no Copy of it there, nor in any of our *Collections*.

‘ That we have seen and felt the sad Consequences of being divided and scattered, before our native Freedoms were settled, and our Arrears secured, and such a Way established for constant Pay that we may know where to receive it monthly without fail :

An. 25. Car. 1.

1647.

November.

‘ That we are bound in Conscience, from the Sense of our Duty to our native Country, and in Mercy to ourselves, to keep together with our Swords in our Hands, to maintain these our Freedoms, for which the Parliament first invited us to take Arms ; to see our Arrears and Pay secured, and our dear Country freed from these intolerable Burdens.

‘ May it therefore please your Excellency to go on, in owning and leading us in Maintenance of this our Cause, to the Righteousness whereof God hath born such clear Witness ; and in the Prosecution of these Things, we humbly desire to live and die under your Excellency’s Conduct.’

After reading all these Papers, the Lords resolved to have a present Conference with the Commons thereupon. A Committee being appointed accordingly, the Earl of *Northumberland* reported the Heads to be offered at the Conference ; which, being read and considered, were approved of as follows, *viz.*

‘ That a Letter of Thanks be written to the General from both Houses, desiring the continuance of his Care to see exemplary Justice done upon those who shall have raised or shall endeavour to raise Mutinies, and factiously to subvert the Order and good Government of the Army ; and a Committee of both Houses to prepare the same.’

A Conference held thereupon.

‘ That a speedy Course may be taken to give some present Satisfaction to the Army in their Pay, and such a Settlement of Pay to them for the future, that the Kingdom may not continue under the Burden of free Quarter, nor the Soldiers be put to Shifts.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

November.

‘That some real Satisfaction may be given to the Army in respect of their Arrears; and the Act of Indemnity to be made full.

‘That there may be a Committee of both Houses appointed to examine the Proceedings of those *London Agents*, mentioned in the General’s Letter, and all others who are known, or shall justly be suspected, to have been the Authors and Abettors of these seditious Irregularities, whereupon some exemplary Justice may be done: And because Col. *Rainsborough* and Major *Scott*, Members of the House of Commons, are named in the General’s Letter to have acted in this Business, to desire that House to take it into their Care so to proceed with them, as may conduce to the Safety of this Kingdom, and the Preservation of this present Government.

‘That Col. *Rainsborough*, who is named in the General’s Letter to have been active, with others, at this Rendezvous, may not be suffered to go to Sea till this Business be fully examined. ^a

‘That for the Satisfaction of the Kingdom and Army, and to discharge ourselves of the Duty and Trust that lies upon both Houses, a speedy Course may be taken and prosecuted to quiet the present Distractions, and to settle the Peace of the Kingdoms.’

Resolutions of
both Houses re-
lating to the Se-
curing of the
King’s Person.

A Message was brought up from the House of Commons by Sir *Walter Eyle* and others, with the following Resolutions, to all which the Lords gave their Concurrence.

1. ‘That the securest Place for the King’s Residence, during the Time the Houses shall think fit to continue him in the Isle of *Wight*, is *Carisbrook Castle*.

2. ‘That no Person who hath been in Arms, or assisted in this unnatural War against the Parliament, be permitted to come or remain in the said Isle during the King’s Residence there, unless they be Inhabitants of the Isle, and have compounded with the Parliament.

3. ‘That
^a Appointed Vice-Admiral of the Fleet about two Months before.

3. 'That no Person who hath been in Arms, or assisted in this unnatural War against the Parliament, shall be permitted to come into the King's Presence, or into any Fort or Castle in the said Isle, during the King's Residence there, altho' he be an Inhabitant, and hath compounded with the Parliament,

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
November.

4. 'That no Stranger, or Person of a foreign Nation, shall be permitted to come into the King's Presence without Directions of both Houses of Parliament, except such as have Warrant from the Parliament of *Scotland*, or from the Committee of that Parliament thereunto authorised, and are not disabled by the Propositions agreed on by both Kingdoms.

5. 'That a sufficient Guard be appointed by Col. *Hammond*, Governor of the said Isle, for securing the King's Person from any Violence, and preventing his departing the said Isle without the Directions of both Houses.

6. 'That the King's Household at *Hampton-Court* be forthwith dissolved.

7. 'That the Members of both Houses, that are of the Committee of both Kingdoms, do acquaint the *Scots* Commissioners that the Propositions agreed on by both Houses, to be presented to the King for settling a safe and well-grounded Peace, are ready; and that the Houses have resolved to send them to the King on *Monday* next; that the Houses will be ready to join with the Commissioners of *Scotland* to insist on the same Things for the Peace and Interest of that Kingdom, as were formerly propounded in Behalf thereof in the late Propositions of both Kingdoms; or, if any Alterations in Behalf of that Kingdom be thought fit, the Houses do desire they may be prepared and perfected within the Time beforementioned; that so no Time may be lost for the joint sending of such Things to the King as shall be agreed on for the Interest and Peace of the Kingdoms respectively.'

An. 25. Car. 1.
1647.

November.

November 17. The Remonstrance from the General, &c. mentioned in Yesterday's Proceedings, was read. This Remonstrance is not in Mr. *Rushworth's Collections*; nor do we meet with it any where but in the *Lords Journals*.

A REMONSTRANCE from his Excellency Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX and his Council of War, concerning the late Discontent and Distraction in the Army; with his Excellency's Declaration of himself, and Expectation from the Army thereupon, for the future uniting of the Army.

Hertford, Nov. 14, 1647.

A Remonstrance
from General
Fairfax, touch-
ing the late Mu-
tiny in the Ar-
my.

THAT ever since the Engagement of the Army at *Newmarket-Heath*, his Excellency, with the General Officers and General Council of the Army, (to which that Engagement refers) have been doing their Duty and best Endeavour for the Good of the Army and Kingdom, according to the Ends of that Engagement, and the Declarations and other Papers that have since pass'd from the Army.

And in this, according to their Consciences and the best of their Understandings, they have done the utmost they could, without present Destruction to the Parliament; which, in their Opinions, would inevitably have put the Kingdom into Blood and Confusion, and so both the Army and Kingdom into an Incapacity, or past all rational Hopes, of obtaining or enjoying that Satisfaction or Security for which the Engagement was entered into; and if they have neglected any Thing wherein they might have done better, they have been ready, as still they are, to be convinced thereof, and to amend the Default, and to hearken to what any Man would soberly offer for that Purpose, or to lead them to any Thing better.

That while they have been thus doing their Duty, (besides many other Interruptions or Diversions by the Designs and Workings of Enemies)

mies) they have of late found the greatest Inter-
 ruption to their Proceedings by a few Men,
 Members of the Army; who, without any Au-
 thority or just Call thereunto that we know of,
 assuming the Name of Agents for several Re-
 giments, have, for what Ends we know not, ta-
 ken upon them to act as a divided Party from the
 said Council and Army; and associating them-
 selves with, or rather (as we have just Cause to
 believe) given themselves up to be acted or guided
 by divers private Persons that are not of the Ar-
 my, have endeavoured, by various Falshoods
 and Scandals, raised and divulged in Print and
 otherwise, against the General, the General Of-
 ficers, and Council of the Army, to possess the
 Army and Kingdom with Jealousies of them,
 and Prejudices against them; as if they had fal-
 len from their Principles, had broke all their En-
 gagements and Declarations, and thereby for-
 feited their Trust, and were in their whole Pro-
 ceedings false and treacherous, both to the Ar-
 my and Kingdoms: And, by these and other
 Practices, the said Agents and their Associates
 have laboured to make Parties and Factions in
 the Army, to raise Discontents, Mutinies, and
 Disorders therein, to divide the Soldiers from the
 Officers, and both Officers and Soldiers among
 themselves, and to withdraw several Parts of the
 Army from their Duty and Obedience to the Ge-
 neral's Orders, and that in Things most neces-
 sary for the Safety of the Army and Kingdom.

And thus, while they causlessly cry out against
 Breach of Engagements, and dividing the Ar-
 my, they themselves have made, or endea-
 voured to make, the greatest Breaches of their
 Engagements, and greatest Dividing of the Ar-
 my that can be; a Dividing most truly contrary
 to the Engagement; a Dividing which is as bad
 and destructive as Disbanding; even the Disso-
 lution of all that Order, Combination, and Go-
 vernment which is the Essence of an Army; and,
 under false and delusive Pretences that the En-

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

November.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

November,

‘ engagements have been broken, they have endeavoured really to loosen and draw the Army off from its former Engagements, and to draw it into new Engagements, different from, and, in some Things, destructive to, the former; and have thus endangered the greatest Forfeiture of the Faith and Honour of the Army that ever it incurred.

‘ And whilst they cry out there is nothing done, they themselves have made the greatest Obstructions to the doing of any Good to the Army or Kingdom, both in the Hinderance and Delays to our Proceedings, and the Expence of Time which their Workings have occasioned, either to have satisfied them if it had been possible, or else to salve and quiet these Discontents and Distractions which they have raised in the Army; and also by the Occasions which the Parliament and Kingdom, yea even our best Friends in both, have thus received, to discourage them from Compliance with, or Confidence in, an Army so uncertain, so unsettled, so divided.

‘ For these Causes the General hath thought fit to rendezvous the Army, or such Parts of it as are not fix’d upon necessary Duty elsewhere; and having, with the Advice of his general Council, sent to the Parliament more importunately than before, for speedy Satisfaction to the Army in their just Desires, especially in Points of Provision, for constant Pay to avoid free Quarter, and of Security for Arrears, thought it best, with the same Advice, to dismiss most of the Officers and Agitators from the Head-Quarters for a Fortnight unto their respective Regiments, to satisfy and compose those Discontents and Divisions which have been thus raised in them; and for Ease to the Country and Accommodation to the Soldiery, with respect to the Season of the Year, have thought fit to contract the Quarters of the Army in three Brigades, and to draw them to three several Rendezvouses, not far from each other,
‘ and

‘ and this in order to one general Rendezvous, if An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
 ‘ there should be any Occasion; and in this the
 ‘ several Regiments of Horse and Foot have been
 ‘ appointed to constant Quarters in order to those
 ‘ several Rendezvous, taking them directly in
 ‘ order as their several Quarters lay before, with-
 ‘ out any other Respect or Consideration; but even
 ‘ these Things the pretended Agents and their As-
 ‘ sociates have laboured to pervert, and make Ad-
 ‘ vantage of to the aforesaid Ends of Discontent
 ‘ and Distraction, and to represent the same to
 ‘ the several Regiments, as done in pursuance of
 ‘ the same treacherous Councils and Designs which
 ‘ they had before suggested; and what Good they
 ‘ could not deny to be in the Things, they assume
 ‘ to themselves as gained by their Procurement,
 ‘ and so greedily catch at the sole Credit of it, as
 ‘ if the General and his Council (but for them) had
 ‘ not done it; and, by Letters or Messages contra-
 ‘ dicting the General’s Orders, they have, under
 ‘ such scandalous Pretences, laboured to draw di-
 ‘ vers Regiments from the Quarters and Rendez-
 ‘ vous to which they were ordered unto the first
 ‘ Rendezvous near *Ware*, in a disorderly and con-
 ‘ fused Manner, to the Oppression of the Country
 ‘ and Disaccommodation (if not Quarrelling and
 ‘ Distraction of the Soldiery) in quartering.

‘ That, without Redress of these Abuses and
 ‘ Disorders, his Excellency cannot, nor will, any
 ‘ longer undergo or undertake further to discharge
 ‘ his present Trust to the Parliament, the Ar-
 ‘ my and Kingdom: And tho’ he is far above any
 ‘ such low Thoughts as to court or woo the Army
 ‘ to continue him their General; yet, to discharge
 ‘ himself to the utmost, and to bring the Business to
 ‘ a certain and clear Issue, his Excellency doth now
 ‘ declare, That he is yet willing to adhere to, and
 ‘ to conduct, and live and die with, the Army, in
 ‘ the lawful Prosecution of these Things following,
 ‘ *First* for the Soldiery: 1. ‘ To obtain present
 ‘ Provision for constant Pay, while continued, to
 ‘ enable them to discharge Quarters.

2. ‘ The

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

November.

2. ' The present stating of Accounts, and Security for Arrears; with an effectual and speedy Course to raise Moneys thereupon.

3. ' Sufficient Indemnity, and Commissioners in every County for that Purpose.

4. ' Provision for maimed Soldiers, and the Widows and Orphans of Men slain in the Service; and that in a certain and more honourable Way, with Commissioners in every County for that Purpose.

5. ' Provision for Freedom from pressing, according to the first Petition of the Army.

6. ' Provision for Freedom of Apprentices that have served in this War, with the Penalty upon Masters refusing to give it.

' Secondly, For the Kingdom: A Period to be set for this present Parliament, to end so soon as may be with Safety; and Provision thereunto to be made for future Parliaments, for the Certainty of their Meeting, Sitting, and Ending, and for the Freedom and Equality of Elections thereto; to render the House of Commons, as near as may be, an equal Representative of the People that are to elect.

' And, according to the Representation of the Army of June 14th, to leave other Things to, and acquiesce in, the Determinations of the Parliament; but to remind the Parliament of, and mediate with them for, Redress of the common Grievances of the People, and all other Things that the Army have declared their Desires for.

' That upon his Excellency's continued Conjunction in these Things, he expects that, for the particular Circumstances of them, the Army shall, according to their aforesaid first Engagement, acquiesce in what shall be agreed unto by the General Council of the Army, to which that Engagement refers; and for the matter of Ordering, Conduct, and Government of the Army, that every Member of it shall be observant of, and subject to, his Excellency, his Council of War, and every one to his superior Officers, according
' to

to the Discipline of War; for Assurance where-
 of he expects that as many as are satisfied here-
 with, and agree hereunto, do severally subscribe
 to what is here under-written for that Purpose.

An. 25. Car. I.
 1647.
 November.

*We the Officers and Soldiers of Regiment
 of , whose Names are hereunto subscribed,
 do hereby declare that we are satisfied in his Excel-
 lency the General's continued Conjunction with the Ar-
 my, in the lawful Prosecution of the Things hereto-
 fore declared to be prosecuted for the Soldiery and
 Kingdom respectively; and, for the particular Cir-
 cumstances of them, we shall, according to the general
 Engagement of the Army above-mentioned, acquiesce
 in what shall be agreed unto by the General Council
 of the Army, to which that Engagement refers; and
 for the matter of Ordering, Conduct, and Govern-
 ment of the Army, we shall be observant of, and
 subject to, his Excellency and his Council of War,
 and every one of us to our superior Officers in this
 Regiment and the Army, according to the Discipline
 of War.*

Signed by the Appointment of his Excellency
 Sir Thomas Fairfax and his Council of War,
 JO. RUSHWORTH, Secretary.

This Remonstrance was ordered to be sent down
 to the Commons.

The Lords received another Letter from Col.
 Hammond, directed to their Speaker:

*From the Castle of Carisbrook,
 Nov. 16, 1647.*

My Lord,

SINCE my last, which gave your Lordship
 an Account of his Majesty's being in this
 Island, I have had a Meeting with the Gentry
 thereof, who have expressed a great deal of Chear-
 fulness in their Desires and Endeavours of pre-
 serving his Majesty's Person, and their Obedience
 unto the Authority of Parliament.

Another Letter
 from Col. Ham-
 mond, concern-
 ing the King.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

November.

‘ I have also given Orders, which are diligently
 ‘ observed, that no Persons go out of the Island
 ‘ without a Pass; and that no Boat bring over any
 ‘ Person whatsoever, not belonging to this Island,
 ‘ but whom they cause to be brought to me to be
 ‘ examined; that I may thereby be the better able
 ‘ to preserve the King’s Person in Security, as also
 ‘ to prevent the Confluence of People that other-
 ‘ wise, upon the Occasion of his Majesty’s Pre-
 ‘ sence, would flock hither, to the Disturbance of
 ‘ the Peace of this Island; which at present, thro’
 ‘ the Blessing of God, is in a quiet and peaceable
 ‘ Posture, having earnest Expectations upon the
 ‘ Continuance of their Peace, by a general Settle-
 ‘ ment of the Peace of the Kingdom; for Convey-
 ‘ ance of which unto them, they look at your
 ‘ Lordships as the blessed Instruments.

‘ My Lord, give me Leave to acquaint you
 ‘ that the Accommodations of the King, at this
 ‘ Time, are no ways suitable to his Quality; which
 ‘ makes me bold to offer to your Lordships, if it
 ‘ be thought fit, that his usual Allowance may be
 ‘ continued to him for his better Provision whilst
 ‘ he shall abide in this Place.

‘ I shall not further trouble your Lordship, than
 ‘ to assure you, that in all Things in my Power,
 ‘ which may express my Duty to you and the King-
 ‘ dom, I shall study to declare myself,

My Lord,

Your Lordship’s and the Kingdom’s

most humble and faithful Seroant,

ROBERT HAMMOND.

A Letter, or Message, from the King came at
 the same Time with the former, but the Considera-
 tion of it was deferred to the next Day. And it
 was then only ordered to be sent down to the
 Commons, and afterwards, by a Committee, to
 be

Of ENGLAND. 347

be communicated to the Scots Commissioners according to the Direction of it. An. 23. Car. I. 1647.

This Message from the King is not entered in the *Journals*; a Slight put upon his Majesty of which we have not hitherto found an Instance. It is however printed in *Royston's* Edition of the *King's Works*, (from which Authority we give it) and also in *Mr. Rushworth's Collections*. But we find nothing done upon it in either House.

November.

To the SPEAKER of the House of PEERS *pro Tempore*, to be communicated to the two Houses of Parliament at *Westminster*, and to the Commissioners of the Parliament of *Scotland*.

From the *Isle of Wight*, Nov. 17, 1647.

CHARLES R.

HIS Majesty is confident that, before this Time, His Majesty's his two Houses of Parliament have received the Message which he left behind him at Hampton-Court the eleventh of this Month; by which they will have understood the Reasons which enforced him to go from thence, as likewise his constant Endeavours for the settling of a safe and well-grounded Peace wheresoever he should be; and being now in a Place where he conceives himself to be at much more Freedom and Security than formerly, he thinks it necessary (not only for making good of his own Professions, but also for the speedy procuring of a Peace in these languishing and distressed Kingdoms) at this Time to offer such Grounds to his two Houses for that Effect, which, upon due Examination of all Interests, may best conduce thereunto.

And because Religion is the best and chiefest Foundation of Peace, his Majesty will begin with that Particular.

That for the abolishing Archbishops, Bishops, &c. his Majesty clearly professeth that he cannot give his Consent thereunto, both in relation as he is a Christian and a King: For the first, he avows that he is satisfied in his Judgment that this Order was placed

in

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

November.

in the Church by the Apostles themselves; and, ever since their Time, hath continued in all Christian Churches throughout the World, untill this last Century of Years; and in this Church, in all Times of Change and Reformation, it hath been upheld by the Wisdom of his Ancestors, as the great Preserver of Doctrine, Discipline, and Order in the Service of God. As a King, at his Coronation, he hath not only taken a solemn Oath to maintain this Order, but his Majesty and his Predecessors, in their Confirmations of the Great Charter, have inseparably woven the Rights of the Church into the Liberties of the rest of the Subjects; and yet he is willing it be provided that the particular Bishops perform the several Duties of their Callings, both by their personal Residence and frequent Preaching in their Dioceses, as also that they exercise no Act of Jurisdiction or Ordination, without the Consent of their Presbyters; and will consent that their Powers in all Things be so limited, that they be not grievous to tender Consciences: [Wherefore since his Majesty is willing to give Ease to the Consciences of others]^d he sees no Reason why he alone, and those of his Judgment, should be pressed to a Violation of theirs. Nor can his Majesty consent to the Alienation of Church Lands, because it cannot be denied to be a Sin of the highest Sacrilege; as also, that it subverts the Intentions of so many pious Donors, who have laid a heavy Curse upon all such prophane Violations, which his Majesty is very unwilling to undergo; and besides the Matter of Conscience, his Majesty believes it to be a Prejudice to the Public Good, many of his Subjects having the Benefit of renewing Leases at much easier Rates, than if those Possessions were in the Hands of private Men; not omitting the Discouragement which it will be to all Learning and Industry, when such eminent Rewards shall be taken away, which now lie open to the Children of the meanest Persons.

Yet his Majesty, considering the great present Distempers concerning Church Discipline, and that the

Pre-

^d This Passage is omitted in Mr. Ruffworth's Collection.

Presbyterian Government is now in Practice; his Majesty, to eschew Confusion as much as may be, and for the Satisfaction of his two Houses, is content that the same Government be legally permitted to stand, in the same Condition it now is, for three Years: Provided, that his Majesty and those of his Judgment (or any other who cannot in Conscience submit thereunto) be not obliged to comply with the Presbyterian Government, but have free Practice of their own Profession, without receiving any Prejudice thereby; and that a free Consultation and Debate be had with the Divines at Westminster, (twenty of his Majesty's Nomination being added unto them) whereby it may be determined by his Majesty and the two Houses, how the Church-Government after the said Time shall be settled, (or sooner, if Differences may be agreed) as is most agreeable to the Word of God; with full Liberty to all those who shall differ, upon conscientious Grounds, from that Settlement; always provided, that nothing aforesaid be understood to tolerate those of the Popish Profession, nor the exempting of any Popish Recusant from the Penalties of the Laws, or to tolerate the public Profession of Atheism or Blasphemy, contrary to the Doctrine of the Apostles, Nicene, and Athanasian Creeds; they having been received by, and had in Reverence of, all the Christian Churches, and more particularly by this of England, ever since the Reformation.

Next, the Militia being that Right, which is inseparably and undoubtedly inherent in the Crown, by the Laws of this Nation, and that which former Parliaments, as likewise this, have acknowledged so to be; his Majesty cannot so much wrong that Trust which the Laws of God and this Land hath annexed to the Crown, for the Protection and Security of his People, as to divest himself and Successors of the Power of the Sword; yet, to give an infallible Evidence of his Desire to secure the Performance of such Agreements as shall be made in order to a Peace, his Majesty will consent to an Act of Parliament, that

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
November.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

November.

the whole Power of the Militia, both by Sea and Land, for and during his whole Reign, shall be ordered and disposed by his two Houses of Parliament, or by such Persons as they shall appoint, with Powers limited for suppressing of Forces within this Kingdom, to the Disturbance of the public Peace, and against foreign Invasion; and that they shall have Power, during his said Reign, to raise Money for the Purposes aforesaid; and that neither his Majesty that now is, or any other (by any Authority derived only from him) shall execute any of the said Powers during his Majesty's said Reign, but such as shall act by the Consent and Approbation of the two Houses of Parliament; nevertheless his Majesty intends that all Patents, Commissions, and other Acts concerning the Militia, be made and acted as formerly; and that after his Majesty's Reign, all the Power of the Militia shall return entirely to the Crown, as it was in the Times of Queen Elizabeth and King James of blessed Memory.

After this Head of the Militia, the Consideration of the Arrears due to the Army is not improper to follow; for the Payment whereof, and the Ease of his People, his Majesty is willing to concur in any Thing that can be done without the Violation of his Conscience and Honour: Wherefore, if his two Houses shall consent to remit unto him such Benefit out of Sequestrations from Michaelmas last, and out of Compositions that shall be made before the concluding of the Peace, and the Arrears of such as have been already made, the Assistance of the Clergy, and the Arrears of such Rents of his own Revenue as his two Houses shall not have received before the concluding of the Peace, his Majesty will undertake, within the Space of eighteen Months, the Payment of 400,000 l. for the Satisfaction of the Army: And if those Means shall not be sufficient, his Majesty intends to give way to the Sale of Forest Lands for that Purpose, this being the public Debt, which, in his Majesty's Judgment, is first to be satisfied; and for other public Debts already contracted upon Church-

Church-Lands, or any other Engagements, his Majesty will give his Consent to such Act or Acts for raising of Monies for Payment thereof as both Houses shall hereafter agree upon, so as they be equally laid, whereby his People (already too heavily burdened by these late Distempers) may have no more Pressures upon them than this absolute Necessity requires: And for the further securing all Fears, his Majesty will consent, that an Act of Parliament be passed for the disposing of the great Offices of State, and naming of Privy Counsellors, for the whole Term of his Reign, by the two Houses of Parliament, their Patents and Commissions being taken from his Majesty, and after to return to the Crown, as is expressed in the Articles of the Militia. For the Court of Wards and Liveries; his Majesty very well knows the Consequence of taking that away, by turning of all Tenures into common Socage, as well in Point of Revenue to the Crown, as in the Protection of many of his Subjects, being Infants: Nevertheless, if the Continuance thereof seem grievous to his Subjects, rather than he will fail on his Part in giving Satisfaction, he will consent to an Act for taking of it away, so as a full Recompence be settled upon his Majesty and his Successors in Perpetuity, and that the Arrears now due be reserved unto him towards the Payment of the Arrears of the Army.

And that the Memory of these late Distractions may be wholly wiped away, his Majesty will consent to an Act of Parliament for the suppressing of and making null all Oaths, Declarations, and Proclamations against both or either House of Parliament, and of all Indictments and other Proceedings against any Persons for adhering unto them; and his Majesty proposeth (as the best Expedient to take away all Seeds of future Differences) that there be an Act of Oblivion to extend to all his Subjects.

As for Ireland; the Cessation there is long since determined; but for the future, all other Things being fully agreed, his Majesty will give full Satisfaction to his Houses concerning that Kingdom.

And

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

November.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

November.

And although his Majesty cannot consent, in Honour and Justice, to void all his own Grants and Acts passed under his Great Seal since the 22d of May, 1642, or to the confirming of all Acts and Grants passed under that made by the two Houses; yet his Majesty is confident that, upon Perusal of Particulars, he shall give full Satisfaction to his two Houses, to what may be reasonably desired in that Particular.

And now his Majesty conceives that, by these his Offers, (which he is ready to make good upon the Settlement of a Peace) he hath clearly manifested his Intentions to give full Security and Satisfaction to all Interests, for what can justly be desired in order to the future Happiness of his People. And for the perfecting of these Concessions, as also for such other Things as may be proposed by the two Houses, and for such just and reasonable Demands as his Majesty shall find necessary to propose on his Part, he earnestly desires a personal Treaty at London with his two Houses, in Honour, Freedom, and Safety; it being, in his Judgment, the most proper, and indeed only, Means to a firm and settled Peace, and impossible without it to reconcile former, or avoid future, Misunderstandings.

All these Things being by Treaty perfected, his Majesty believes his two Houses will think it reasonable that the Proposals of the Army concerning the Succession of Parliaments and their due Elections, should be taken into Consideration.

As for what concerns the Kingdom of Scotland, his Majesty will very readily apply himself to give all reasonable Satisfaction, when the Desires of the two Houses of Parliament on their Behalf, or of the Commissioners of that Kingdom, or of both joined together, shall be made known unto him.

Nov. 18. A Letter from the Scots Commissioners was read, and ordered to be taken into Consideration the next Morning.

For

For the Right Honourable the SPEAKER of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

Worcester-House, Nov. 16, 1647.

November.

Right Honourable,

WE are very sorry that Occasion is so often given us to complain that we receive no Answer to the Papers delivered in by us to the Honourable Houses, and that, in all Desires made unto us, even in Matter of common Interest and greatest Consequence, a short Time is limited and peremptorily prescribed unto us; and we do earnestly desire the Houses to consider that it is not according to the Custom which hath been formerly observed, nor is it the Way to continue a good Understanding betwixt the Kingdoms.

A Remonstrance from the Scots Commissioners, relating to the Propositions of Peace, and insisting on a Personal Treaty with the King.

Upon the 5th of this Instant we wrote a Letter to both Houses, to which we again desired an Answer upon the 11th, when the Propositions were communicated unto us; but we have yet received no Answer at all; and hearing, upon the 12th, that his Majesty was gone from Hampton-Court, we did then desire to understand from the Honourable Houses the Certainty thereof, conceiving it very improper for us to take into Consideration the sending of Propositions unto his Majesty untill we knew the Certainty of his Departure from Hampton-Court, and whither he was gone. Yesternight late, and no sooner, we received the Copy of a Letter from his Majesty, dated at Hampton-Court the 11th of this Instant, and directed to the Speaker of the House of Peers, to be communicated to the Lords and Commons in the Parliament of England, and the Commissioners of the Parliament of Scotland, &c. but no Intimation is made unto us whither his Majesty is gone, in what Condition he is, or how any Address may be made unto him; all which are most necessary to be made known unto us before we can say any Thing of Propositions to be sent to the King: Yet, nevertheless, by Order from both

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

November.

Houses, it is signified unto us that they have resolved to send Propositions upon *Monday* next to his Majesty, without allowing us any competent Time to consider of the same; tho' (as upon the short View that we have taken we do perceive) there be very many and great Alterations and Omissions of, and Additions to, the former Propositions agreed on by both Kingdoms, and those Alterations principally in Matters of joint Interest.

We have perused his Majesty's Letter from *Hampton-Court*, and do think that Terrors being suggested to him, and Dangers threatened to his Person, he had just Cause to look for his own Safety and Preservation; and here we cannot but, with much Grief, regret his Majesty's hard Usage, when we call to Mind how he was violently carried away from *Holdenby* by a Party of the Army, and is now forced to fly from amongst them for Preservation of his Life; certainly the Houses of Parliament cannot think but the Kingdom of *Scotland* is highly concerned in the Safety of his Majesty's Person, and in Duty bound to use their best Endeavours to prevent his Ruin; and we also hope therein to have the Concurrence of the Honourable Houses.

It is his Majesty's own Desire, in his late Message, that he may be heard with Freedom, Honour, and Safety: We do therefore, according to our former Paper of the 5th of this Instant, earnestly desire and insist that, after so many various Tossings up and down from Place to Place, to the great Hazard of his Person, and Retardment of his settling of an happy Peace, his Majesty may be invited to come to *London* with Safety, Honour, and Freedom, and neither he nor his Parliament may be environed with Armies; to the end his Concessions, and their Consultations, being voluntary and free, all Differences may be ended, and a personal Treaty with his Majesty may be had, which, in our Judgment, is the most probable Way, with Hope of Success,

‘ Success, to settle Religion and a lasting Peace. An. 23. Car. I.
‘ We are 1647.

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

November.

LOUDON, HEN. KENNEDY,
LAUDERDALE, ROB^t. BARCLAY.
CHA. ERSKINE,

Nov. 20. Both Houses were now employed in nominating Sheriffs for the Year ensuing: A Custom they had annually kept for some Years last past, usurped from the Crown; and they exercised it with that Power and Authority as if they had done it for Ages, and that there was then no King in England.

This Day a Letter came from the General to the Lords Committees of the Army, acquainting them, That he had ordered Col. Hewson with 1000 Foot to march and quarter in the City; if they did not speedily raise the Arrears due to the Army. This Intelligence alarmed both Houses; and the City also being acquainted with it by their Orders, set about raising their Quota of these Arrears, and by far the largest, with no little Diligence.

General Fairfax orders 1000 Foot to quarter in the City of London.

The same Day a Letter was agreed on by both Houses to be sent to Sir Thomas Fairfax, in Answer to his of the 15th Instant from Hertford, with a proper Hint at the End of it relating to the last Piece of Intelligence. The Letter was in these Words:

S I R,

‘ I Am commanded, by the Lords in Parliament, to return you Thanks for the great Care and Faithfulness you have expressed by the seasonable Suppression of those mutinous Persons, whose factious Designs might probably have destroyed the good Discipline of the Army, and likewise endangered the Safety of the Parliament, with the Hazard of the Subversion of the Fundamental Government of this Kingdom. They are well

A Letter of Thanks to him from the Parliament, for suppressing the late Mutinies in the Army.

Z 2

‘ pleased

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

November.

‘ pleased that some Justice hath been done upon
 ‘ those that appeared in Opposition to you; and
 ‘ they desire you still to continue your Care to the
 ‘ further Execution of exemplary Punishment upon
 ‘ those who have, or shall, endeavour to raise Mu-
 ‘ tinies, and factiously to subvert the orderly Regu-
 ‘ lation of the Army; and they shall be ready to
 ‘ improve their Interest for Satisfaction in those
 ‘ Things that may tend to the Preservation of the
 ‘ Order and Quiet of the Army; in order to which
 ‘ they have recommended to the House of Com-
 ‘ mons that speedy Course may be taken for the
 ‘ satisfying of the Arrears of the Army, and for
 ‘ such a Settlement of Pay for the future, that the
 ‘ Kingdom may not continue under the Burthen
 ‘ of free Quarter, nor the Soldiers be put to Shifts.
 ‘ This is that which I have in Command as

Your Excellency's Friend and Servant.

Nov. 22. Another Letter from the General
 was read.

*For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
 Speaker of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.*

My Lord,

Windsor, Nov. 21, 1647.

His Letter to the
 Lords, for more
 effectually secu-
 ring the King's
 Person in the Isle
 of Wight:

BY the same Messenger that brings Letters to
 your Lordship and the Speaker of the House
 of Commons from Col. Hammond, I received
 another from him, by which I perceive he hath
 not as yet sent up those Gentlemen that came to
 him from the King, and were sent for by the
 Parliament. I do not know how far this Letter
 to yourself, or the Speaker of the House of Com-
 mons, may concern that Business, nor what Sa-
 tisfaction they may give the Houses therein; and
 therefore I have written unto him to send up the
 Gentlemen with all convenient Speed, which I
 am confident he will accordingly do; unless the
 Houses find such Satisfaction in his Letters as to
 signify their Pleasure to him for their Stay.

‘ The

‘ The King's being in the Isle of *Wight* (whilst
 ‘ the Houses think fit he should be continued there)
 ‘ will necessarily require some Strength to be sent
 ‘ over to Col. *Hammond*, both for the better secu-
 ‘ ring the King's Person, and for strengthening the
 ‘ Island, to prevent any Confluence of such Per-
 ‘ sons there as may breed Danger to the King-
 ‘ dom; for which, in my Opinion, the Island,
 ‘ and the King's being in it, yield too great Op-
 ‘ portunity, if not prevented by a sufficient Strength
 ‘ to secure the Castles and landing Places therein.

An. 23. Car. 1.
 1647.

November.

‘ I remain

Your Lordship's most humble Servant,

T. FAIRFAX.

The Letter from Col. *Hammond*, directed to the
 Speaker of the House of Lords, was next read.

Carisbrook-Castle, Nov. 19, 1647.

My Lord,

‘ THIS Morning I received, by the Hands of Another from
 ‘ a Messenger from the General, a Paper of Col. Hammond,
 ‘ Votes and Resolutions of both Houses of Parlia- on the same Sub-
 ‘ ment, bearing Date *Die Martis, Nov. 16, 1647,* ject.
 ‘ relating to the Security of his Majesty's Person;
 ‘ which although they came not to me with Direc-
 ‘ tions from the Houses, yet I thought it my Duty
 ‘ to take Notice of them, by what Hand soever re-
 ‘ ceived, as their Commands, and accordingly to
 ‘ see them put in Execution.

‘ As concerning that Vote, not permitting such
 ‘ as have been in Arms, or assisted against the Par-
 ‘ liament, to come into this Island, it tending
 ‘ much to the Security of his Majesty's Person,
 ‘ and the preserving the Peace of this Island; I
 ‘ have, as I acquainted your Lordships in my last
 ‘ Letter before I received these Votes, given Or-
 ‘ ders to that Effect, which are carefully put in
 ‘ Execution; commanding all Masters of Boats
 ‘ belonging to *Hampshire* and this Island, that they
 ‘ land neither Persons nor Goods in any Part of

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

November.

this Island, save only *Yarmouth-Castle*, *Cowes-Castle*, and *Ryde*, at which Place I have also appointed a Guard; to whom Order is given, as to the other two Castles, for the examining of all Persons so landing, and to detain and secure any that cannot give a very good Account of themselves and their Business.

As concerning your Lordships other Votes, now they are come to my Hands, I shall, with the best of my Endeavours, see them put in Execution.

My Lord, Yesterday there came to me an Officer belonging to the Sergeant of the House of Commons, with particular Warrants for the apprehending and bringing up in safe Custody the Persons of Mr. *John Ashburnham*, Mr. *William Legge*, and Sir *John Berkley*, who came hither with the King. The said Warrants required my Assistance to him in the Execution of them, but with no other to me from either or both Houses to that Purpose: And finding the Matter to be of very great Importance, I have desired the Messenger to forbear the Execution of his said Warrants till I have given the Houses to understand that, in case the said Warrants should be served and put in Execution, it would be impossible for me to answer the Expectations and Commands of Parliament, in preserving the Person of the King in Security, to be disposed by them, unless I should keep him close Prisoner; which is a Business of that Nature, that it is neither fit nor safe for me to do, especially for myself.

The Grounds from whence I gather this are plainly thus, The King hath declared himself to me, That he came from *Hampton-Court* for no other Cause but for the Preservation of his Person; which was, as he apprehended, in such Danger, that he could not, with Safety, continue longer there: That, if he could have been there with Safety, he would not have parted thence, nor from the Army; and that he chose this Place rather than any other, when he was at Liberty

to

to have gone whither he pleased, that he might
still continue under the Protection of the Army,
myself being a Member thereof; and that he
might have Conveniency of free Intercourse be-
tween himself and the Parliament for the Settle-
ment of a general Peace; to which he professes
greater Inclinations and Desires than ever, and
that there shall be nothing wanting on his Part
that may be reasonably expected from him.

An. 27. Car. 1.
1647.
November.

He further saith, That, in case these Gentle-
men be taken from him, and punished as evil
Doers, for counselling him not to go out of the
Kingdom, but rather to come to a Place where
he now is, for the Ends aforesaid, and for their
endeavouring accordingly in attending him hi-
ther, he cannot but himself expect to be dealt
with accordingly, his Case being the same.

My Lord, I shall further let you know that,
besides the Care I shall always have of these Gen-
tlemen, they have engaged their Honours not to
depart from me, so that I am most confident of
their Security. And truly, were not their Ends
the same with their Pretences in relation to the
Peace of this Kingdom, I am confident they
would never have advised nor conducted the King
to this Place. Besides, were they at this Time
removed from the King, there would be none left
for his Attendance; which besides the Offence,
how great the Inconvenience would be to him,
your Lordships cannot be ignorant.

And further give me Leave to add, if so un-
worthy a Servant of your Lordships as I am, and
that which concerns my Honour, were at all
worthy your Consideration, whether it would not
much reflect upon me, in case these Gentlemen
should be thus removed from hence? The King
and themselves have freely thrown themselves
upon me for Safety; upon Confidence, as they
please to say, of my Honour and Honesty, and
the Satisfaction they expect it would have given
the Parliament, the King being necessitated to
remove.

My

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

November.

‘ My Lord, my Duty to you and the Kingdom,
 ‘ whose Good and Peace I most desire, and shall
 ‘ most faithfully endeavour, calls for this Account;
 ‘ which, with myself and these Gentlemen, I leave
 ‘ to your Lordship’s Consideration; with this Con-
 ‘ clusion, That whatever is commanded by Autho-
 ‘ rity, especially that of the Parliament, though
 ‘ never so contrary to my Sense or Honour, shall
 ‘ never be disobeyed by,

My Lord,

Your Lordship’s most faithful

and humble Servant,

ROBERT HAMMOND.

P. S. ‘ Since the Conclusion of my Letter, I
 ‘ received the Letter and Votes of both Houses, of
 ‘ the 16th present, which shall be carefully put in
 ‘ Execution.’

The Scots Com-
 missioners refuse
 their Assent to
 the Propositions
 of Peace,

The *Scots* Commissioners had not given their Assent yet to the Propositions to be sent to the King, on account of the Houses not giving them any Satisfaction, in regard of the Indignities and Affronts they had complained of. The Lords, therefore, this Day, took their Letter of the 17th Instant into Consideration; and, after Debate, appointed a Committee to draw up an Answer to it, according to the Sense of that House. Soon after this Answer was read and approved of, and was ordered to be sent down to the Commons for their Approbation.

Nov. 25. The *Scots* still refusing to give their Consent to the Propositions, a Committee of Lords and Commons were sent to press them to it; this Day it was reported to the Lords, from that Committee, that they had been with the *Scots* Commissioners, and had received, for Answer, the following Paper:

We

WE are commanded by the Committee of Estates of the Parliament of Scotland, to press an Answer to our former Papers, which we have daily expected; and do again, with all Earnestness, desire a Personal Treaty with his Majesty, it being, in our Judgments, a readier Way to compose all Differences, than the sending of these Propositions, wherein there are such great and essential Differences from what was formerly agreed on by both Kingdoms. And, to the end there may be no Retardment on our Part, for Pursuance of all good Means which may procure a happy Peace, we desire that we may have a free Conference with a full Committee of both Houses, where we shall endeavour to give Satisfaction of the Expediency of our Desires: And shall also shew the Difference of our Judgments from these Propositions, that, according to the Treaty, there may be, with Advice and Consent of both Nations, a speedy Agreement in that which is the Foundation of settling Religion, with the Peace and Safety of both Kingdoms.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

November.

Their Reasons
for so doing.

The Lords did not then give any Answer to this Remonstrance, but appointed a Committee to consider of such Propositions to be sent to the King as they conceived to be absolutely necessary for their present Security.

The same Day the Lords sent the following Message to the House of Commons: ' That they, having seriously considered the Dangers and Mischiefs that may be brought upon the Kingdom by the Endeavours of those Agents that have formerly and still do continue to use their Interest for the subverting of the present established Government of the Kingdom, do desire that the Committee formerly appointed for the Examination of that Business, may have Power to frame a Declaration, setting forth the dangerous Consequences that may come to the whole Kingdom, if not prevented: And likewise to put them into a Way
' for

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

November.

The Lords re-
solve upon four
Propositions, for
present Security,
to be offered to
the King,

for a present Punishment and Suppression of such Persons, or writing of Books, or procuring Subscriptions to Petitions, or be any other Way active in promoting so destructive a Design.

The Report from the Committee what Propositions were now absolutely necessary for present Security, was, That they think the Propositions for the Militia, with those for the King's Declarations, as also that Proposition concerning Titles and Honours, with another about Power to adjourn this Parliament as both Houses should agree, may be most necessary to insist upon. These being approved on by the House, the Lords thought fit to have a Conference, the next Day, with the Commons, to acquaint them with these Matters, and give them Reasons for so doing.

Accordingly the next Day, *Nov. 26*, a Conference was held between the two Houses, at which the Lords offered the following Reasons:

* That the King having so often desired to be heard, and the Commissioners of *Scotland* so often pressing for a Personal Treaty, the Kingdom also long expecting to be freed of their great Pressures and Burthens, by some speedy Settlement of the Government; they desired that the two Houses might do that which should discharge their Duty, in respect of the Safety of both Kingdom and Parliament, and yet not refuse to hear the King in such Things as might be subjected unto Debate. The Lords therefore proposed four Propositions, which they then offered, as most immediately concerning the Safety and Security of the Kingdom and Parliament, which being put into Bills, the King might be desired to give his Royal Assent to; and this being done accordingly, they did next conceive it to be the most satisfactory Way, and what was most likely to produce a speedy Settlement of the present Distractions, for the Houses to admit of a Personal Treaty upon the rest of the Propositions.

And a Personal
Treaty for the
rest,

Nov.

Nov. 27. There was no Report made of the Result of this Conference, nor are the four Propositions yet entered in the *Lords Journals*; but in those of the Commons they are, viz. That concerning the Militia: For recalling the King's Oaths and Declarations: Concerning the Peers made since the Seal was surreptitiously carried away by the then Lord-Keeper *Littleton*; and that the Houses should have Power to adjourn to what Place they shall think fit. Which being put to the Question, Whether to agree with the Lords in their Desires concerning these four Propositions? it was carried in the Affirmative by 115 against 106. They were afterwards ordered to be put into Bills accordingly.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
November.

To which the Commons agree.

Nov. 29. Very little Notice being yet taken, in either of the *Journals*, of the Impeachment of the seven Lords by the Commons, it seems as if that House were not able to support their Charge against them; for, on this Day, we meet with the following Entry by the Lords.

Whereas a general Impeachment hath been brought by the House of Commons against *Theophilus* Earl of *Lincoln*, *James* Earl of *Middlesex*, *James* Earl of *Suffolk*, *George* Lord *Berkley*, *Francis* Lord *Willoughby*, *John* Lord *Hunsdon*, and *William* Lord *Maynard*; and a Day appointed by the Lords, at the Desire of the said House of Commons, to prosecute their Impeachment: That Day being now past above a Month, and nothing being done in the further Prosecution of the said Impeachment, the Lords considering the dangerous Consequence of keeping the said Peers under Restraint for so many Weeks, without any legal Proceeding against them, do order, that if the House of Commons shall not prosecute their Impeachment against the aforesaid Lords, by *Friday* next, (3^o *prox.*) then their Lordships will do therein according to the usual Course and Proceedings of Parliament.

The Lords require the Commons to hasten their Proceedings against the seven impeached Peers.

To

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

December.

To end this Month.—Mr. *Whitlocke*,^a observing upon the great Distractions of these Times, makes this Reflection: ‘That, in these Passages, Notice might be taken of the strange Workings of God, and of the perplexed Condition the Parliament was then in. The Army, whom they had raised, paid, and commissioned, now mutinying against them; and, with their Swords in their Hands, controuling and opposing their Principals and Masters. The City, their old Friends, joint Actors and constant Assistants of the Parliament with their Lives and Fortunes, becoming full of Sedition and Averseness towards them; questioning their Integrity, reproaching and seeking to cast them off.’—The Truth of this Remark has been much shewn by former Transactions, and will not be less so by those that are to come.

December 1. A Petition from the City of London was presented by Sheriff *Avery* and others, and publicly read in their Presence.

To the Right Honourable the LORDS assembled in the High Court of Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons of the City of London, in Common Council assembled,

Sheweth,

A Petition from the City of London against Free Quarter, the Alterations in their Militia, and other Grievances.

THAT your Petitioners do, with all Readiness, acknowledge the High Court of Parliament to be the Supreme Power and Judicatory of this Kingdom, constituted for the Defence, and contrived for the Safety and Freedom, of this Nation; unto whom all other Powers and Societies of Men ought to submit, and, with their utmost Ability, to assist and support; in whose Well-being and happy Progress, the peaceable and flourishing Condition of this Nation doth principally consist; the Contempt and Overthrow

of

^a *Memorials*, p. 283.

of whose Power and Authority cannot but be the
 woful Inlet to all Tyranny and Confusion, the
 People's Slavery, and the Law's Subversion.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 December.

And your Petitioners do, with all Thank-
 fulness, acknowledge and remember the unwea-
 ried Pains, incessant Labour, and constant En-
 deavours of this present Parliament, in the com-
 mon Cause of God and this Kingdom; wherein
 (though the Enemies have been many and great,
 their Oppositions strong, their Councils deep,
 and their Discouragements not a few) yet, thro'
 the good Hand of God upon them, with the united
 Assistance of their Brethren of *Scotland*, and the
 well-affected People of this Kingdom, joined to-
 gether in a Solemn League and Covenant, whose
 Lives and Treasure, under God, became their
 Bulwark, (among whom this City hath been by
 you often acknowledged to be Contributors to an
 ample Share) your Enemies have been disperfed,
 their Councils broken, your Endeavours crown'd
 with Honour, and your Armies rest successful.

And though the long-desired Fruits of Peace,
 of Freedom and common Justice, the easing of
 the People's Burdens, and the reforming of A-
 buses, have been much obstructed and retarded
 by the Necessities of a long continued War, by
 the sad Divisions amongst all Orders and Socie-
 ties of Men in the Kingdom, and the Fears of ap-
 parent Dangers and sudden Changes to arise
 thereby; yet, when your Petitioners look upon
 their Exemption from Monopolies, and other il-
 legal Impolitions; the Deliverances they have
 had from the Power and Tyranny of the Prelates,
 and their vexatious Courts; the demolishing of
 the High Commission and Star-Chamber; the
 unparallel'd Benefit and Freedom this Kingdom
 now enjoys by the Removal of the Court of
 Wards, whereby the Persons, the Posterities,
 and Estates of the Subjects were so much incum-
 bered and enthralled; all which by many are un-
 gratefully forgotten and cast out of Mind, and
 which therefore, out of Duty, your Petitioners
 have

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

have emboldened themselves thus publicly to
 enumerate; they cannot chuse but, with renew'd
 Hopes, expect e'er long to see the Kingdom
 flourishing, and their Troubles ended.

And when your Petitioners do consider how,
 not many Months ago, the whole Kingdom
 seemed to be reduced to the Obedience of the
 Parliament; their Brethren of *Scotland* returned
 home with good Content; the City replenish'd
 again with Inhabitants; the Exchange of Money
 with foreign Nations brought into a good Medi-
 um; Trade in a prosperous Condition; the Ex-
 cise and Customs increasing thereby; a Way
 of Settlement agreed upon by the Parliaments of
 both Nations; and all Things looking with a
 Face of Quietness and sweet Composure, they
 cannot but, with Grief of Heart, remember the
 unhappy Disagreement between the Parliament
 and Army, and that late dangerous Engagement,
 which as it was set on Foot in or about this City
 without their Knowledge or Consent, so they do
 utterly disavow and abhor it; those many Dis-
 contents and great Disturbances which accompa-
 nied the same, and followed thereupon, both to
 Parliament and City; those unparallel'd Out-
 rages and Affronts committed by Reformadoes,
 and other tumultuous and discontented Persons,
 upon both Houses; the Army advancing towards
 the City; the Common Council hurried into a
 Declaration, and into divers Military Prepara-
 tions, intended by them for no other End but
 the Safety of the Parliament and City; Where-
 upon hath followed the free Quartering of the
 Army about the City, which hath occasioned the
 Dearness of Provisions, and given Opportunity to
 evil-minded Persons to foment Differences and
 Discontents, both in the City and Army; hath
 caused foreign Nations, and others, to call
 home and remove their Stocks to Parts beyond
 the Seas, to the great Decay of Trade in this City
 and Kingdom; and, by the Disproportion of Ex-
 change, the Kingdom is not only deprived of fo-
 reign

reign Bullion, but, thro' the Encouragement taken thereby, have their own Coin transported away.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

December.

That your Petitioners are deeply sensible of the great Displeasure of the Parliament towards this City, manifested in limiting the Extent of their Militia, taking away their Nominations of the Persons intrusted therewith, and of the Licutenancy of the *Tower of London*; the guarding of the Parliament and the *Tower* with Soldiers of the Army; the imprisoning of their Recorder and several Aldermen, and other Members of this City.

Wherefore your Petitioners humbly pray, That the Honour, Power, and Privileges of Parliament may be, by your Wisdom and Justice, inviolably preserved; that the Army may be so provided for, that they may be enabled to remove their Quarters to a further Distance from the City, whereby the Price of Provisions may be abated, and Trade encouraged; that free Quarter may be prevented, and supernumerary Forces disbanded; that a more vigorous Course may be taken in settling of the Peace and Government of the Kingdom so long desired; that the Covenant may be fully observed; that all well-affected Persons that have adhered to the Parliament may be effectually protected and defended; that the Recorder, Aldermen, and other Citizens, now imprisoned, (so as it may stand with the Honour and Wisdom of Parliament) may be enlarged, which your Petitioners shall esteem great Favours to this City; and that all the late unhappy Proceedings, as to this City and Members thereof, may be forgotten and obliterated; that your Petitioners may enjoy the Splendor of your former Favours, and be thereby enabled to be the more serviceable to the Preservation of the Parliament and City, and reuniting of all that are well-affected thereunto, which is their most earnest and hearty Desires.

And your Petitioners shall pray, &c.

MICHELL.

Then

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December.

The Answer of
the House of
Lords thereto.

Then the Messengers withdrew, and, after Consideration had, they were called in; and the Speaker, in the Name of the House, returned to them this Answer :

‘ The Lords have commanded me to let you know, that they return you Thanks for the Acknowledgements you now make for the Benefits received by this Parliament, and for the Care of the Honour and Privileges of Parliament as the Supreme Court and Judicatory of this Kingdom, together with those good Affections which are very largely and seasonably expressed by this your Petition. They desire you to be assured that they will improve their utmost Endeavours for easing the Burdens that lie upon the Kingdom, for procuring a just and safe Peace ; neither will they omit any Means that may restore again the City of *London* unto a flourishing and happy Condition, in respect of Trade, as a Return of those great and faithful Services that they have done to the Parliament and Kingdom. As to those other Particulars in the Petition, which relate to the Power of this House, they shall take them into their Consideration, and do therein what shall be according to Honour and Justice.’

Dec. 2. The Commons sent up a Message to the Lords, desiring some longer Time for bringing up the Articles of Impeachment against the seven Lords, in regard of the urgent Business the House of Commons had before them at that Time ; on which the Lords enlarged the Time for a Week longer.

Their Order for
suppressing of
Riots.

A Complaint being made to the Lords of a great Disorder committed last Night in the *Strand*, several Soldiers making a Stop of all Coaches, and suffering none to pass unless they would drink the King’s Health ; an Order was made for the Militia of *London* and *Westminster* to take Care to suppress such Riots, and to apprehend the Authors of them ; also that the Lord Mayor, and Officers

Officers of *Westminster* should suffer no Company in any Tavern or Alehouse after Nine o'Clock at Night.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

December.

The House of Commons had several Petitions presented to them, as the *Supreme Authority of England*, which they had hitherto discouraged; and this Day another coming with the same Direction, filed, *The humble Petition of many free-born People, &c.* they resolved to give this Answer thereto, without any Addition or Alteration: 'That this House doth declare, That it is the Right of the Subject to petition; and that it is the Right of the Parliament to judge of such Petitions when they are presented: That all Persons are bound to acquiesce in the Judgment of the Parliament, upon Petitions presented; and that this House doth expect the same from the Petitioners.'

Both Houses adjourned to

Dec. 7. Several Petitions from the County of *Middlesex*, and other neighbouring Counties where the Army chiefly laid, were presented to both Houses, complaining grievously of the heavy Burden they endured from free Quarter, and other Depredations of the Soldiers; which, with great Taxes and Afflictions, made the Inhabitants almost ready to sink under them. Both Houses put them off with fair Speeches and Promises; knowing very well it was not in their Power to ease them of their Burden.

The same Day Colonel Sir *Hardress Waller*, and Colonel *Whaley*, presented to the House of Lords, and after to the Commons, a Remonstrance from the General and Council of War; and in regard, they said, that the Business of it was concerning Money to supply the Army, and the constant settling of their Pay, they did expect an Answer.

Mr. *Rushworth* has abridged this Remonstrance to a single Page: But since these Kind of Instruments are the most authentic History of the Times, we are persuaded our Readers would rather chuse

An. 23. Car. I. to see it at large. Here then it follows in all its
1647. Prolixity. ^b

December.

An HUMBLE REPRESENTATION from his Excellency Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX and the Council of the Army, concerning their past Endeavours, and now final Desires, for putting the Soldiery into constant Pay; for immediately disburching the Kingdom of free Quarter; the Prevention of any further Increase of Arrears; and in order to the disbanding of Supernumeraries, and other Things concerning the Soldiery.

A Remonstrance
presented from
General Fairfax
and the Council
of War, requi-
ring present Pay,
&c. for the Ar-
my.

Since, by the Blessing of God, the Speakers and Members of both Houses (that had been driven away) were, without Blood, restored, and have been ever since secured to sit and attend their Duty in Parliament; with what Patience God hath given us to wait for the Resolutions of those Things we have insisted on or offered, tending to the future Security of the Parliament, the just Satisfaction of the Soldiery, and the Ease and Settlement of the Kingdom, we need not use many Words to set forth; the Expence of above four Months Time in quiet Expectation thereof, with so little Satisfaction, does sufficiently speak.

As to what Fruit we have found in any Thing done to any of these Ends, we are sorry we can say so little thereof; or that we have Occasion to say so much of the Delay and Neglect of Observation thereof, as we are now constrained to do: But whatever these Neglects or Delays have been, or wherever the Fault hath been, we are sure the Blame thereof hath been laid upon us almost on all Hands; and this is the Fruit we have found, from the Hands of Men, of all our patient Waiting hitherto.

It is not unknown what Reproaches and Scandals of this Kind have been cast upon us, and what

^b From the original Edition, (printed for George Whittington in Cornhill, and licensed by Gilbert Mabbot) which corresponds exactly with the Copy enter'd in the Lords Journals.

what Use and Advantage have been made of
 those Delays, thereby to work upon the Impa-
 tience of the Soldiers and Country, to incense
 the Country against the Army, and both the Ar-
 my and Country against us, as if it had been our
 Fault alone that no more was done; and to what
 an Height of Scandal and Discontent against us
 the Pretence hereof was driven, or what despe-
 rate Endeavours have been thereupon made to
 withdraw the Soldiers from the Officers, (as having
 betrayed, or fail'd and neglected both theirs and
 the Kingdom's Interest) to divide and distemper
 the Army, and to engage both the Soldiery, and
 many other well-affected People, under the same
 Notion and Pretence, in Ways of Distraction and
 Confusion: And as we accounted these of most
 imminent Danger both to the Parliament, City,
 and Kingdom, we need not spend much Time to
 express; for we believe all that wished well to
 the Public were so deeply sensible thereof as they
 cannot so suddenly forget it; and others, who
 had any Thing to lose or hazard, though, perhaps
 so far as they had Hopes the Army might that
 Way have destroyed itself, they might have some
 secret Rejoicing at it, and may now be sorry the
 Business is so well over without that Offer; yea,
 so far as they considered the bottomless Depth
 and endless Danger of it, they could not but be
 affected with it, so far as we need not mention
 it, save to mind Men of what Danger and Mis-
 chief God hath therein delivered them from; and
 whence the greatest Advantage to the Rise and
 Growth of it was, even from Delays and slow
 Proceedings in those Things, which the long Ex-
 pectation of the Soldiery and Kingdom have been
 set upon; and to observe how apt both the Sol-
 diery and People, through tedious Delays in such
 Cases, are to hearken to any Part, and try any
 new Way proposed under the Notion of more
 speedy and effectual, though perhaps so far from
 real Remedy, as that indeed it endangers the ut-

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December.

An. 25. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

ter Loss of their End, with Ruin and Destruction
to both.

To prevent the Progress of this growing Danger to all, we have lately exposed ourselves to the utmost Hazard; and being acted therein from some Clearness in our Conscience that the Fault of these Delays lay not upon us, as was scandalously suggested, and a Confidence in God that he would appear to vindicate that Measure of Truth and Integrity he had given us in the Thing, though with many Failings and Miscarriages on our Parts, we were led forth by him, without any Artifice whereby to vindicate or excuse ourselves, nakedly to cast ourselves and the Business upon him; and, to his Praise we must speak it, he hath appeared in an answerable Issue, whereof the Parliament and Kingdom have had an Account; and wherein they may see, and we wish they may with us take Notice and be mindful of, the Mercy and Goodness of God in our Deliverance, which were added to all the rest; and therein the Army, which, in casting off all Bands of Order and Government, was like to have been let loose to have been a Plague and Bane both to the Kingdom and itself, once more reduced under that Temper and Discipline which may render it, through and under God, a further Security and Stay to the Kingdom; and, in due Time, bring it to a quiet Disbanding, when just Satisfaction, with Settlement and Safety, shall admit: But, as hath been in part done already, we must again mind the Parliament upon what Terms this hath been wrought: The General (as we call with and under him) stands engaged to the Army for the lawful Prosecution of the Soldiers Concernments, and some general Fundamental Things for the Kingdom; and, in Confidence of the Parliament's good Acceptance of the Service thereby done, and of their real Intention, and promised effectual Resolution, to give Satisfaction in those Things, hath, in a Manner, undertaken for the Parliament therein.

We

* We wish we may see Cause to acknowledge
 * their just Sense of his Excellency's good Affection
 * and Service in that Business, or at least of their
 * own Engagement, or the Kingdom's Concern-
 * ments therein; and that we had not Cause either
 * to apprehend a strange Neglect thereof growing
 * upon many, or rather, in some, the sad Symp-
 * toms of an evil Eye at the Service itself, as if they
 * did regret the happy Composure of those Distrac-
 * tions begun in the Army, or the Re-uniting of it;
 * or did grudge the good Hand of God towards it
 * and the Kingdom therein, that, in Mercy, would
 * not suffer it to run on in these Distractions to its
 * own Ruin and the Kingdom's: For though it be
 * most evident that had God given up the Army
 * to cast off the Reins of Government and Order,
 * and to go on in those distracting and confound-
 * ing Ways, which it was endeavour'd to be drawn
 * into, both it and other Forces of the Kingdom
 * were like, e'er this Time, to have been engaged
 * in Blood one against another; or else united only in
 * some desperate Course of rending and tearing out
 * the Bowels and Vitals of the Kingdom, and
 * of plucking up or endangering all Foundations of
 * Order, Peace, and Government therein; yea, and
 * of all Right and Property too; yet the Envy and
 * Malignity of some Men's Spirits against this Ar-
 * my, and against the Interest of good Men there-
 * in, seems to be such as if they had rather have
 * seen it so, than that this Army should again be
 * an united Piece; and we clearly apprehend the
 * same Principles, that sway'd heretofore, now a-
 * gain prevailing, as if there were no Good so
 * serviceable, or Evil so formidable, which the
 * breaking of this Army, with as much Ignominy
 * and Confusion as may be, would not, in their Ac-
 * count, countervail; and if such an envious and
 * evil Spirit be indeed lodged and working in the
 * Hearts of any, we desire God in Mercy to con-
 * vince them of it, lest he confound them for it.

* For our Parts, having the Witnels of God in
 * our Consciences, that though we are not without

An. 25. Car. 1.

1647.

December,

weak and frail Workings of our fleshly Hearts in
 all our Ways; yet, for the main, we have, in all
 our Engagements from the Beginning of the
 War, had the Work of God and the Kingdom
 in our Eye, and not our own: And that, since the
 Army (by the oppressive Provoking and spiteful
 Proceedings of Men, acted by the aforesaid en-
 vious Principles against it) was raised to such
 Resolutions, and driven into such a Posture as
 put it past the Power of the Officers to bring it
 to a quiet Disbanding, without further Satisfac-
 tion and Security, it hath been our main End
 in continuing with it, and almost our whole
 Work, to keep it within Compass and Modera-
 tion; to withhold it from Extremities of all Sorts,
 and from that Mischief to the Kingdom or it-
 self, which our withdrawing and taking off our
 Hands from the Government of it would have
 let it loose unto; and to make Use of it, and of
 the Providence that brought it to that Pass, if
 possible, to some good Issue for the just Liberty,
 Safety, and Settlement of the Kingdom; and
 bring the Army to some Bottom of reasonable
 Satisfaction wherein it might acquiesce, and at
 last come to a quiet Disbanding; and, in trans-
 action of all this, with all Tendernefs and Pa-
 tience, to preserve, if possible, the Authority and
 Peace of the Kingdom, and prevent new Broils
 which several Parties and Interests have been so
 apt unto. Having, we say, the Witness of these
 Things within us, when, on the other Side, we
 consider what unworthy Requitals we meet with
 for all this from the Hands of Men; how we are
 loaded with Reproaches for it, and accused of
 being the only Disturbers of the Kingdom, and
 the Authors of its Burdens, as if, for private
 Ends and Designs, we kept up the Army; and
 how generally most Men, even of the Parlia-
 ment Party, for whose Preservation, and for Pre-
 vention of whose Ruin, we have exposed our-
 selves to all Hazards therein, do, either from Disaf-
 fection or Design to divide and break the Army,
 withhold

withhold or obstruct all Supplies and Satisfaction
 which might keep it in Order, Union, or Re-
 pute: We confess, when we consider these
 Things, we are ready to apprehend that God doth
 herein seem most justly to upbraid our Care and
 Solicitousness to preserve a People given up, as
 we begin to fear, to their own Destruction, and
 which seem to chuse it rather than not to have
 their own factious Interests or Envy fulfilled;
 rather than to own their Preservation, in the least
 Degree, to those whom God hath appeared wil-
 ling to use for their Preservation and Deliverance.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

And, rather than we would further increase
 the Odium and Scandal of being the only pub-
 lic Disturbers and Oppressors, so unworthily cast
 upon us, meerly for our Good-will and Endeavours
 to prevent greater Mischiefs, we are apt to
 chuse rather to withdraw from our private Sta-
 tion, though with Hazard of our personal Safety,
 and the Loss not only of any imagined Benefit
 of future Employment, but even our Arrears for
 what Service we have done; and so, leaving all
 to whatever Confusion God, in his righteous
 Judgment, may seem good to bring upon the
 Nation, to cast ourselves wholly upon him to
 preserve and provide for us in the Midst thereof;
 or, if God in Mercy intend better Things to
 the Kingdom, or hath found ought in us, which
 we confess he may, rendering us unworthy to be
 any longer Instruments thereof, we should de-
 sire, with Meekness and Rejoicing, to see any
 other whom he finds, or the Kingdom judgeth,
 more worthy to take up our present Charge: But
 finding not yet any such clear Discharge as would,
 to our Apprehension, fully quit us before God
 or Man, to leave the Army or Kingdom in
 this present Condition, we shall, in Discharge of
 our Duty to the utmost, add this one Essay more
 to bring both into a better, if God in Mercy see
 it good; we shall therefore once more beg the
 Parliament timely to consider and provide effec-
 tually

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

‘ tually for those Things expressed in the late Re-
 ‘ monstrance published at the several Rendezvous
 ‘ of the Army, upon his Excellency’s continued
 ‘ Conjunction, whereby the Discontents in the Ar-
 ‘ my were quieted, the Distractions compos’d, and
 ‘ the due Order and Discipline of it recovered and
 ‘ submitted to: And, amongst these Things, since
 ‘ the greatest and most immediate and pressing E-
 ‘ vil to the Soldiery is the Want of Pay; and, to
 ‘ the Country, the Disorders, Exactions, and A-
 ‘ buses of the Soldiers, with the Burden and An-
 ‘ noyance of free Quarter thereby enforced; and
 ‘ which, if once provided for, gives Time of Con-
 ‘ sideration for other Things: We shall first ap-
 ‘ ply to that, either to obtain a present Remedy, or
 ‘ at least to acquit and discharge ourselves, in that
 ‘ Point, of the many Evils thereof, both to the
 ‘ Soldiery and Country.

‘ We have long been sadly sensible, and many
 ‘ Ways and often express’d our Sense thereof; but
 ‘ we have been most troubled at it, since that Ne-
 ‘ cessity which heretofore enforced it, viz. the
 ‘ Straitness of the Quarters the Parliament had to
 ‘ raise Money in was taken away, and all Parts of
 ‘ the Kingdom have been cleared from any Ene-
 ‘ my, and free for the equal levying of Money
 ‘ to supply the Necessities of the whole: And it
 ‘ seems a Matter of Wonder to us, or an Argument
 ‘ of great Improvidence at best, that since that
 ‘ Time the Soldiery, though much lessen’d in
 ‘ Number, should be no better paid and provided
 ‘ for than before.

‘ From the Sense of these Things, we have made
 ‘ frequent Addresses to the Parliament for a suffici-
 ‘ ent Establishment and Provision of Pay for the
 ‘ Army and other Forces of the Kingdom, untill
 ‘ they might, with Safety to the Kingdom, and
 ‘ just Satisfaction and Security to themselves, in
 ‘ Point of Arrears, Indemnity, &c. be disbanded,
 ‘ or otherwise employed out of the Kingdom. We
 ‘ have long waited with Impatience as aforesaid,
 ‘ for

* for some Fruit of our Addreffes at leaft in this
 * Point; but what through the Difficulty or De-
 * lay of getting Things paffed in Parliament to
 * this Purpose, or of putting in Execution thofe
 * Ordinances that have been paffed, and the Ne-
 * glect or Slownefs of Country Committees, Af-
 * feffors or Collectors, to do their Duty therein;
 * what thro' the Malignity of fome, who, in Defign
 * to break or diftract the Army as aforefaid for
 * want of Pay, and to difaffect the Country there-
 * to by neceffitated free Quarter, do induftrioufly
 * retard all Supplies of Money; and what thro'
 * the general Backwardnefs of all, efpecially in the
 * City of *London*, to part with it, we have yet
 * found little Fruit of all our Addreffes and En-
 * deavours in this Kind; there being not as yet
 * any Eftablifhment of Contribution for Pay of
 * the Soldiery, any whit near proportionably to
 * the Numbers that we yet keep up, or any effec-
 * tual Execution of the Powers already given for
 * raifing of the Taxes already charged upon the
 * Kingdom; fo as we remain yet as far as ever from
 * that Supply of Pay to the Army or other Forces,
 * whereby either the Burdens and Grievances of
 * free Quarter can be taken off, or the Neceffity of
 * the Soldiery competently fupplied, or their Dif-
 * contents in any Meafure removed, or Diforder
 * prevented, or good Difcipline preferved; and,
 * which is moft fad, in the Garrifons of the King-
 * dom, and thofe of moft Importance, where the
 * Soldiery have not, nor well can have, the Bene-
 * fit of Quarter for their Subfiftance, (as the Army
 * and Field-Officers have yet) they have very long
 * been without any Supply of Pay at all; fo as di-
 * vers poor Soldiers in fome of them have actually
 * ftarv'd and died for Want, in Attendance upon their
 * Duties; others forced by Extremity of Want to
 * quit their Service: and the reft ready to ftarve or
 * quit their Garrifons to any that will poffefs them;
 * and as it is moft apparent that the prefent Pro-
 * portion of Tax, if duly levied, could not com-
 * petently fupply them, and others too, in an equal
 * Dif-

An. 23. Car. 1.
 1647.
 December.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

‘ Distribution thereof, considering the Number that
 ‘ are yet in being; so the Committees in many
 ‘ Countries where such Garrisons are, that have
 ‘ engaged with the Army, do refuse to levy those
 ‘ small Proportions of Money that have been as-
 ‘ signed for the present Relief of such Garrisons;
 ‘ but are content to see the aforesaid Miseries of
 ‘ the Soldiery, and Danger to the Garrisons, rather
 ‘ than do their Parts to give the least Remedy to
 ‘ either; divers of them telling the Soldiers plain-
 ‘ ly, as we are informed, that if they had declared
 ‘ against the Army they should not have wanted;
 ‘ but having engaged with it they must expect
 ‘ neither Quarter nor Pay but what they get from
 ‘ the Army.

‘ If we, or this poor Army, have deserved such
 ‘ Hatred or Despite, especially from pretended
 ‘ Friends to the Parliament and the Kingdom’s In-
 ‘ terest, we would fain be plainly told and con-
 ‘ vinced wherein; otherwise we cannot account it
 ‘ but most unchristian and inhuman Dealing, and
 ‘ such as can have no better Root than envious
 ‘ Faction, void of all Regard to public Interest;
 ‘ and we would have all such know that, if we had
 ‘ been in the same Mind, or would have allowed
 ‘ ourselves, by Power, to pursue the Ruin of ad-
 ‘ verse Parties, by indirect or unchristian Ways,
 ‘ or otherwise to set up a Party of our own and
 ‘ suppress all others; or if we had not still, accord-
 ‘ ing to our first Principles, loved much more the
 ‘ Ways of Common Right and Freedom, and the
 ‘ Proceedings in all such Things by Parliament in
 ‘ order thereunto; or if we had not, in the Way
 ‘ of ordering our Affairs since the Army’s Engage-
 ‘ ment, consulted more the preserving of Peace in
 ‘ the Kingdom, and to prevent the Rise of any new
 ‘ War, than our own Advantage or Security, we
 ‘ could (to speak as Men, with the Power and Ad-
 ‘ vantages God hath put into our Hands) long e’er
 ‘ this Time, as yet also we might, have put the
 ‘ Army, and all other Forces engaged with it in-
 ‘ to such a Posture as to have assured themselves
 ‘ of

of Pay while continued; and probably to have made our Opposers in the Kingdom, and City too, willing to have followed us with Offers of Satisfaction as to the Arrears and other Dues that concern the Soldiery; or we could have told how to prosecute those Advantages we have had to the Suppression, if not Destruction, of adverse Parties and Interests, so as they should not, probably, have had those Foundations or Possibilities to grow up again to our further Trouble or Danger, as now they seem to have; and all this with Reason and Justice enough too: But that we have studied the Preservation and Good of all, without Ruin or Destruction to any, as far as we could; and have, thro' God, been acted therein in some Measure with that Mildness and Moderation, Patience and Love in the Name of Christ; and we are yet confident we shall at last lose nothing by it. But to return to our Purpose,

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
December.

As to the Inconveniences and Dangers of a new Provision for the Soldiers, in Point of Pay, the Parliament hath had sufficient Cautions and Warnings, especially in the late Distractions; and while the Danger thereof continued visible, it was largely professed, if that Danger could be removed, and the Army reduced into Order and Discipline, we should have what Provision we could, with Reason, desire in that Point; and the same, with much more, upon the first Hopes of overcoming that Danger, was as largely promised: Yet now, the Danger is over, we see little better Care of Performance than before; but after many Days since elapsed, and some spent in professed Consideration of it, the whole Care of that Business seems to be wrapt up in one bare Vote, viz. *That all supernumerary Forces shall be disbanded.*

As to which Matter of Disbanding Supernumeraries, so it be with reasonable Satisfaction in Point of Arrears, we are so far from opposing or obstructing it, that, for the speedy Easing of the Kingdom's Burdens by it, we shall readily give all

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

December.

all Furtherance and Assistance to it; and shall, by-and-by, offer that Encouragement thereunto as will demonstrate the same; and on such Terms we shall ourselves most gladly be of those Supernumeraries that should come first to disbanding; but as to the Thought of the present disbanding of all Supernumeraries, according to the Vote, first, we cannot but wish it be considered, whether, with any Respect at all to the Service and Relief of *Ireland*, the Parliament can well disband them all; unto which Service, (as these might have been of great Advancement of Assistance long since, but for the Prevalence of Faction and Design to break that Force that might have afforded it, as we have formerly demonstrated, so) we have more lately contributed our Parts in the Offer and Designation of a very considerable Force thereunto; and there hath wanted nothing but Resolution and Money, with Expedition to send them over, which was not in our Power.

But if (with respect to that Service and the Safety of this Kingdom) the Parliament can but lessen their Forces so much, as to bring them near 60,000 *l. per Menssem* Pay; yet we wish it be withall considered how many these Supernumeraries are, that must so come to be presently disbanded; which, to bring the Residue within that Compass, would be little less than 20,000 of one Sort or other; and, if so, how great a Sum it would require to give any reasonable Satisfaction to so many, in Point of Arrears in Hand; and by the Hardness of getting so much Money as to piece up the Month's Pay to the Army, we have much Reason to doubt how long the Parliament will be in raising such a Sum together, or where they will suddenly find Money to give competent Satisfaction to the Proportion but of a Regiment or two upon a present disbanding; and unless they be provided with present Money to give reasonable Satisfaction to so many at once as would to that End come to be disbanded, the Parliament
must

‘ must either turn them off presently with extream
 ‘ Dissatisfaction and Disobligation; (which will ren-
 ‘ der them apt to rise again with any Party against
 ‘ the Parliament, who would give them Hope of
 ‘ better Dealing, or but of Revenge) or else must
 ‘ continue them untill better provided.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 December.

‘ And tho’ there were Money ready for a com-
 ‘ petent Part of Arrears in Hand, yet it will be ne-
 ‘ cessary, however, that they be continued for
 ‘ some Time for the stating of their Accounts, and
 ‘ giving Debentures for the Remainder; for (be-
 ‘ sides the Injustice and Dissatisfaction of turning
 ‘ the Soldiers off without that) we presume the
 ‘ Parliament hath had too much Experience al-
 ‘ ready of the bottomless ill Consequences of not
 ‘ ascertaining their Accounts and Arrears before
 ‘ disbanding, and not keeping the same registered
 ‘ together, by the endless Clamours and Outcries of
 ‘ particular Persons for Arrears, and the vast Sums
 ‘ expended thereupon, without End of Satisfaction;
 ‘ the Persons or their State of Arrears (thro’ Ne-
 ‘ glect of taking such Accounts before disbanding)
 ‘ having never been certainly known, nor any End
 ‘ either of their Number or Claims; and the Dis-
 ‘ patch of such Accounts for those that remain be-
 ‘ fore disbanding will certainly take up some Time;
 ‘ we doubt, some Months.

‘ Now, if thus any Part of the Supernumeraries,
 ‘ above what the 60,000*l.* a-month will pay, shall,
 ‘ either for the Time of stating their Accounts, or
 ‘ longer for Want of present Money, not be dis-
 ‘ banded, the Army must so long remain without
 ‘ constant Pay; and consequently go upon free
 ‘ Quarter the while, unless the Tax for their Pay
 ‘ be for the mean Time proportionally increased;
 ‘ for the 60,000*l.* a-month not affording any Assign-
 ‘ ment for such Supernumeraries Pay, those must of
 ‘ Necessity go unpaid the while, and consequently
 ‘ upon free Quarter; and their going any where
 ‘ upon free Quarter will hinder the coming in of
 ‘ the Contribution of those Parts which should be to
 ‘ pay some others; and so these must likewise go
 ‘ upon

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

‘ upon free Quarter the while, which will, in like
 ‘ Manner, hinder the Pay and necessitate the like
 ‘ free quartering of others; so as all will, that
 ‘ while, be equally hindered from constant Pay,
 ‘ and forced to take free Quarter still. But be-
 ‘ sides these aforementioned certain and visible Oc-
 ‘ casions of Delays to the present Effect of the
 ‘ Vote for disbanding all Supernumeraries, we
 ‘ doubt it will find many other Difficulties and Ob-
 ‘ structions to the speedy and effectual Dispatch
 ‘ thereof, and prove not so easy, or so well execu-
 ‘ ted as voted; so that though we wish that Busi-
 ‘ ness of disbanding Supernumeraries put into as
 ‘ speedy a Way of Execution as may be, yet, up-
 ‘ on all these Considerations, we cannot imagine
 ‘ that Vote to be absolute and sovereign; nor so
 ‘ speedy and timely a Care of the Soldiers Wants
 ‘ and Discontents, and the Country’s Grievance
 ‘ in their free Quarter, as the Nature of the Mala-
 ‘ dy and Temper of the Patient requires: We
 ‘ shall therefore offer our final Advice for some o-
 ‘ ther, first setting down the Particulars, and then
 ‘ shewing the Efficacy and Benefit thereof: The
 ‘ Particulars, which we have in part heretofore pro-
 ‘ pounded to the Parliament, are these:

I. ‘ That the Parliament do forthwith enlarge
 ‘ their monthly Contribution, for five or six
 ‘ Months, to the full Proportion of the Pay of all
 ‘ the Forces now in being within this Kingdom,
 ‘ or at least so many of them as they are not pro-
 ‘ vided with ready Money to disband, and to a con-
 ‘ siderable Proportion, viz. about 10,000 *l.* a
 ‘ Month over; which, by a near Estimate, we con-
 ‘ ceive would well be by the Addition of 40,000 *l.*
 ‘ *per Menssem* to the present 60,000 *l. per Men-*
 ‘ *sem*, and with less we believe it cannot be; and
 ‘ the same Committees to be appointed, and to
 ‘ have the same Powers for the levying this as for
 ‘ the former 60,000 *l.* and the same Penalties for
 ‘ Neglects or Defaults therein as for the Arrears of
 ‘ former Taxes to the Army: And for the more
 ‘ speedy passing of this, unless some visible Ine-
 ‘ quality

quality in the Rates of Countries be readily rec-
tified, without Delay to the passing of it, we wish
it might (being but for that short Space) pass ac-
cording to the same Rates as the 60,000 l. And
for the Kingdom's better Satisfaction herein, it
may be resolved and declared,

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December.

I. That upon this Enlargement, and the ef-
fectual levying of it in the respective Counties,
no free Quarter at all shall, from within a Month
at most after passing the Ordinance, be taken in
any County or Place where it shall be duly levied
and paid.

2. That it is intended this Enlargement of
Tax shall not be continued beyond the Space of
the Months limited; and that, in the mean
Time, as the Parliament can find Money and
Safety to disband and lessen their Forces, so, if
that Lessening be considerable, they will, by De-
grees, lessen the said Tax proportionably.

II. We desire that, for the more sure and ef-
fectual levying of the whole Tax, the General
and Committee of the Army, or one of them,
may have Power, in Case of any Country Com-
mittee's Neglect or Fail therein, to add new
Men to any of the respective Committees, who are
thereupon to have the same Power as the Com-
mittees named in the Ordinance have.

III. That for the more sure and ready Pay-
ment of the Soldiery out of this, the Forces which
are not or cannot be provided for to be forthwith
disbanded, may be immediately assigned to sever-
al Counties, or Associations of Counties, out of
whose Taxes they shall be paid; and that the
General may have Power accordingly to make
such Distribution and Assignment, giving Notice
and Account thereof to the Committee of the
Army, and they thereupon to take Order for the
Payment of the Forces so assigned, immediately
out of the Counties or Associations to which they
are assigned; and that the Payments be made ac-
cording to due Musters, and according to the last
Establishment, as to the Rate of each Officer's
Pay

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

Pay; and the Surplusage of any County's Taxes, above the due Pay of their Forces so assigned to be paid out of them, to be at the Care and Oversight of the same Committee for the Army, called for and paid into the common Treasury, for such general Uses as shall be found necessary relating to the Forces and Service within this Kingdom, by Warrant from the General or Committee of the Army, according to the usual Course of Limitations heretofore; and the Remainder and Surplusage of the said Taxes of the whole Kingdom, above the Uses aforesaid, to be for the Supply and Relief of the Forces already in *Ireland*, or other public Uses as the Parliament shall think fit; and the same Committee likewise, with the Treasurers, to take Care for the methodizing and balancing of the whole Accounts, and to have Power for the employing of Officers needful for the Dispatch and Accommodation of this Service, and to make Allowance of Salaries to them, without some reasonable Limitation; particularly that there be Allowances for so many Deputy-Commissionaries of Musters, as upon the Practice of this Distribution the General and Committee shall find needful; and the Treasurers-General out of their Salary, in regard of this Accession to it, to maintain so many Deputy-Treasurers, as the General and the Committee of the Army shall find needful to be employed, and to reside in such several Parts of the Kingdom as the General shall find convenient for that Service.

IV. That, the Security for Arrears being settled as hath been already, and is again hereafter propounded, the Parliament would speedily send down Commissioners to the Army, and appoint the like for the other Forces of the Kingdom, to state Accounts and give Debentures; whereby the Soldier may, before his Disbanding, have his Arrears ascertained to him as a clear Debt, to be paid him out of that Security; and that one Office or Registry may be appointed into which all Accounts so taken may be returned, and all Arrears,

rears registered to be paid, in Order as is here-
after expressed: And for this Office we offer, that
two Registers, with four Clerks, may be allowed
to have reasonable Salaries out of the Revenue,
issuing out of the said Security; and this we de-
fire may be hastened for the speedier Preparation
to the Work of Disbanding, that such as are to
be disbanded may be ready for it by that Time
the Parliament can provide Money wherewith to
disband any of them; and so, by disbanning the
Supernumeraries as fast as may be, Way may be
made for the speedier lessening and taking off the
Taxes by Degrees.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December.

Now for the Advantage and Benefit of the
Things here propounded, they will appear as
follow, viz.

Whereas, upon the former Supposition, that
the putting of the Soldiery, that are to be con-
tinued, into a Way of constant Pay, to depend
only upon the Disbanding of Supernumeraries,
whom the present Tax will not extend to pay;
it is most evident, as before demonstrated, that
none can be put into present Pay, but all such go
on upon free Quarter so long as untill every one
of the said Supernumeraries be disbanded; which,
whatever may be imagined, tho' no other Dif-
ficulties or Obstructions should happen than what
are now visible, as before mentioned, would not
be effected, nor, we doubt, provided for, in three
or four Months Time; we wish it proved so
soon, but we much fear Interruptions or Delays
will happen to make it much longer; and all
that while, free Quarter continuing as before, the
Burden thereof, besides the Annoyances, tho' it
may fall more lightly upon some Parts, and hea-
vier upon others, yet, in the whole, it dam-
nifies the Kingdom as much as the said increased
Contributions come to: The Soldier also must
have, besides his Quarters, some Pay in Hand in
the mean while, otherwise he can neither subsist
nor be kept in Order; yet still he accounts, at
Vol. XVI. B b least,

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December,

least, half of his Pay for the remaining Time in Arrear to him; so as that further Debts do also grow upon the Kingdom's Score.

Now, contrariwise, the Things we have propounded being granted, that bare Contribution answers all; for we dare undertake, within a Fortnight after the granting of them, all the Forces of the Kingdom shall be assigned where and how to receive their Pay constantly till disbanded, and so no more free Quarter shall henceforth be taken; no Part of the Kingdom any more unequally oppressed thereby; nor any further Debt of Arrears henceforth incurred upon the Kingdom; and the Work of Disbanding Supernumeraries not at all hindered, but much facilitated thereby; and, as the Parliament finds Money and Safety to disband any of them, they may, by the same Degrees, either lessen the Tax proportionably, or will have so much more Surplusage from thence towards Relief of *Ireland*, or towards disbanning of others, or any other public Uses.

And now, for Furtherance and Encouragement in the Matter of Disbanding, these Things aforementioned being granted, we shall, for the Army and the other Forces engaged with it, offer and agree to these Rules following:

1. That such of the said Forces as shall come to be disbanded as Supernumeraries, shall, out of the Monies to be raised upon the Security of Arrears, have the full Moiety of their Arrears first made good to them, as Monies come in hereupon, before those which fall out to be continued shall receive any Part of theirs; and after that, when those that continue shall have received a like Proportion of theirs, then those that shall be disbanded to receive the other Moiety, or full Remainder, of their Arrears, before these that continue have any more.

2. That those of them that shall disband, shall, as Monies come in upon the said Security, receive

ceive their Proportions of Arrears in the same Order and Course as they disband; of which Order and Course a Remembrance to be kept and registered in the aforesaid Registry of these Accounts; the Persons of the Regiment, Troop, or Company first disbanding, and so the rest in Course, to receive first what was due to them at disbanding, to make up their first Moiety, by two equal Portions; and likewise to receive their second Moiety at twice, by equal Portions, in the same Course as they disband.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
December.

Now, for our Desire in the first Proposition foregoing, to have the Increase of Contribution extended to the Proportion of 10,000*l.* a-month, by Estimate, over and above what we think the just Pay for the Soldiery now in being in the Kingdom, and not ready for present disbanding, will come to; the Reason is partly, that there may be some present certain Supply out of it for the Forces in *Ireland*; and partly because, if the Contribution should be scant of, or but just answerable to, the Pay of the Soldiery, the many Contingencies and necessary Charges, not to be foreseen, and the probable Failings of fully levying the Contribution in some Parts, would necessitate the going of some upon free Quarter, which would disturb the Order and constant Pay of the whole; and it would also cost much Time to proportion the Forces to be assigned upon the several Counties exactly to the Contribution of them, which would make it long e'er free Quarters could be taken off, since none could be assigned where to be paid, untill the Pay of each Part of the Soldiery were exactly computed, and all of them as exactly distributed according to each County's Tax: Whereas, the Taxes being laid to a sufficient Proportion above the just Pay, we can immediately make Distributions and Assignments by Estimate, so as to be sure the Taxes of each County exceed the Pay of the Soldiers assigned to it: And tho' some one County have more, and another fewer, Soldiers as-

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

signed to them than (upon an exact Distribution according to the Number and Pay of the Soldiery) their just Proportion would come to, yet none having so many but that their Taxes will do more than pay them, no Part will bear above its due Proportion of Charge; and those Counties which have least Number of Soldiers assigned upon them, yet will bear their due Proportion of Charge, either in Pay to the Soldiers, or in the Surplusage of their Tax above it; which being collected into the common Treasury, will be for the Relief of *Ireland*, or other publick Uses; so as the Surplusage, either in particular Counties above their particular Assignments, or of the whole Kingdom's Taxes above the Pay of the whole Soldiery in it, will be no Loss; but (as to some certain and present Relief for *Ireland* out of it, upon the Supposition of the 100,000 *l. per Month*) we shall (besides the Surplusage of every County's Tax above the Pay of the Soldiers to be assigned to it) forecast, in the Distributions and Assignments, to levy the Taxes of some Counties, and that as many as may be, to come entirely into the common Treasury for Relief of *Ireland*, without assigning any of the Forces of *England* to be paid out of them.

And for that Power desired for making such Distributions and Assignments, the Advantages and Benefits of that Way of Repartition, as to the more sure and ready Pay of the Soldiers, are sufficiently known and tried; and it is most evident that, without it, (if no Soldiers be paid before the Monies be first collected in the several Counties, and then sent into the common Treasury for all the Kingdom, and then sent to the Head-Quarters, or thence distributed to the several Forces within the Kingdom) it is in vain to think that the Soldier can be supplied with Money aforehand, or timely enough to make him pay for Quarters; and it is as bad almost not at all as not in Time.

We

‘ We have thus propounded a Way, whereby
 ‘ all the Soldiery of the Kingdom may be instantly
 ‘ in a Condition of constant Pay while continued,
 ‘ and thereby be kept in Order and Discipline; all
 ‘ free Quarter, with the Abuses, Exactions, An-
 ‘ noyances, and unequal Pressures that accompany
 ‘ it, immediately taken off; no further Debt of Ar-
 ‘ rears incurred upon the Kingdom, and that
 ‘ which is already incurred, put in a Way to be
 ‘ recovered and overcome in Time; and whereby
 ‘ the supernumerary Forces may shortly be dis-
 ‘ banded by Degrees, as the Parliament can find
 ‘ Money to do it, and will be satisfiable to disband
 ‘ with less Money in Hand, without Danger of
 ‘ Disobligation therein; and whereby also the ad-
 ‘ ditional Charge, now propounded, with other
 ‘ Burdens of the Kingdom, may, by the same
 ‘ Degrees, be lessened and eased with Safety and
 ‘ Satisfaction, untill all can be taken off.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 December.

‘ And as it is evident that, if such a Course as
 ‘ this had been taken sooner, and the Parliament,
 ‘ as they found the several Parts of the King-
 ‘ dom cleared from the Enemy, and eased from
 ‘ the Oppressions they suffered under them, had,
 ‘ by Degrees, extended an equal Contribution
 ‘ over all Parts, in proportion sufficient to have
 ‘ paid all their Forces, while they continued them,
 ‘ the Kingdom had been eased of free Quarter,
 ‘ and no further Debt of Arrears to the Soldiery
 ‘ incurred upon it; for, at least, a Year and an
 ‘ half ago, those that have been disbanded had not
 ‘ been put off with so much Disobligation as some
 ‘ have been; nor had their Claims and endless
 ‘ Demands since brought such Trouble upon, or
 ‘ drawn such vast Arrears from, the Parliament
 ‘ and Kingdom; and those that remain now to be
 ‘ disbanded had been much easier satisfied, and
 ‘ much more readily disbanded; so if such a Course,
 ‘ as is here propounded, be not speedily taken, but
 ‘ the putting of the Soldiery into a Way of Pay be
 ‘ left to depend only upon the disbanning all Su-

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December,

pernumeraries (and that so unprovided for, or so very uncertainly and slowly provided for and proceeded in, as, without this Course, it is like to be) it is most evident, (besides unforeseen Dangers of Discontent, both in the Soldiery and Country, of Difficulties to disband, or Interruptions or Dissatisfactions in it) that the Non-disbanding of some will so long occasion the Non-payment of all, and continue free Quarter, with the Inconveniences thereof, upon all; and the Non-payment of all may hinder the Disbanding of any; and so both Debts and Discontents grow upon the Soldiery and Kingdom, perhaps, till it passeth either the Power of the General and Officers to compose the one, or the Parliament and Kingdom to satisfy the other.

Having therefore sufficiently discharged ourselves in this Point, so as we shall, we hope, stand acquitted before God and Man, from whatever Evils ensue upon any further Neglect thereof, we must now declare, That we find the just Expectations of the Army herein (especially since the General's late Engagements or Undertakings at the Rendezvous) are so great and earnest; the Clamours and Outcries to us from other Forces and Garrisons of the Kingdom engaged with the Army, for their extreme Necessity, and our apprehended Neglect of equal Provision for them, are so sad and pressing; the Discontents of the Country, from the Oppressions of free Quarter, are so full, and yet growing, and almost desperate; and the Distempers, Distractions, and Dangers threatened by all these are so vast and imminent, as we can no longer stand under the Burthen or Blame of them. But if the Things here before propounded be not granted and passed effectually, or a certain Course settled according to the Effect of them, by the End of this present Week, we can no longer give Account of the Army or other Forces in a regular Way; and, unless we find Satisfaction in our Judgments to
 ' take

take some extraordinary Ways of Power, we must let the Souldiery and the Kingdom know that we cannot satisfy their just Expectations; and therefore desire that the Charge of the Souldiery may be transmitted to others. If the Parliament shall approve, and pass what we have here propounded, we must, for the better Prosecution and Effecting thereof, add, That the superlative Backwardness and Obstinacy, or Disaffection rather, of those within the City, who have thus long withheld their Arrears of Taxes, so long since due to the Army, may not escape, either with Victory therein, or without exemplary suffering at least, by strict and speedy levying, as well the Penalties as the Arrears themselves; and, for that Purpose, that the Parliament would reassume the Consideration of the General's late Letters about that Business to the Committee of the Army, and also review that to the Lord Mayor and Common Council; wherein the ill Consequences, both of the wilful Neglect of the Thing, and of the Army's withdrawing to a further Distance before it be done, or of its continuing longer hereabouts in the dilatory, perhaps fruitless, Expectation thereof, from the City's own Actings therein, may sufficiently appear.

To which we add, that till it be done effectually, and sharply to some, the Distribution of the Forces to several Committees to be paid, according to what is before propounded, can neither be effectual nor safe; and we must therefore desire that, (unless it be thought fit that the whole Kingdom should groan still under the Oppression of free Quarter, and these adjacent Counties be undone chiefly, while those of the City, that occasion all, sit free from any Taste of it) there may be no longer Stop to the drawing in of the Army, or a considerable Part of it, to quarter upon them in the City, who had not paid before the said Letters, untill they shall have paid both the Arrears and full Penalties; and though our Tenderness of that City's Safeguard and Welfare

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

December.

fare, and our Cleareness from the least Thought of
 Evil towards it, or base Design to make the least
 Advantage to ourselves or the Army by it, hath
 sufficiently appeared in all our former Demean-
 ments, and in our Carriage of the Business upon
 our late Advance towards it, notwithstanding the
 just Occasions and great Provocations there so
 newly given, as also in our innocent March to-
 wards it, and the quiet and patient waiting about
 it for those long due Arrears, without quarter-
 ing any Soldiers in it; yet now, in Justice, we
 cannot but desire that, besides the levying of the
 Arrears at last, for which we have been put to a
 Stay so long, there may now likewise some Re-
 paration be thought on from the City to the Parts
 adjacent, for above 100,000*l.* Damages sustained
 through the Army's Attendance here on the City's
 Defaults and Delays; which Reparation we, if
 necessitated thereto, or called upon by the Coun-
 try, must, in their Behalf, demand from the City
 to the full; and now also the rather, in order to
 that, we must earnestly desire that the Proceed-
 ings against those Citizens, and others lately im-
 peached, may be hastened; and, out of their
 Fines or Confiscations, some Part of Repara-
 tion may be made to the Countries adjacent for
 the aforesaid Damages, which the Crimes of
 those Persons, and others in the City, did first
 bring upon them: And, indeed, without some-
 thing done against these Persons, for Examples to
 others, before the Army's withdrawing, we do
 not see, when it shall withdraw, with what Safety
 or Freedom the Parliament can sit longer at
Westminster; especially when we find the Com-
 mon-Council, thro' the Parliament's and Army's
 Lenity, do take the Boldness already, in the Face
 of both, to intercede for the Release and Acquit-
 tal, or rather Justification, of those impeached
 Persons, who indeed are but Fellow-Delinquents,
 we doubt, to most of that Council; as if that so
 active, immediate, and horrid a Force upon both
 the Houses of Parliament, and upon levying a
 War

‘ War in Abetment and Prosecution thereof, and
 ‘ of that concurrent treasonable Engagement, were
 ‘ already forgotten by them to have been any
 ‘ Crime; the Consideration whereof, and of the
 ‘ renewed Confidence of Mr. *Gawen*, and some
 ‘ other Members of Parliament, known to have
 ‘ been Partakers, if not Principals, in the same
 ‘ Things, (who yet presume, and are suffered, to
 ‘ appear again in the House, as if in those Things
 ‘ there had not been so much a Fault as to render
 ‘ them less worthy of continuing in that highest
 ‘ Trust) makes us begin to fear that while so much
 ‘ of the same Leaven (this Lenity and Moderation)
 ‘ is left behind, it may shortly spread till even the
 ‘ worst of the Eleven (notwithstanding their dou-
 ‘ bled Crimes) be again called for in; unless the
 ‘ House, by some exclusive Resolutions and Pro-
 ‘ ceedings, do timely prevent the same. We hope,
 ‘ therefore, the Parliament will weigh these Things;
 ‘ and speedily, e’er it be too late, consult at least
 ‘ their own Safety and the Kingdom’s, if not ours
 ‘ and the Army’s, their poor Servants, and some-
 ‘ thing concerned with them, especially in this Af-
 ‘ fair.

An. 25. Car. I.
 1647.
 December.

‘ Next, we again more importunately desire,
 ‘ that those other so near Concernments of the
 ‘ Soldiery, expressed in the General’s late Re-
 ‘ monstrance at the Rendezvous, may be speedily
 ‘ considered, and fully and effectually provided
 ‘ for; in order to which we shall here more par-
 ‘ ticularly propound as follows:

‘ *First*, As to Security for Arrears: Where-
 ‘ as in the late Votes, or Proposition intended for
 ‘ that Purpose, the two Thirds of the Lands or
 ‘ Compositions of certain Delinquents, assigned
 ‘ towards the said Security, is only of the Delin-
 ‘ quents within the three first Qualifications of the
 ‘ twelfth Proposition; we desire that they may be
 ‘ altered, so as to be two Thirds of the Lands
 ‘ or Compositions of all the Delinquents that have
 ‘ not yet compounded. And next we must desire,
 ‘ that Dean and Chapter Lands may be added,

‘ with

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

with a Proviso for reasonable Satisfaction or Maintenance to such Persons as, having a present lawful Interest in any of the Revenues thereunto belonging, have not forfeited the same by Delinquency. These Additions are desired, because the Security as yet voted is justly estimated not to be sufficient; and since all that is propounded is but for Security, if the Security prove to exceed the Arrears really due, the Surplusage will be free for any other public Use, so as the State will not be damnified by any of these Additions to the Security. Lastly, as to this Business, we desire that the Matter of Security, being resolved on as desired, may be passed into an Ordinance, and thereby be put into a speedy and effectual Way of raising Monies thereupon.

Secondly, For Matter of Indemnity: That, if no Indemnity more absolute can be provided to free the Soldiery from all Question for Things done in the War, but that they must, in Case of Question at Law, fly to some Committee or Commissioners for Relief, it may be provided for the Ease of all, that either under the Grand Committee of Indemnity, or otherwise by the immediate Appointment of Parliament, there may be Commissioners in each County, impowered to give Relief in such Cases as the Grand Committees now are; and those Commissioners to be such as ordinarily reside in the respective Counties, and mixt of such as have been Military Officers to the Parliament, together with such Inhabitants as have appeared and been faithful to the Parliament in the late War; for which Purpose we shall, if admitted, offer Names; and that there may be a severe Penalty laid upon Judges and other Officers of Justice, in Case they shall proceed against any, contrary to the Ordinance for Indemnity.

Thirdly, That a sufficient Provison be made in a certain and no dishonourable Way, for the Relief and Support of maimed Soldiers, and the Widows and Orphans of Men that died in the Service

Service, to continue during the Lives of the maimed Soldiers and Widows, and during the Minority of their Orphans; and that the same Commissioners, to be appointed in each County for Indemnity as aforesaid, or others, in like Manner mixt, may be impowered for this Purpose also. And in Case of the Death of any such Commissioners, or their Departure out of their respective Counties, those that survive and remain may chuse new ones to fill up the Number.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
December.

Fourthly, That for the just Freedom of Apprentices who have served the Parliament, there may be a sufficient Penalty laid upon the Masters refusing or delaying to give the same when their Times are out, accounting the Time that they served in the War as Part; and that the Apprentice may have his Action at Law for that Penalty.

Fifthly, For Freedom from impressing: That (as no Freeman of *England* may be impressed for any foreign Service, or other than for the immediate Defence of it, so) no Soldier that hath voluntarily served the Parliament in the late Wars for the Liberty of the Kingdom, may be liable to be pressed for any military Service at all; and that it may be promised that a Certificate of his said Service as a Volunteer, under the Hand and Seal of his Colonel, or other Field-Officer under whom he hath served, may be a sufficient Protection and Discharge to him from any such impressing.

Having thus discharged ourselves of these Matters, which are our most proper and immediate Concerns, the Business of the Soldiery, we must now redouble our Desires, that the two first (concerning putting them into constant Pay, while continued, and Provision for their Arrears) may be first considered, and immediately settled, before any other Business; and then that the rest of them may be also provided for as soon as may be.

Now,

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

‘ Now, tho’ the two first of these want not
 ‘ their equal Concernments to the Kingdom, in
 ‘ the present taking off the Oppression of free
 ‘ Quarter, preventing the Increase of Arrears, and
 ‘ providing or preparing for the more easy and satisf-
 ‘ factory disbanding of Supernumeraries, and there-
 ‘ by the better easing of the Kingdom’s Burdens
 ‘ by Degrees; yet we cannot, by any of our Ad-
 ‘ dresses of this Kind, so far forget those Things
 ‘ we have formerly declared, concerning more
 ‘ nearly the public Interest of the Kingdom, and
 ‘ ourselves as Members of it, but we must here-
 ‘ with renew our humble and earnest Desires that
 ‘ no Time may be lost by the Parliament for the
 ‘ just Consideration and Dispatch of those Things,
 ‘ both for the Redress of common Grievances,
 ‘ Relief of the Oppressed, and for the Liberty,
 ‘ Security, Quiet, and some safe Settlement of the
 ‘ Kingdom; and more especially that the Things
 ‘ of this Nature, expressed in the late Remonstrance
 ‘ at the Rendezvous, may, in such Settlement, be
 ‘ fully and effectually provided for, and that with
 ‘ all possible Expedition. And it is our Hearts De-
 ‘ sire and Hope that therein the Proceedings and
 ‘ Resolutions of the Parliament may be such, and
 ‘ so timeous, as that we need not any more to
 ‘ remind the Parliament in any of those Things;
 ‘ which (as far as with Truth, or any Safety to that
 ‘ most obliging Interest of the Public, and to those
 ‘ that have engaged for it, we may forbear) we
 ‘ are most unwilling, and take no Pleasure, to
 ‘ meddle in.’

*By Appointment of his Excellency Sir Thomas
 Fairfax and the Council of the Army,
 Windsor, Dec. 5,*
 1647. JO. RUSHWORTH, Sec^r.

The Lords took no Manner of Notice of this
 long Remonstrance, further than in reading of it,
 and referring it all to the Commons: That House
 appointed a Committee to consider of it, who,
 the next Day reported, it was their Opinion,
 That

That all the supernumerary Forces in the Kingdom should be disbanded.—But their further Proceedings in this Business we leave to the Sequel.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December.

Dec. 9. This Day came a Message from the King to the Parliament, which was read in the House of Lords, and ordered to be sent presently down to the Commons; and that Committees of both Houses do communicate this Message also to the Scots Commissioners.

To the SPEAKER of the House of PEERS *pro Tempore*, to be communicated to the Lords and Commons in the Parliament of England at Westminster, and the Commissioners of the Parliament of Scotland.

Carisbrook-Castle, Dec. 6, 1647.

CHARLES R.

HAD his Majesty thought it possible that his two Houses could be employed in Things of greater Concernment than the Peace of this miserable distracted Kingdom, he would have expected, with more Patience, their Leisure in acknowledging the Receipt of his Message of the 16th of November last. But since there is not in Nature any Consideration preceeding to that of Peace, his Majesty's constant Tenderness for the Welfare of his Subjects hath such a Prevalence with him, that he cannot forbear the vehement Prosecution of a Personal Treaty; which is only so much the more desired by his Majesty, as it is superior to all other Means of Peace. And truly when his Majesty considers the several Complaints he daily hears from all Parts of this Kingdom, that Trade is so decayed, all Commodities so dear, and Taxes so insupportable, that even natural Subsistence will suddenly fail; his Majesty, to perform the Trust reposed in him, must use his uttermost Endeavours for Peace, tho' he were to have no Share in the Benefit of it. And hath not his Majesty done his Part for it, by divesting himself

Another Message from the King, pressing for a personal Treaty.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

December.

self of so much Power and Authority, as by his last Message he hath promised to do, upon the concluding of the whole Peace? And hath he met with that Acknowledgment from his two Houses which this great Grace and Favour justly deserves? Surely the Blame of this great Retarding of Peace must fall somewhere, else than on his Majesty.

To conclude: If you will but consider in how little Time this necessary good Work will be done, if you, the two Houses, will wait on his Majesty with the same Resolutions for Peace as he will meet you, he no way doubts but that you will willingly agree to this his Majesty's earnest Desire of a Personal Treaty, and speedily desire his Presence amongst you; where all Things agreed on being digested into Acts, (till when it is most unreasonable for his Majesty or his two Houses to desire each of other the least Concession) this Kingdom may, at last, enjoy the Blessings of a long-wish'd-for Peace.

Dec. 10. The Commons sent up to the Lords to desire more Time still to bring up the Articles of Impeachment against the seven Lords, in regard of the great Affairs of the Kingdom. The Lords gave them till *Tuesday* the 14th Instant, and ordered all the Lords to be summoned to attend the House that Day.

Proposals from the Lords to the Commons, in pursuance of the last Representation from the Army.

Dec. 11. The Lords having desired a Conference with the other House concerning the Matter of the last Remonstrance from the Army, the Substance of what was to be offered to them was reported this Day, and agreed to:

‘ That the Petitions from the Counties of *Hertford, Middlesex, and Buckingham*, complaining of the Burden of free Quarter, may be communicated at this Conference; and the House of Commons be desired that some speedy and effectual Course may be taken, by providing Pay for the Army, that the Counties may be eased of this great Pressure.

‘ That

‘ That the Army may have Security for their Arrears, by such a Provision as may give them a reasonable Satisfaction. An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
December.

‘ That the Ordinance for Indemnity may be made full, that they may not be in Danger to be questioned for such Things as they have acted, as Soldiers, in the Service of the Parliament.

‘ That, upon the 16th Day of *November* last, the Lords did, at a Conference, recommend these Things to the House of Commons; but not hearing from them any Resolutions in these Particulars in all this Time, and finding the Delay thereof is very prejudicial to the Kingdom, their Lordships do again remind them of it; and, for their Parts, shall hold themselves discharged, as having in this done their Duty to the Kingdom.’

The same Day the following Petition was presented and read in the House of Lords.

*To the Right Honourable the LORDS and COMMONS
assembled in Parliament,*

*The HUMBLE PETITION of sundry Ministers with-
in the County of Rutland and Parts adjacent,*

Humbly sheweth,

‘ **T**HAT your Petitioners, being assured of the sincere Intentions and real Endeavours of the Honourable Houses to promote the Reformation of Religion, and the Extirpation of Popery, Heresy, and Schism, according to the Solemn League and Covenant, and to bring to condign Punishment all such as shall endeavour the contrary; as appears by an Ordinance of the Houses of the 26th of *April* 1645, and by a Declaration of the House of Commons for the apprehending of Offenders, in that Kind, of the 30th of *December* 1646; and the Expression of their deep Sense of God’s Dishonour in the spreading of such Blasphemies and Heresies, as tend to

*Petition from
several Ministers,
for suppressing
of Heretical
Doctrines.*

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December.

the Subversion of the Faith; with Profession to improve the utmost of their Endeavours, that nothing be done against the Truth, but for the Truth, as in the Ordinance for the Fast, the 4th of February 1646:

Upon Consideration thereof, we your Petitioners are emboldened, in Pursuance of the said Covenant, and in Discharge of our Duty to God and the State, to represent unto the Honourable Houses the perilous Condition wherein our Country now stands, by reason of divers erroneous and seducing Spirits, lately crept in amongst us, succeeding one another in their wicked Practices; namely, one *Wyke Lamb*, and especially one *Samuel Oates*, now settling himself amongst us, a Weaver by Trade, and a profest and known *Anabaptist*, who pretends to have his Authority from God, and not from Man; one that hath been arraigned for the Death of a Woman re-baptized by him, for which, and other his gross Misdemeanors, he stands bound to the good Behaviour; and, having been driven out of other Countries by the Hands of Justice, is bold to thrust himself into the County of *Rutland*, going up and down from Town to Town preaching and re-baptizing very many, and drawing a Concourse of People after him; appointing his public Meetings weekly in Barns and Stables, and such unseemly and unfit Places; sometimes also he breaks into Churches, thrusts himself into our Pulpits, and vents most false and heretical Doctrines of *Arminianism*, *Antinomianism*, *Anabaptism*, *Scinianism*, and divers other Tenets tending to Atheism, some Particulars whereof we exhibit in the Articles hereunto annexed; whereby he draws Disciples after him, not only to prey upon their Estates for his Belly's Sake, but poisons their Souls with his wicked Errors; filling this County with divers Sects and Schisms; withdrawing them from their own Ministers into mutinous Assemblies weekly, almost daily, and perverting whole Families; working Divisions even between
nearest

‘ nearest Relations ; which tends not only to an
 ‘ apparent Schism and Separation, but to a general
 ‘ Mutiny thro’ this County and Parts adjacent of
 ‘ *Lincoln, Northampton, and Leicester*, Shires bor-
 ‘ dering upon us ; he having of late dispersed and
 ‘ endeavoured to promote that seditious Paper cal-
 ‘ led, *The Agreement of the People*, which he hath,
 ‘ by himself or Agents, brought or sent to several
 ‘ Towns in the County : All which, if not timely
 ‘ prevented, will, in all likelihood, raise a great
 ‘ Combustion among us speedily ; the rather be-
 ‘ cause he is now labouring to settle himself and Fa-
 ‘ mily among us, to our further Disturbance.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 December.

‘ In due Consideration thereof, we humbly pray
 ‘ the Honourable Houses to cause the said *Samuel*
 ‘ *Oates* to be forthwith apprehended and committed
 ‘ to safe Custody according to the aforesaid Decla-
 ‘ ration, and speedily to suppress all such mutinous
 ‘ Meetings and Concourse of People occasioned by
 ‘ him ; and, if it seem good to your Wisdom, to
 ‘ ease yourselves of the Trouble, and us of the
 ‘ Charge and Burden, of bringing up any Witnesses
 ‘ to *London*, to grant out a Commission to some
 ‘ Justices and Gentlemen of the County, and Parts
 ‘ adjacent, such as are not tainted with these Er-
 ‘ rors, nor have countenanced such Practices, to
 ‘ examine Witnesses, and to return their Examina-
 ‘ tions to your Honours ; or what other Course your
 ‘ Wisdoms shall appoint in Justice, so as we may
 ‘ be freed from this Disturbance for the present,
 ‘ and secured from the like for the future,

And we shall pray, &c.

This Petition was signed by the Ministers of
 nineteen Parishes in *Rutlandshire*.

ARTICLES against SAMUEL OATES, annexed to,
 and exhibited with, the foregoing Petition to the
 Honourable Houses.

I. ‘ The said *Samuel Oates* being a Weaver by
 ‘ Trade, and having no lawful Calling to the Mi-
 ‘ nistry,

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

nistry, takes upon him to preach and administer the Sacraments; and, being a known and profest *Anabaptist*, hath re-baptized very many in the County of *Rutland*, still continuing to seduce more and more to his wicked Errors, and drawing the People into Factions and Separations; preaching in Barns and Stables and private Houses, venting many erroneous Doctrines, contrary to the Doctrine and Faith received and believed in our Church of *England*; as namely,

1. That Christ died for all, and every Man, perverting Scriptures to that End, as *Isaiah* lv. 1.

Genesis iv. 7.

2. That Election is out of foreseen Faith; and that every Man hath Power to believe.

3. That the Church of *England* is no true Church.

4. That the Ministers of the said Church are antichristian Priests, perjured Persons.

5. That the Baptizing of Infants is a Mark of the Beast, and a Cozening of Children.

6. That the Old Testament is nulled, and they that preach it or alledge it, are *Moses's* Disciples, not *Christ's*.

7. That there is no *Sabbath* to be observed; but all Days are alike.

8. That any Man may preach and administer the Sacraments as well as a Minister.

9. That the Soul of Man was created mortal, and dies or sleeps with the Body.

10. That the Settling of Religion by a Law is Idolatry and Superstition.

11. He makes Men believe that his Baptism hath cured Men of the Gout, and other Diseases.

12. He the said *Oates* is a Man evil and scandalous in his Life, and guilty of many Misdemeanors.

1. He hath been openly arraigned at the Assizes at *Chelmsford*, in *Essex*, for the Death of a Woman.

2. He

2. ' He stands bound to his good Behaviour for An. 23. Car. I.
' divers his Misdemeanors. 1647.

3. ' He carrieth Women about with him from
' Place to Place, being absent from their Families
' and Husbands two or three Weeks together, pur-
' loining from them to maintain himself. }
December.

4. ' He dips Women naked, and in the Night,
' fit for Works of Darknes.

5. ' He flights and vilifies the Authority of Par-
' liament.

6. ' He makes Mutinies in the Country, and
' gives out most dangerous Words by himself, or
' his Agents, of the cutting of their Throats that
' are opposite to him in their Opinions.

7. ' He hath lately been a great Disperser and
' Promoter of that seditious Paper, called, *The A-
' greement of the People*, bringing and sending it
' to and from divers Places in the Country.

8. ' He hath prevailed with People to thrust out
' some good Ministers, put into Livings by the
' Parliament, and to bring in others put out by
' Sequestration.

9. ' He most bitterly rails against Ministers for
' their Maintenance, and yet most basely goes
' begging about from one to one in their Meetings,
' with his Hat open under his Arm to receive their
' Alms; by which Means he robs many of his
' poor deluded Followers, for his own Belly.

10. ' He hath at several Times broken into
' Churches, with his mutinous Company following
' him, in Affront of the Ministers of those Places;
' and there vented his wicked Errors, in Opposi-
' tion unto them, even to some of their Faces, by
' way of Preaching.'

After reading these Articles, the Lords ordered
that the said *Samuel Oates* be sent for as a Delin-
quent to answer the foregoing Charge.

The same Day also, *December 11*, a Message
was brought from the House of Commons by Mr.
John Selden, desiring the Lords Concurrence to

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

four Bills to be presented to his Majesty for his Royal Assent; and in case the Lords do agree to the said Bills, then the House of Commons also desire their Lordships Concurrence to some Instructions as to the Manner how they shall be sent to the King.

The Titles of the BILLS were these:

1. *An Act concerning the raising, settling, and maintaining Forces by Sea and Land within the Kingdoms of England and Ireland, and Dominion of Wales, the Islands of Guernsey and Jersey, and the Town of Berwick upon Tweed.*

2. *An Act for justifying the Proceedings of Parliament in the late War; and for declaring all Oaths, Declarations, Proclamations, and other Proceedings against them, to be void.*

3. *An Act concerning Peers lately made, or hereafter to be made.*

4. *An Act concerning the Adjournment of both Houses of Parliament.*

INSTRUCTIONS for Basil Earl of Denbigh, Edward Lord Montague, Mr. Bulkley, Mr. Lisle, Mr. Kemp, and Mr. Robert Goodwin, to go with the four BILLS to the King.

Instructions to the Parliament's Commissioners appointed to attend the King in the Isle of Wight.

YOU, or any three of you, whereof one Member of the House of Peers, and two Members of the House of Commons to be present, are to repair to his Majesty with these Bills, and pursue these Instructions: To attend his Majesty for the Space of ten Days, and no longer, and to return back to the said Houses respectively with his Majesty's Answer.

The Lords read all the above-mentioned Bills twice this Day, with the Instructions to the Commissioners concerning the Manner of presenting them to the King. Three Days after, Dec. 14, they were all read a third Time, and passed without any Division.—But it is remarkable that the

Instructions only, not the Bills, were ordered to be communicated to the *Scots* Commissioners for their Consent: A Circumstance which proved a Bone of great Contention between the two Kingdoms afterwards.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
December.

These four Bills, and the Propositions annexed, were formed upon the Plan of those presented to his Majesty at *Newcastle* in *July* 1646; but there are some very great and essential Differences (both of Addition and Omission) from what was then agreed on by the Commissioners of both Kingdoms. These Alterations, which chiefly affected the Rights of the Crown, the Solemn League and Covenant, Presbyterian Church-Government, Indulgence to tender Consciences, and Matters of joint Interest, gave so great Offence to the Commissioners of *Scotland*, that they presented several very warm Remonstrances against them to both Houses of the *English* Parliament; to which the latter paying little or no Regard, the others publicly protested against the King's giving his Consent to these four Bills and Propositions. For this Reason it will be necessary to subjoin some of them at large; and the more so, as they are but imperfectly given in *Mr. Rushworth's Collections* and in *Roylston's Edition of the King's Works*: But to such Articles thereof as underwent no Alteration, a Reference to our former Volume will be sufficient.

The Four BILLS sent to the KING in the Isle of Wight to be passed: Together with the PROPOSITIONS sent unto him at the same Time, which, upon the passing of those Bills, were to be treated upon.^b

THE Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament have commanded us to present to your Majesty these four Bills, which have passed the two Houses of Parliament.

The four Bills
to be, by them,
presented to his
Majesty for the
Royal Assent,

C c 3

Sait

^b From the original Edition, printed by *Edward Husband,* Printer to the Honourable House of Commons, 1647.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December.

*Soit baillé aux Seigneurs,**A ceste Bille les Seigneurs sont assentuz.*

An ACT concerning the raising, settling, and maintaining Forces, by Sea and by Land, within the Kingdoms of England and Ireland, and Dominion of Wales, the Isles of Guernsey and Jersey, and the Town of Berwick upon Tweed.

‘ **B**E it enacted by the King’s Majesty, and by
 ‘ the Lords and Commons assembled in Par-
 ‘ liament, and by the Authority of the same, That
 ‘ the Lords and Commons in the Parliament of
 ‘ *England* now assembled, or hereafter to be assem-
 ‘ bled, shall, during the Space of twenty Years,
 ‘ from the first of *November*, 1647, arm, train,
 ‘ and discipline, or cause to be arm’d, train’d, and
 ‘ disciplin’d, all the Forces of the Kingdoms of
 ‘ *England* and *Ireland*, and the Dominion of *Wales*,
 ‘ the Isles of *Guernsey* and *Jersey*, and the Town
 ‘ of *Berwick upon Tweed*, already raised both for
 ‘ Sea and Land Service; and shall appoint all
 ‘ Commanders and Officers for the said Forces;
 ‘ and shall, from Time to Time, during the said
 ‘ Space of twenty Years, raise, levy, arm, train,
 ‘ and discipline, or cause to be rais’d, levied, arm’d,
 ‘ train’d and disciplined, any other Forces for
 ‘ Land and Sea Service, in the Kingdoms, Domi-
 ‘ nions, and Places aforesaid, as in their Judg-
 ‘ ments they shall, from Time to Time, during
 ‘ the said Space of twenty Years, think fit and ap-
 ‘ point: And shall, from Time to Time, appoint
 ‘ all Commanders and Officers for the said Forces,
 ‘ or remove them as they shall see Cause: And
 ‘ shall likewise nominate, appoint, place or dis-
 ‘ place, as they shall see Cause, all Commanders
 ‘ and Officers within the several Garrisons, Forts,
 ‘ and Places of Strength, as shall be within the
 ‘ Kingdoms of *England*, *Ireland*, and Dominion
 ‘ of *Wales*, the Isles of *Guernsey* and *Jersey*, and
 ‘ the Town of *Berwick upon Tweed*: And that
 ‘ neither

neither the King, his Heirs or Successors, nor any other but such as shall act by the Authority or Approbation of the said Lords and Commons, shall, during the said Space of twenty Years, exercise any of the Powers aforesaid.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
December.

And be it further enacted by the Authority aforesaid, That Monies be raised and levied, for the Maintenance and Use of the said Forces for Land Service, and of the Navy and Forces for Sea Service, in such Sort, and by such Ways and Means, as the said Lords and Commons shall, from Time to Time, during the said Space of twenty Years, think fit and appoint, and not otherwise: And that all the said Forces, both for Land and Sea Service, so raised or levied, or to be raised or levied; and also the Admiralty or Navy, shall, from Time to Time, during the said Space of twenty Years, be employed, managed, ordered, disposed or disbanded by the said Lords and Commons, in such Sort, and by such Ways and Means, as they shall think fit and appoint, and not otherwise.

And be it further enacted by the Authority aforesaid, That the said Lords and Commons, during the said Space of twenty Years, shall have Power in such Sort, and by such Ways and Means as they shall think fit and appoint, to suppress all Forces raised, or to be raised, without Authority and Consent of the said Lords and Commons, to the Disturbance of the Public Peace of the Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*, and Dominion of *Wales*, the Isles of *Guernsey* and *Jersey*, and the Town of *Berwick* upon *Tweed*, or any of them: And also to suppress any foreign Forces, who shall invade, or endeavour to invade, the Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*, Dominion of *Wales*, and the Isles of *Guernsey* and *Jersey*, and the Town of *Berwick* upon *Tweed*, or any of them: And likewise to conjoin such Forces of the Kingdom of *England*, with the Forces of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, as
the

An. 27. Car. 1.
1647.

December.

the said Lords and Commons shall, from Time to Time, during the said Space of twenty Years, judge fit and necessary to resist all foreign Invasions, and to suppress any Forces raised, or to be raised, against or within either of the said Kingdoms, to the Disturbance of the Public Peace of the said Kingdoms, or any of them, by any Authority under the Great Seal, or other Warrant whatsoever, without Consent of the said Lords and Commons of the Parliament of *England*, and the Parliament, or the Estates of the Parliament, of *Scotland*, respectively: And that no Forces of either Kingdoms shall go into, or continue in, the other Kingdom, without the Advice and Desire of the said Lords and Commons of the Parliament of *England*, and the Parliament of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, or such as shall be by them respectively appointed for that Purpose.

And be it enacted by the Authority aforesaid, That after the Expiration of the said twenty Years, neither the King, his Heirs or Successors, or any Person or Persons, by Colour or Pretence of any Commission, Power, Deputation, or Authority to be derived from the King, his Heirs or Successors, or any of them, shall raise, arm, train, discipline, employ, order, manage, disband, or dispose any of the Forces, by Sea and Land, of the Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*, the Dominion of *Wales*, the Isles of *Guernsey* and *Jersey*, and the Town of *Berwick upon Tweed*, or any of them; nor exercise any of the said Powers or Authorities before-mentioned and expressed to be, during the said Space of twenty Years, in the said Lords and Commons; nor do any Act or Thing concerning the Execution of the said Powers or Authorities, or any of them, without the Consent of the said Lords and Commons first had and obtained.

And be it further also enacted, That after the Expiration of the said twenty Years, in all Cases wherein the said Lords and Commons shall declare

declare the Safety of the Kingdom to be concern-
 ed, and shall thereupon pass any Bill or Bills for
 the raising, arming, training, disciplining, employ-
 ing, managing, ordering, or disposing of the
 Forces, by Sea or Land, of the Kingdoms of
England and Ireland, the Dominion of *Wales*,
Isles of Guernsey and Jersey, and the Town of
Berwick upon Tweed, or of any Part of the said
 Forces, or concerning the said Admiralty or Na-
 vy; or concerning the levying of Monies for the
 Raising, Maintenance, or Use of the said Forces
 for Land Service, or of the Navy and Forces
 for Sea Service, or any Part of them; and if
 that the Royal Assent to such Bill or Bills shall
 not be given in the House of Peers within such
 Time after the passing thereof by both Houses
 of Parliament, as the said Houses shall judge fit
 and convenient, that then such Bill or Bills so
 passed by the said Lords and Commons as afore-
 said, and to which the Royal Assent shall not be
 given, as is herein before express'd, shall never-
 theless, after Declaration of the said Lords and
 Commons made in that Behalf, have the Force
 and Strength of an Act or Acts of Parliament;
 and shall be as valid, to all Intents and Purposes,
 as if the Royal Assent had been given thereunto.
 Provided always, and be it further enacted by
 the Authority aforesaid, That nothing herein be-
 fore contained, shall extend to the taking away
 of the ordinary legal Power of Sheriffs, Justices of
 Peace, Mayors, Bailiffs, Coroners, Constables,
 Headboroughs, or other Officers of Justice, not
 being Military Officers, concerning the Admini-
 stration of Justice; so as neither the said Sheriffs,
 Justices of Peace, Mayors, Bailiffs, Coroners,
 Constables, Headboroughs, and other Officers, or
 any of them, do levy, conduct, employ, or com-
 mand any Forces whatsoever, by Colour or Pre-
 tence of any Commission of Array, or extraordi-
 nary Command from his Majesty, his Heirs, or
 Successors, without the Consent of the said Lords
 and Commons: And that if any Persons shall be
 gather-

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December.

gathered and assembled together in warlike Manner, or otherwise, to the Number of thirty Persons, and shall not forthwith separate and disperse themselves, being required thereto by the said Lords and Commons, or Command from them, or any by them especially authorised for that Purpose, then such Person and Persons, not so separating and dispersing themselves, shall be guilty, and incur the Pains of High Treason; being first declared guilty of such Offence by the said Lords and Commons, any Commission under the Great Seal, or other Warrant to the contrary notwithstanding; and he or they that shall offend herein, shall be incapable of any Pardon from his Majesty, his Heirs and Successors; and their Estates shall be disposed as the said Lords and Commons shall think fit, and not otherwise.

Provided also further, That the City of London shall have and enjoy all their Rights, Liberties, and Franchises, Customs, and Usages, in the raising and employing the Forces of that City for the Defence thereof, in as full and ample Manner, to all Intents and Purposes, as they have, or might have, used or enjoyed the same at any Time before the Sitting of this present Parliament.

Soit baillé aux Seigneurs,

A ceste Bille les Seigneurs sont assentuz :

An ACT for justifying the Proceedings of Parliament in the late War, and for declaring all Oaths, Declarations, Proclamations, and other Proceedings against it to be void.

Whereas the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament have been necessitated to make and prosecute a War in their just and lawful Defence; and thereupon Oaths, Declarations, and Proclamations have been made against them and their Ordinances and Proceedings, and against others for adhering unto them,

and

‘ and for executing Offices, Places, and Charges
 ‘ by Authority derived from them; and Judgments,
 ‘ Indictments, Outlawries, Attainders, and Inqui-
 ‘ sitions for the Causes aforesaid, have been had
 ‘ and made against some of the Members of the
 ‘ Houses of Parliament, and other his Majesty’s
 ‘ good Subjects, and Grants have been made of
 ‘ their Lands and Goods: Be it therefore declared,
 ‘ and hereby enacted, by the King’s Majesty, and
 ‘ by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parlia-
 ‘ ment, and by Authority of the same, That all
 ‘ Oaths, Declarations and Proclamations, hereto-
 ‘ fore had or made against both or either of the
 ‘ Houses of Parliament, or any the Members of
 ‘ either of them, for the Causes aforesaid, or against
 ‘ their Ordinances or Proceedings, or against any
 ‘ for adhering unto them, or for doing, or execu-
 ‘ ting any Office, Place, or Charge, by any Au-
 ‘ thority derived from the said Houses, or either
 ‘ of them; and all Judgments, Indictments, Out-
 ‘ lawries, Attainders, Inquisitions, and Grants
 ‘ thereupon made, and all other Proceedings for
 ‘ any the Causes aforesaid, had, made, done, or ex-
 ‘ ecuted, or to be had, made, done, or executed,
 ‘ whether the same be done by the King, or any
 ‘ Judges, Justices, Sheriffs, Ministers, or any o-
 ‘ thers, are void and of no Effect, and are contrary
 ‘ to and against the Laws of this Realm.
 ‘ And be it further enacted and hereby declared
 ‘ by the Authority aforesaid, That all Judges, Ju-
 ‘ stices of the Peace, Mayors, Sheriffs, Constables,
 ‘ and other Officers and Ministers shall take No-
 ‘ tice hereof; and are hereby prohibited and dis-
 ‘ charged, in all Time to come, from awarding any
 ‘ Writ, Process, or Summons, and from pronoun-
 ‘ cing or executing any Judgment, Sentence, or
 ‘ Decree, or any way proceeding against, or mo-
 ‘ lesting, any of the said Members of the two
 ‘ Houses of Parliament, or against any of the Sub-
 ‘ jects of this Kingdom, for any the Causes afore-
 ‘ said.

An. 27. Car. I.
 1647.
 December.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December.

*Soit baillé aux Seigneurs,**A ceste Bille les Seigneurs sont assentuz.**An ACT concerning Peers lately made, and hereafter to be made.*

BE it enacted by the King's Majesty, and by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, That all Honour and Title of Peerage conferred on any since the 20th Day of May, 1642, (being the Day that Edward Lord Littleton, then Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal, deserted the Parliament, and that the said Great Seal was surreptitiously conveyed away from the Parliament) be, and is hereby made and declared null and void.

Be it further enacted, and it is hereby enacted by the Authority aforesaid, That no Person that shall hereafter be made a Peer, or his Heirs, shall sit or vote in the Parliament of *England*, without Consent of both Houses of Parliament.

*Soit baillé aux Seigneurs,**A ceste Bille les Seigneurs sont assentuz.**An ACT concerning the Adjournments of both Houses of Parliament.*

BE it declared and enacted by the King's Majesty, and by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, and by the Authority of the same, That when, and as often as, the Lords and Commons assembled in this present Parliament shall judge it necessary to adjourn both Houses of this present Parliament, to any other Place of the Kingdom of *England* than where they now sit, or from any Place adjourn the same again to the Place where they now sit, or to any other Place within the Kingdom of *England*, then such their Adjournment and Adjournments to such Places, and for such Time as they shall appoint, shall at all Times, and from Time to Time, be valid and good, any Act, Statute, or Usage to the contrary notwithstanding.

Pro-

‘ Provided always, and be it enacted by the Authority aforeſaid, That no Adjournment or Adjournments to be had or made, by Reaſon or Courſe of this Act, ſhall be deemed, adjudged, or taken, to make, end, or determine any Seſſion of this preſent Parliament.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December.

‘ And they have alſo commanded us to preſent to your Maſteſty theſe enſuing Propoſitions :

I. ‘ **T**HAT an Act or Acts of Parliament be paſſed, That all Grants, Commiſſions, Preſentations, &c. [*This Propoſition is the ſame with the nineteenth Propoſition preſented to the King at Newcaſtle. See Volume Fifteenth, p. 48.*]

And the other
Propoſitions of
Peace,

II. ‘ That an Act or Acts of Parliament be paſſed, That the King do give his Royal Aſſent to ſuch Act or Acts, for raiſing Monies, &c. [*This is the ſame with the ſixth Clause of the twelfth Propoſition, at Newcaſtle, p. 32.*]

III. ‘ That the King do give his Conſent, That the Members of both Houſes of Parliament, or others who have adhered to the Parliament, and have been put out, by the King, of any Place or Office, Penſion or Benefit, be reſtored thereunto.

IV. ‘ That an Act or Acts of Parliament be paſſed, to declare and make void the Ceſſation of Ireland, &c. [*The ſame as the ſeventeenth Propoſition, p. 46.*]

V. ‘ That an Act or Acts of Parliament be paſſed for Indemnity, agreeable to the two Ordinances of both Houſes already paſſed for that Purpoſe.

VI. ‘ That his Maſteſty be deſired to give his Aſſent to an Act or Acts of Parliament, for the taking away the Court of Wards and Liveries, and of all Wardſhips, Liveries, *Primer Seifins*, and *Ouſter les Mains*; and of all other Charges incident unto, or ariſing for, or by reaſon of any Wardſhips, Liveries, *Primer Seifins*, or *Ouſter les Mains*; and of all Tenures by Homage, *Fines*, *Licenſes*, *Seizures*, and *Pardons* for Alienation; and of all other Charges incident or be-
* longing

An. 25. Car. 1.
1647.

December.

‘longing thereunto, or for, or by reason thereof, from the 24th of *February*, 1645: And that all Tenures, by Knight’s Service, Grand Sergeanty, Petty Sergeanty, or Soccage in Capite, either of his Majesty, or of any other Person or Persons, may be, from the Time aforesaid, turned into free and common Soccage; and that the Sum of 50,000 *l. per Annum* be granted to the King by way of Recompence.

VII. ‘That an Act or Acts of Parliament shall be passed, *declaring the King’s Approbation of the making the Treaties between the Kingdoms of England and Scotland, &c.* [*The same as the fifteenth, p. 37, except that there it is styled, An Act for Confirmation of the Treaties, &c. and these Words are omitted in the new Proposition, With all other Ordinances and Proceedings passed between the two Kingdoms, and whereunto they are obliged by the aforesaid Treaties. There are also some Alterations in the Names of the Commissioners.*]

VIII. ‘That the Arrears of Pay due to the Army, and others the Soldiery of this Kingdom, who have faithfully served the Parliament in this War, shall be secured and paid unto them out of the remaining Part of the Lands and Revenues of Archbishops and Bishops, belonging to their Archbishopricks or Bishopricks, after such Engagements satisfied as are already charged thereupon by an Ordinance of both Houses of Parliament; and out of two thirds in three, to be divided of all the Forfeitures of Lands; and all the Fines of the Persons mentioned, or comprehended in, the three first Qualifications of the Proposition concerning Delinquents; and also out of all Forest-Lands, within the Kingdom of *England* and Dominion of *Wales*, Provision being made upon the Disafforestation thereof, for the Relief of the Inhabitants within the same, and all other the Subjects of this Realm, who have Right of Common, or any other Right in the said Forests: And that the King do give his Consent to such Act or Acts as shall be presented to him

him by both Houses of Parliament, for the Sale An. 23. Car. I.
or disposing of the said Lands and Fines for the 1647.
Purpose aforesaid. December.

IX. That an Act or Acts of Parliament be
passed, for the utter abolishing and taking away
of all Archbishops, Bishops, &c. [*The same as
the third Proposition, p. 30.*]

X. That the several Ordinances, the one in-
titled, *An Ordinance of Parliament, for abolishing
of Archbishops and Bishops within the Kingdom of
England and Dominion of Wales; and for set-
tling of their Lands and Possessions upon Trustees,
for the Use of the Commonwealth*: The other in-
titled, *An Ordinance of the Lords and Commons
assembled in Parliament, for appointing the Sale
of Bishops Lands, for the Use of the Commonwealth,*
be confirmed by Act of Parliament.

XI. That the King do give his Consent to
such Act or Acts of Parliament, as shall be ten-
dered to him by both Houses of Parliament, for
the Sale of the Lands of Deans and Sub-Deans,
Deans and Chapters, Arch-Deacons, Canons,
and Prebendaries; and all Chantors, Chancellors,
Treasurers, Sub-Treasurers, Succentors, and Sa-
crists; and all Vicars Choral and Choristers, Old
Vicars and New Vicars of any Cathedral or Col-
legiate Church, and for the Disposal thereof as
both Houses shall think fit.

XII. That the Persons expressed and contain-
ed in the three first *Qualifications* following, be
proceeded with, and their Estates disposed of, as
both Houses of Parliament shall think fit or ap-
point; and that their Persons shall not be capable
of Pardon by his Majesty, without Consent of
both Houses of Parliament: The Houses hereby
declaring, That they will not proceed as to the
taking away of Life, of any in the first *Qualifi-
cation*, to above the Number of seven Persons.

First QUALIFICATION.

Rupert and Maurice, Counts Palatine of the
Rhine, &c. [*Here follow the Names of all the
English*

416 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 23. Car. 1. English Lords and Gentlemen, mentioned in our Fifteenth Volume, p. 38. the Scots Delinquents being omitted.]
 1647.
 December.

The Second, Third, and Fourth QUALIFICATIONS, and the three Branches of the Fourth, the same as at p. 39, to 42.

The Fifth, Sixth, and Seventh QUALIFICATIONS, the same as at p. 42, 43.

The Eighth QUALIFICATION, and the three Branches thereof, are the same as the Ninth at Newcastle, p. 44. the Eighth of those being now dropp'd.

The Ninth QUALIFICATION, the same as the Tenth, p. 44.

The Tenth QUALIFICATION, the same as the Eleventh, (p. 45.) except the Omission of what regards Scotland, and the following Addition:

“ Provided that all and every the Delinquents, which by, or according to, the several and respective Ordinances or Orders made by both or either the Houses of Parliament, on or before the 24th of April 1647, are to be admitted to make their Fines and Compositions under the Rate and Proportions of the Qualifications aforesaid, shall, according to the said Ordinances and Orders respectively, be thereunto admitted: And further also, that no Person or Persons whatsoever, (except such Papists as having been in Arms, or voluntarily assisted against the Parliament, having, by concealing their Quality, procured their Admission to Composition) which have already compounded, or shall hereafter compound, and be thereunto admitted by both Houses of Parliament, at any of the Rates and Proportions aforesaid, or under respectively, shall be put to pay any other Fine, than that they have, or shall respectively, so compound for; except for such Estates, or such Part of their Estates, and
 “ for

for such Values thereof respectively, as have been, or shall be, concealed or omitted, in the Particulars whereupon they compound; and that all and every of them shall have thereupon their Pardons in such Manner and Form as is agreed by both Houses of Parliament.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
December.

XIII. That an Act or Acts be passed, where- by the Debts of the Kingdom, and the Persons of Delinquents, and the Value of their Estates may be known, &c. [*This is the second Paragraph of the second Branch of the eleventh Qualification, at p. 45.*]

XIV. That the King be desired to give his Consent to such Act or Acts of Parliament, as shall be presented unto him for the settling of the Presbyterian Government and Directory, in Eng- land and Ireland, according to such Ordinances as have already, since the sitting of this Parlia- ment, pass both Houses, and are herewithall sent; which Act or Acts are to stand in Force to the End of the next Session of Parliament, after the End of this present Session.

That no Persons whatsoever shall be liable to any Question or Penalty for Non-Conformity to the Form of Government and Divine Service ap- pointed in the said Ordinances; and that all such Persons as shall not conform to the said Form of Government and Divine Service, shall have Liberty to meet for the Service and Wor- ship of God, and for the Exercise of religious Duties and Ordinances, in any fit and convenient Places, so as nothing be done by them to the Disturbance of the Peace of the Kingdom; that all Tythes or other Maintenance appertaining to any Church or Chapel, which do now belong to the Ministers of such Churches or Chapels, shall be applied to the Use and Benefit of such Ministers as do conform to the Government set- tled in the said Ordinances, and to none other, unless it be by the Consent of the present Incum- bent.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

‘ That nothing in this Provision shall extend to
 ‘ any Toleration of the Popish Religion, nor to
 ‘ exempt any Popish Recusants from any Penalties
 ‘ imposed upon them for the Exercise of the same.

‘ That this Indulgence shall not extend to tole-
 ‘ rate the Printing, Publishing, or Preaching of any
 ‘ Thing contrary to the Principles of the Christian
 ‘ Religion, as they are contained in the first, se-
 ‘ cond, third, fourth, fifth, sixth, seventh, ninth,
 ‘ tenth, eleventh, twelfth, thirteenth, fourteenth,
 ‘ and fifteenth Articles of the Church of *England*,
 ‘ according to the true Sense and Meaning of them,
 ‘ and as they have been cleared and vindicated by
 ‘ the Assembly of Divines, now sitting at *West-*
 ‘ *minster*; nor of any Thing contrary to those Points
 ‘ of Faith, for the Ignorance whereof Men are to
 ‘ be kept from the Sacrament of the Lord’s Supper,
 ‘ as they are contained in the Rules and Directions,
 ‘ for that Purpose, passed both Houses the 20th of
 ‘ *October*, 1645.

‘ That it be also provided, that this Indulgence
 ‘ shall not extend to exempt any Person or Per-
 ‘ sons from any Penalty by Law imposed, or to
 ‘ be imposed, upon them, for absenting themselves,
 ‘ upon the Lord’s Day, from hearing the Word of
 ‘ God, unless they can shew reasonable Cause of
 ‘ their Absence, or that they were present elsewhere
 ‘ to hear the Word of God preached or expounded
 ‘ unto them, so as the said Preaching or Expound-
 ‘ ing be not by any Minister sequestred, and not
 ‘ restored.

‘ That this Indulgence shall not extend to to-
 ‘ lerate the Use of the Book of Common-Prayer in
 ‘ any Place whatsoever.

‘ That Liberty shall be given to all Ministers of
 ‘ the Gospel, though they cannot conform to the
 ‘ present Government in all Things, being not un-
 ‘ der Sequestration, nor sequestrable, to preach any
 ‘ Lecture or Lectures, in any Church or Chapel,
 ‘ where they shall be desired by the Inhabitants
 ‘ thereof; provided that it be not at such Hours as
 ‘ the

‘ the Minister of the said Parish doth ordinarily
 ‘ preach himself, and shall receive such Means and
 ‘ Maintenance as doth, or shall, thereunto apper-
 ‘ tain.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 December.

XV. ‘ That an Act or Acts of Parliament be
 ‘ passed, that the Deputy or Chief Governor, or
 ‘ other Governors of Ireland, &c. [*This Proposi-
 tion is the same as the third Clause of the seventeenth
 presented at Newcastle, p. 46.*]

*The sixteenth, seventeenth, eighteenth, and nine-
 teenth Articles, for the more effectual disabling of
 Jesuits and Papists from disturbing the State, and
 eluding the Laws; for the Education of the Children
 of Papists in the Protestant Religion, &c. are the
 same as the seventh, eighth, ninth, and tenth Pro-
 positions, at p. 31. but are now extended to Ireland.*

*The twentieth, twenty-first, twenty-second, and
 twenty-third Articles relate to the Observation of the
 Sabbath, Innovations in Worship, Preaching, plu-
 ralities, Non-Residence; and are the same as the
 first four Clauses of the twelfth Proposition, p. 32.
 After which follows this Instruction to the Commis-
 sioners of both Houses.*

‘ They have also commanded us to desire, That
 ‘ your Majesty will give your Royal Assent to these
 ‘ Bills, by your Letters Patent under the Great
 ‘ Seal of England, and signed by your Hand, and
 ‘ declared and notified to the Lords and Commons
 ‘ assembled together in the House of Peers, ac-
 ‘ cording to the Law declared in that Behalf; it
 ‘ appearing unto them, upon mature Deliberation,
 ‘ that it stands not with the Safety and Security
 ‘ of the Kingdom and Parliament, to have your
 ‘ Majesty’s Assent at this Time given otherwise:
 ‘ They desire, therefore, that your Majesty be plea-
 ‘ sed to grant your Warrant for the Draught of a
 ‘ Bill for such your Letters Patent, to be presented
 ‘ to your Majesty; and then a Warrant to Edward
 ‘ Earl of Manchester, and William Lenthall, Esq;
 ‘ Speaker of the House of Commons, who have
 ‘ now the Custody of the Great Seal of England,
 ‘ to put the same to such your Majesty’s Letters

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December.

Patent signed as aforesaid, thereby authorizing *Algernon Earl of Northumberland, Henry Earl of Kent, John Earl of Rutland, Philip Earl of Pembroke, William Earl of Salisbury, Robert Earl of Warwick, and Edmund Earl of Mulgrave,* or any three of them, to give your Majesty's Royal Assent unto the said Bills, according to the Law in that Behalf declared; and for the other Particulars contained in the afore-mentioned Propositions, the two Houses of Parliament will, after such your Majesty's Assent given to the said Bills, send their Committee of both Houses to treat with your Majesty in the Isle of *Wight* thereupon.

Along with the foregoing Propositions the Parliament sent to the King a Copy of Fourteen of the Thirty-nine Articles of the Church of *England* referred to therein; which, as they differ in many Particulars from those now received, we think it a sufficient Reason for printing them at large, with the Scripture Proofs added by the Assembly of Divines. To these were also annexed certain Rules and Directions concerning Suspension from the Lord's Supper.

ARTICLE I.

Of Faith in the Holy Trinity.

Also some Articles of Faith,

THERE is but one ^a living and true God ^b, everlasting ^c, without Body, Parts ^d, or Passions; of infinite Power ^e, Wisdom ^f, and Goodness ^g; the Maker and Preserver of all Things both visible and invisible ^h. And in the Unity of this Godhead there be three Persons, of one Substance, Power, and Eternity; the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost ⁱ.

AR-

^a *Isai.* 46. 9. *Cor.* 8. 4. 6. ^b *Jer.* 10. 10. ^c *1 Thes.* 1. 9. ^d *Psalm.* 90. 2. *Rom.* 16. 26. ^e *Deut.* 4. 35. 36. *John.* 4. 24. with *Luke* 24. 39. ^f *Alti.* 14. 15. *James.* 1. 17. ^g *Jer.* 33. 27. *Mark.* 10. 27. ^h *Psalm.* 147. 5. *Rom.* 11. 33. ⁱ *Psalm.* 110. 68. with *Matth.* 19. 17. ^j *Neb.* 9. 6. *Col.* 1. 16. 17. ^k *Matth.* 2. 16. 17. *Matth.* 28. 19. ^l *John.* 4. 7. ^m *Cor.* 13. 14.

Of ENGLAND. 421

ARTICLE II.

Of the Word, or Son of God; which was made An. 23. Car. I.
very Man. 1647.

December.

The Son, which is the Word of the Father, begotten from everlasting of the Father¹, the very^m and eternal Godⁿ, of one Substance with the Father^o, took Man's Nature in the Womb of the blessed Virgin, of her Substance^p: So that two whole and perfect Natures, that is to say, the Godhead and the Manhood, were joined together in one Person, never to be divided, whereof is one Christ, very God and very Man^q, who, for our Sakes, truly suffered most grievous Torments in his Soul from God^r, was crucified, dead, and buried^s, to reconcile his Father to us^t, and to be a Sacrifice not only for original Guilt, but also for all actual Sins of Men^u.

ARTICLE III.

As Christ died for us and was buried, so it is to be believed that he continued in the State of the Dead, and under the Power and Dominion of Death^x, from the Time of his Death and Burial untill his Resurrection^y; which hath been otherwise expressed thus, He went down into Hell.

ARTICLE IV.

Of the Resurrection of Christ.

Christ did truly rise again from Death^z, and took again his Body, with Flesh, Bones, and all Things appertaining to the Perfection of Man's Nature^a, wherewith he ascended into Heaven, and there sitteth

D d 3 teth

¹ Prov. 8. 22 to 31. John, 1. 1, 2, 14. ^m 1 John, 5. 20. Rom. 9. 5. ⁿ John, 17. 5. Heb. 1. 8. with Psal. 45. 6. ^o John, 10. 30. Heb. 1. 3. ^p John, 1. 14. Isai. 7. 14. Luke, 1. 35. Gal. 4. 4. ^q Isai. 7. 14. with Matth. 1. 23. Rom. 1. 3, 4. Heb. 13. 8. ^r Isai. 53. 10, 11. Mark, 14. 33, 34. ^s 1 Pet. 2. 24. Phil. 2. 8. 1 Cor. 15. 3, 4. ^t Ezek. 16. 63. Rom. 3. 25. 2 Cor. 5. 19. ^u Isai. 53. 10. Eph. 5. 2. 1 John, 1. 7. Heb. 9. 26. ^x Psal. 16. 10. with Acts, 2. 24, 25, 26, 27, 31. ^y Rom. 6. 9. Matth. 12. 40. ^z 1 Cor. 15. 4. Rom. 8. 34. Psal. 16. 10. with Acts, 2. 31. Luke, 24. 34. ^a Luke, 24. 39. with John, 20. 25, 27.

An. 23. Car. 1. 1647. *teth^b, untill he return to judge^c all Men^d at the general Resurrection of the Body at the last Day^e.*

December.

ARTICLE V.

Of the Holy Ghost.

The Holy Ghost is very and eternal God, of one Substance^f, Majesty^g, and Glory with the Father and the Son^h, proceeding from the Father and the Sonⁱ.

ARTICLE VI.

Of the Sufficiency of the Holy Scriptures for Salvation.

Holy Scripture^k containeth all Things necessary to Salvation^l; so that whatsoever is not read therein, nor may be proved thereby, is not to be believed as an Article of Faith, or necessary to Salvation^m.

By the Name of Holy Scripture we understand all the Canonical Books of the Old and New Testament, which follow: Of the Old Testament, Genesis, Exodus, &c. Of the New Testament, The Gospel according to Matthew, &c. All which Books, as they are commonly received, we do receive, and acknowledge them to be given by the Inspiration of God, and in that Regard to be of most certain Credit and highest Authority.

AR-

^b Psal. 68. 18. with Eph. 4. 8. Psal. 110. 1. with Acts. 2. 34. 35. Mar. 16. 19. Rom. 8. 34. ^c Acts. 3. 21. Psal. 110. 1. with 1 Cor. 15. 25, 26. Acts. 1. 11. ^d 2 Cor. 5. 10. Acts. 17. 31. ^e Exod. 3. 6. with Luke. 20. 37, 38. Acts. 24. 14, 15. 1 Cor. 15. 12, to the End. John 5. 28, 29. ^f 2 Sam. 23. 2, 3. ^g *Ipsa*. 4. 5, 8. with Acts. 28. 25. Acts. 5. 3, 4. 1 Cor. 3. 16. 1 Cor. 6. 19. ^h Job. 26. 13. Job. 33. 4. 1 Cor. 12th chap. ⁱ *Matth.* 28. 19. 2 Cor. 13. 14. ^j 1 Cor. 12. 11. Eph. 1. 17. and 1 Cor. 2. 8. with 1 Pet. 4. 14. 1 John. 15. 26. *Matth.* 10. 20. and 1 Cor. 2. 11, 12, with Gal. 4. 6. and Rom. 8. 9. and Phil. 1. 9. John. 16. 14. *Ipsa*. 11. 2. *Ipsa*. 61. 1. Gen. 1. 2. 2 Chron. 15. 1. ^k Rom. 1. 2. 2 Tim. 3. 15. 2 Pet. 1. 20, 21. ^l Psal. 19. 7. 2 Tim. 3. 16, 17. *Jam.* 1. 21, 25. Acts. 20. 32. ^m Prov. 30. 5, 6. *Ipsa*. 2. 20. Acts. 26. 22, with ver. 20, 27. Gal. 1. 8, 9. *Ipsa*. 5. 39.

ARTICLE VII.

Of the Old Testament.

The Old Testament is not contrary to the New, in the Doctrine contained in them^a; for both in the Old and New Testament, everlasting Life is offered to Mankind by Christ^o, who is the only Mediator between God and Man^v, being both God and Man^a; wherefore they are not to be heard, which feign that the old Fathers did look only for temporary Promises¹.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
December.

Although the Law given from God by Moses, as touching Ceremonies and Rites, doth not bind Christians^a, nor the Civil Precepts given by Moses, such as were peculiarly fitted to the Commonwealth of the Jews, are of Necessity to be received in any Commonwealth^t; yet, notwithstanding, no Christian Man whatsoever is free from the Obedience of the Commandments which are called Moral^a. By the Moral Law we understand all the ten Commandments taken in their full Extent.

ARTICLE IX.

Of Original, or Birth, Sin.

Original Sin^x standeth not in the following of Adam, as the Pelagians do vainly talk^y; but, together with his first Sin imputed^z, it is the Fault and Corruption of the Nature of every Man that naturally is propagated from Adam; whereby Man is wholly deprived of original Righteousness^z, and is

of
^a Acts, 26. 22, 23. ² Pet. 3. 2. Luke, 24. 44. Rom. 3. 31. Gal. 3. 21, 23, 24. ^o Gen. 3. 15. Gen. 22. 18. with Gal. 3. 8, 14. 1 Cor. 10. 2, 3, 4. Luke, 1. 69, 70. Acts, 3. 24. Isai. 53d chap. ^p Dan. 9. 17. Rom. 8. 34. 1 John, 2. 1. Heb. 7. 25. 1 Tim. 2. 5. John, 14. 6. ^q Gal. 4. 4, 5. Acts, 20. 28. Phil. 2. 7, 8. ^r Acts, 26. 6, 7. Rom. 4. 11. Gal. 3. 9. Heb. 11. 10, 16, 35. ^s Gal. 4. 9, 10. Col. 2. 14, 16, 17. Heb. 9. 9, 10. ^t Acts, 25. 9, 10, 25. with Deut. 17. 8 to 13. Rom. 13. 1, 5. Tit. 3. 1. 1 Pet. 2. 13, 14. ^u Matth. 5. 17 to the End. Rom. 13. 8, 9, 10. Eph. 6. 1, 2, 3. Jam. 2. 8, 9, 10, 11, 12. Rom. 7. 25. Rom. 3. 31. Matth. 7. 12. ^x Psal. 51. 5. John, 3. 5, 6. ^y Job, 14. 4. Job, 15. 14. Rom. 6. 6. John, 3. 3, 5, 7. ^z Rom. 5. 12 to 19. Gen. 2. 17. with 1 Cor. 15. 22. ^a Col. 2. 13. Rom. 7. 18. Eccles. 7. 29.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

of his own Nature inclined only to Evil^b: So that the Lust of the Flesh, called, in Greek, *φύσιν σαρκός*, which some do expound the Wisdom, some the Sensuality, some the Affection, some the Desire of the Flesh, is not subject to the Law of God^c, and therefore in every Person born into this World it deserveth God's Wrath and Damnation^d. And this Infection of Nature doth remain, yea in them that are regenerate^e, whereby the Flesh lusteth always contrary to the Spirit^f. And although there is no Condemnation for them that are regenerate and do believe^g; yet the Apostle doth confess that Concupiscence and Lust is truly and properly Sin^h.

ARTICLE X.

Of Free-Will.

The Condition of Man, after the Fall of Adam, is such, that he cannot turn or prepare himself, by his own natural Strength and good Works, to Faith and Calling upon Godⁱ; wherefore we have no Power to do good Works pleasing and acceptable to God^j, without the Grace of God by Christ, both preventing us, that we may have a good Will, and working so effectually in us, as that it determineth our Will to that which is good^k, and also working with us when we have that Will unto Good^l.

ARTICLE XI.

Of the Justification of Man before God.

We are justified, that is, we are accounted righteous before God, and have Remission of Sins^m, not for, nor by, our own Works or Deservingsⁿ, but freely by his Grace^o, only for our Lord and Saviour Jesus

^b Gen. 6. 5. Gen. 8. 21. Jer. 17. 9. Rom. 7. 8. Jam. 1. 14.
^c Rom. 8. 7. 1 Cor. 2. 14. Gal. 3. 21. ^d Ephes. 2. 3. Rom. 8.
 6, 7. ^e Prov. 20. 9. Rom. 7. 17, 20, 23, 25. ^f Gal. 5. 17.
^g Rom. 8. 1, 13. John. 1. 18. ^h Rom. 7. 17, 20. ⁱ Eph. 2.
 1, 5. 1 Cor. 2. 14. Eph. 2. 8, 9, 10. John. 6. 44, 65. ^j Rom.
 8. 8. Heb. 11. 6. ^k Ezek. 11. 19, 20. Ezek. 36. 26, 27. Jer.
 31. 32, 33. with Heb. 8. 10, 11. Psal. 2. 12, 13. John. 6. 45.
^l Eph. 1. 19, 20. 1 Cor. 4. 7. ^m Heb. 13. 21. Phil. 1. 6. Heb.
 12. 2. 1 Pet. 5. 10. 1 Thess. 5. 23, 24. 1 Kings. 8. 57, 58.
ⁿ Rom. 4. 5, 6, 7. Psal. 32. 2, 3. ^o Rom. 3. 20. Gal. 2. 16.
 Gal. 3. 10, 11. Phil. 3. 9. 1 Rom. 3. 24. Tit. 3. 7.

Jesus Christ's Sake^a, his whole Obedience and Satisfaction being by God imputed unto us^r, and Christ with his Righteousness, being apprehended and rested on by Faith only^s. The Doctrine of Justification, by Faith only, is an wholesome Doctrine and very full of Comfort^t; notwithstanding, God doth not forgive them that are impenitent, and go on still in their Trespases^u.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

December.

ARTICLE XII.

Of Good Works.

Good Works, which are the Fruits of Faith^z, and follow after Justification^y, cannot put away our Sins^z, and endure the Severity of God's Judgment^z; yet are they, notwithstanding their Imperfections^b, in the Sight of God pleasing and acceptable unto him in and for Christ^c, and do spring out necessarily of a true and lively Faith^d, insomuch that by them a lively Faith may be as evidently known, as a Tree is discerned by the Fruits^e.

ARTICLE XIII.

Of Works before Justification.

Works done before Justification by Christ, and Regeneration by his Spirit, are not pleasing unto God^f; forasmuch as they spring not of Faith in Jesus Christ^z, neither do they make Men meet to receive Grace, or, as the School Authors say, deserve Grace of Congruity^h; yea, rather, for that they are not done as God hath willed and commanded them to be done, they are sinfulⁱ.

AR-

^a Rom. 3. 24, 25. Rom. 5. 1. 2 Cor. 5. 18, 19. ^r Rom. 5. 9, 17, 18, 19. Rom. 3. 25, 26. Rom. 4. 6, 24. 2 Cor. 5. 21. ^s Rom. 3. 22, 25, 26, 28. Gal. 2. 16. *Ijai.* 28. 16. with Rom. 9. 33. and 1 Pet. 2. 6. *Phil.* 3. 9. ^t 2 Tim. 1. 13. Rom. 5. 1, 2, 8, 11. Rom. 15. 13. 1 Pet. 1. 8. ^u *Psal.* 68. 20, 21. *Exod.* 34. 6, 7. Luke, 13. 3, 5. ^z Gal. 5. 6. *Jam.* 2. 17, 18, 22. ^y Tit. 2. 14. Tit. 3. 7, 8. *Eph.* 2. 8, 9, 10. ^z Rom. 3. 20, 21. Rom. 4. 4 to 9. *Dan.* 9. 18, 19. ^b *Neb.* 13. 22. *Psal.* 143. 2. *Job*, 9. 14, 15, 19, 20. *Exod.* 28. 38. *Rev.* 8. 3, 4. ^c 1 Pet. 2. 5. *Heb.* 13. 16, 20, 21. *Col.* 1. 10. *Phil.* 4. 18. ^d *Jam.* 2. 26. 1 *John*, 1. 4. ^e *Jam.* 2. 18, 22. *John*, 15. 4, 5. 1 *John*, 2. 3, 5. *Mat.* 12. 33. ^f Tit. 1. 15, 16. *Matth.* 7. 18. Rom. 8. 8. *Prov.* 15. 8, 26. *Prov.* 21. 27. Rom. 3. 12. ^g *Heb.* 11. 5, 6. Gal. 5. 6. ^h 2 Tim. 1. 9. *John*, 1. 13. ⁱ Rom. 8. 7, 8. *Hagg.* 2. 14. *Ijai.* 58. 1 to 5. *Ijai.* 66. 2, 3.

ARTICLE XIV.

Of Works of Supererogation.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

Voluntary Works, besides, over and above, God's Commandments, which they call Works of Supererogation, cannot be taught¹ without Arrogancy and Impiety^k; for by them Men do declare, that they do not only render unto God as much as they are bound to do, but that they do more for his Sake than of bounden Duty is required: Whereas Christ saith plainly, When you have done all those Things that are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable Servants, we have done that which was our Duty to do^l.

ARTICLE XV.

Of Christ alone without Sin.

Christ, in the Truth of our Nature, was made like unto us in all Things, Sin only excepted^m, from which he was clearly void both in his Flesh and in his Spiritⁿ: He came to be the Lamb without Spot^o, who, by Sacrifice of himself^p once made^q, should take away the Sins of the World^r; and Sin, as St. John saith, was not in him^s. But all we the rest, although baptized and regenerate, yet offend in many Things; and if we say we have no Sin, we deceive ourselves, and the Truth is not in us^t.

CHARLES HERLE, *Prolocutor.*HENRY ROBOROUGH, *Scriba.*ADONIRAM BYFIELD, *Scriba.*

The RULES and DIRECTIONS concerning Suspension from the Sacrament of the LORD'S SUPPER in case of Ignorance, referred to in the Fourteenth Proposition.

And an Ordinance concerning the Lord's Supper.

1. *ALL such Persons who shall be admitted to the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper ought to know that there is a God; that there is but one*

EVER-

¹ Matthew, 5. 48. Mark, 12. 30, 31. Phil. 4. 8, 9.
^k Job, 9. 2, 3, 20, 21. Psal. 143. 2. Prov. 20. 9. Phil. 3. 8, 10, 15.
^l Luke, 17. 10, with ver. 7, 8, 9. ^m Isai. 53. 3, 4, 5. Heb. 2. 17, with Heb. 5. 15. ⁿ Luke 1. 35. with Acts, 3. 14. John, 14. 30. 2 Cor. 5. 21. Heb. 7. 26. ^o 1 Pet. 1. 19. ^p Ephes. 5. 2. ^q Heb. 9. 26, 28. Heb. 10. 10, 12. ^r John, 1. 29. ^s 2 John, 3. 5. ^t James, 3. 2. 1 John, 1. 8, 10.

ever-living and true God, Maker of Heaven and Earth, and Governor of all Things; that this only true God is the God whom we worship; that this God is but one, yet three distinct Persons, the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, all equally God.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
December.

2. *That God created Man after his own Image, in Knowledge, Righteousness, and true Holiness; that by one Man Sin entered into the World, and Death by Sin, and so Death passed upon all Men, for that all have sinned; that thereby they are all dead in Trespasses and Sins, and are by Nature the Children of Wrath, and so liable to eternal Death, the Wages of every Sin.*

3. *That there is but one Mediator between God and Man, the Man Christ Jesus, who is also over all, God blessed for ever, neither is there Salvation in any other; that he was conceived by the Holy Ghost, and born of the Virgin Mary; that he died upon the Cross to save his People from their Sins; that he rose again the third Day from the Dead, ascended into Heaven, sits at the Right Hand of God, and makes continual Intercession for us, of whose Fulness we receive all Grace necessary to Salvation.*

4. *That Christ and his Benefits are applied only by Faith; that Faith is the Gift of God, and that we have it not of ourselves, but it is wrought in us by the Word and Spirit of God.*

5. *That Faith is that Grace whereby we believe and trust in Christ for Remission of Sins and Life everlasting, according to the Promise of the Gospel; that whosoever believes not on the Son of God, shall not see Life, but shall perish eternally.*

6. *That they who truly repent of their Sins, do see them, sorrow for them, and turn from them to the Lord; and that except Men repent they shall surely perish.*

7. *That a godly Life is conscionably ordered according to the Word of God, in Holiness and Righteousness, without which no Man shall see God.*

8. *That the Sacraments are Seals of the Covenant of Grace in the Blood of Christ: That the Sacraments*

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

December.

ments of the New Testament are Baptism and the Lord's Supper; that the outward Elements in the Lord's Supper are Bread and Wine, and do signify the Body and Blood of Christ crucified, which the worthy Receiver, by Faith, doth partake of in this Sacrament, which Christ hath likewise ordained for a Remembrance of his Death; that whosoever eats and drinks unworthily, is guilty of the Body and Blood of the Lord; and therefore that every one is to examine himself, lest he eat and drink Judgment to himself, not discerning the Lord's Body.

9. That the Souls of the Faithful, after Death, do immediately live with Christ in Blessedness, and that the Souls of the Wicked do immediately go into Hell Torments: That there shall be a Resurrection of the Bodies, both of the Just and Unjust, at the last Day; at which Time all shall appear before the Judgment Seat of Christ, to receive according to what they have done in the Body, whether it be good or evil; and that the Righteous shall go into Life eternal, and the Wicked into everlasting Punishment.

And it is further ordained by the Lords and Commons, that those who have a competent Measure of Understanding concerning the Matters contained in these Articles, shall not be kept back from the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper for Ignorance; and that the Examination and Judgment of such Persons as shall, for their Ignorance of the aforesaid Points of Religion, not be admitted to the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, is to be in the Power of the Eldership of every Congregation.

Dec. 14. This being the Day appointed for the Commons to bring up their Articles of Impeachment against the seven Lords; and they not appearing to support their Charge, a Committee of Lords was appointed to consider of Precedents in this Case, and to offer somewhat to the House to prevent the like for the future.

Dec. 15. A Report was made to the Lords, that the late Instructions were delivered to the Mem-

Members that were appointed to go to the King, and also to the *Scots* Commissioners; the latter of whom desired to know what those Bills were that were to be sent: To which it was answered, That they had no Authority to communicate them; whereupon the *Scots* Commissioners delivered in the following Paper, which they desired might be given to the Houses.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
December.

December 14, 1647.

WE have received your Lordships Paper, together with the Instructions for the Commissioners of both Houses that are to go to the King in the Isle of *Wight*; and finding that they do relate to three Bills, concerning three of the Propositions of Peace lately communicated unto us, and a new one concerning the Adjournment of both Houses of Parliament, we desire to see those Bills to which his Majesty's Assent is desired, before any Treaty upon the rest of the Propositions; wherein we trust we shall not be misunderstood, as if our Intentions were to meddle with the framing of your Laws, or the Form of your Bills; but that we may consider and give our Advice concerning the Matter of these Bills, which, being assented unto by the King's Majesty, are a real Security and Agreement for Peace; and therefore, according to the Treaty betwixt the Kingdoms, cannot be done without the mutual Advice and Consent of both.

We desire the Bills may be sent to us this Night, or To-morrow in convenient Time, and we shall wait upon your Lordships with our Answer, to be returned to the Houses on Thursday Morning.

By Command of the Commissioners for the Parliament of Scotland.

JO. CHIESLEY.

Dec. 16. A Message was brought from the House of Commons by Mr. *Selden*, to acquaint their Lordships that the Members of their House, who are of the Committee of both Kingdoms, reported a Paper, dated the 14th Instant, which they

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

Resolutions of
both Houses in
Answer thereto.

they received from the *Scots* Commissioners, wherein it is desired that the Bills which the Houses intend to send to the King, may be communicated to them; that the House of Commons have passed the following Resolutions by way of Answer to that Paper, wherein they desired their Lordships Concurrence; and if their Lordships do agree, that then they may be delivered to the *Scots* Commissioners this Afternoon.

1. 'That the Privilege, Right, and Custom of the Kingdom and Parliament of *England* is, that Bills passed both Houses, to be presented to the King for his Royal Assent, are not to be communicated to any other whatsoever, either in relation to Matter or Form, before his Answer thereunto given; and that there is nothing contained in any Article of Treaty between the two Kingdoms to the contrary.

2. 'That the two Houses having resolved to send their Commissioners to the King, in the Isle of *Wight*, on *Monday* next, with the Bills and Propositions in the Instructions mentioned, according to the same Instructions communicated to the *Scots* Commissioners; the Houses desire that such Propositions as those Commissioners shall judge fit and necessary for the Kingdom of *Scotland*, may be prepared, to be sent within the Time aforesaid.'

To these Resolutions the Lords agreed.

Dec. 17. This Day the following Remonstrance of the *Scots* Commissioners, against sending the four Bills to the King without their having first perused them, and given their Consent to them, was presented to the House of Lords; and we meet with it only in their *Journals*.

December 17, 1647.

A Remonstrance
from the *Scots*
Commissioners
against sending
the four Bills to
the King.

'WE have perused the Instructions communicated to us on *Tuesday* in the Afternoon, wherein the Commissioners of both Houses appointed to go to the King, are commanded to present to his Majesty four Bills:

'The

‘ The first concerning the settling of the Militia of *England* and *Ireland* in both Houses of Parliament. An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

‘ The second for justifying the Proceedings of Parliament in the late War; and declaring all Oaths, Declarations, Proclamations, and other Proceedings against the Parliament, to be void.

‘ The third concerning Peers lately made, or hereafter to be made. And

‘ The fourth, a new Proposition for the Adjournment of both Houses: To which Bills they are commanded to desire his Majesty’s Assent, by his Letters Patent under the Great Seal of *England*, and not otherwise: And after his Majesty’s Assent to these Bills, the Houses of Parliament will send a Committee of both Houses to treat with his Majesty, in the Isle of *Wight*, upon the Remainder of the new Propositions. December.

‘ To all these we answer, That altho’ there be nothing which we more passionately desire than a happy Peace and good Agreement with the King, yet we cannot agree to this Way of desiring his Majesty’s Assent to these four Bills, before any Treaty with his Majesty upon the other Propositions; it being, in our Judgment, neither for the Good of Religion, the King, or Kingdom.

‘ And, first, concerning Religion, we say, That in *January*, 1647, it was agreed on betwixt both Houses of Parliament and us, before the Treaty at *Uxbridge*, that the Propositions concerning Religion, the Militia, and *Ireland*, shall be treated upon *alternis vicibus*, beginning first with the Proposition of Religion; and that as it is of the most Excellency, so it is to be sought after, and fully agreed upon, in the first Place, before any final Agreement be made upon any of the other Propositions.

‘ We are very sure the Houses had far greater Reason at that Time to look to their Security, and

An. 27. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

and to desire the Proposition for settling the Militia to be first agreed on, when the King had an Army in the Field, than now when they have a strong Army, and he hath none at all: And, upon the other Part, the Danger to Religion is now much greater than any Time before, when Men in Arms are demanding a Toleration of all Sorts of Religion, Popery excepted; and if, first of all, it should be agreed on that the Continuance of such an Army shall be settled by Law, we desire that it may be equally considered what Good can be expected from a Treaty upon Religion, or what Hope shall remain of settling it according to the Covenant; wherefore we cannot consent to the sending any Propositions or Bills to be a Security for settling Peace without Truth, which hath been acknowledged both by his Majesty and the Houses, in all former Treaties or Messages, to be the best and most solid Foundation of a lasting Peace; and we must still press that there may be a Preference of both those Desires, which are for settling Religion and the Government of the Church; the Want whereof is the Cause of the Sects and Heresies which do multiply and increase daily, to the Disturbance of all Order and Peace both in Church and State.

As this Way is not for the Good of Religion, so it cannot, in Reason, be conceived that it can be acceptable to the King; for how can it be expected that he will grant these Things for a personal Treaty, whereof the Issue is uncertain, which he hath ever hitherto denied even to obtain a Peace; especially when, after all his Majesty's earnest Desires, he cannot be admitted to come to London, nor, upon any Terms, to have a Treaty here, in respect the Houses conceive that the King's Presence with them at this Time stands not with the Safety and Security of the Parliament and Kingdom; but that the King's Assent to the four Bills must be by Commission, and thereafter a Treaty upon the rest of the
Pro-

Propositions at the Isle of *Wight*; or can can it be looked for that he will give the whole and sole Power of the Militia from himself and his Posterity to the Houses for their Security, to be disposed of as they shall think fit; and shall have no Security at all to himself, or any Assurance that he shall be restored to his Rights and Government: It is much more probable that he will think he hath already offered sufficient Security in his late Message from *Carisbrook* Castle, of the 17th of *November*; wherein he is content that all Power of the Militia be settled in the Houses of Parliament during his Reign.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
December.

Neither is this Way, in our Apprehension, for the Good and Safety of the Kingdoms, that an Army holding such Principles as they do concerning Religion, and in relation to the settling of the Government and Peace of the Kingdoms; and which, without any known Authority from the Parliament, hath increased their Number to the Double of what they are allowed by Order of the Parliament; and, in their late Representations, do acknowledge their Supernumeraries to be about 20,000; that such an Army, we say, shall be perpetually established, when there are no Forces to oppose the Parliament; and that the Subjects shall be obliged by Law ever to submit to a Military Power, and pay what Monies shall be demanded for their Maintenance! Whatsoever this may seem to others to be, in our Sense, it doth neither agree with the Rules of Policy or Safety.

We did desire to see the four Bills to be presented to his Majesty, so much the rather that, from the Title of the Bill for the Militia, we perceive that it doth extend to the settling and maintaining of Forces in the Town of *Berwick*, contrary to the Large Treaty betwixt the Kingdoms. And we did represent that tho' these Bills, being assented unto by the King, should be a real Security, and an Agreement for Peace; yet, according to the Treaty betwixt the Kingdoms,

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

this cannot be done without the mutual Advice
 and Consent of both: To which the Houses did
 Yesterday return as their Answer, *That the Pri-
 vilege, Right, and Custom of the Kingdom and
 Parliament of England is, that Bills pass'd both
 Houses to be presented to the King for his Royal
 Assent, are not to be communicated to any other
 whatsoever, either in relation to Matter or Form,
 before his Answer thereunto given; and that there
 is nothing contained in any Article of Treaty be-
 twixt the Kingdoms to the contrary.* Whereunto
 we make this Reply, That the Bills mentioned
 in the eleventh Section of the Propositions of
 Peace, presented unto his Majesty at Oxford, An-
 no 1644, were communicated to us before they
 were sent to the King; and, upon Perusal of
 them, we desired that nothing might be in those
 Bills contrary to the Covenant, or the Reforma-
 tion and Uniformity to be settled; upon Consi-
 deration whereof the House of Commons gave us
 this Answer, *That the Reformation and Unifor-
 mity desired is already provided for in one of the
 Propositions, to which nothing contained in those
 Bills could be any Prejudice, but should hereafter
 be regulated as the said Reformation and Unifor-
 mity shall be thought fit to be settled.*

Also the Bill for abolishing Episcopacy was
 communicated unto us, and afterwards debated
 upon by his Majesty's Commissioners and the
 Commissioners of both Kingdoms, at Uxbridge.

We thought fit to give these Instances, to shew
 that it hath not always been the Custom of both
 Houses not to communicate their Bills before
 his Majesty's Answer was given thereunto; yet
 it is no ways our Desire to meddle with the
 framing of your Laws, or advising the forming of
 your Bills. We shall ever be tender of any just
 Privilege of Parliament; but that it should be
 said, *There is nothing contained in any Article of
 Treaty between the two Kingdoms, which requires
 the Communication of the Matter of any Bill, is to
 us very strange: It is agreed upon betwixt the*
 King-

' Kingdoms, That no Cessation, or any Pacification
 ' or Agreement for Peace whatsoever, shall be made
 ' by either Kingdom, or the Armies of either King-
 ' dom, without the mutual Advice and Consent of
 ' both Kingdoms. Now suppose the Houses of Par-
 ' liament should turn all their Desires for Peace
 ' into Bills, and should say that the Bills cannot be
 ' communicated to the Kingdom of Scotland, either
 ' in relation to Matter or Form; we desire to know,
 ' and let any rational Man judge, whether this
 ' were not an Eluding and a clear Violation of the
 ' Treaty. Neither can it in this Case be a satis-
 ' factory Answer, That the Houses of Parliament
 ' do only send four of the Propositions in Bills to
 ' his Majesty; for every one of the Propositions,
 ' is a Proposition for Peace; and an Agreement
 ' made upon any one of them, is an Agreement
 ' for Peace; and, which is much more, there are
 ' none of the Propositions which, in their own
 ' Nature, do so immediately concern the settling
 ' of a Peace as these four Propositions; and what
 ' can be called an Agreement for Peace if this be
 ' not, when the King, by his Assent, shall justify
 ' the Proceedings of the Parliament in the late
 ' War, and make all Oaths, Declarations, Procla-
 ' mations, and other Proceedings against it to be
 ' void; when, by an Act of Parliament, he shall
 ' settle the Power of all Forces by Sea and Land
 ' in the Houses of Parliament, as also agree to raise
 ' Monies for their Maintenance; when he shall
 ' consent that all Peers made, or hereafter to be
 ' made, shall not sit or vote in Parliament, with-
 ' out Consent of both Houses; and when he shall
 ' give Power to the Houses to adjourn at their
 ' Pleasure? If then the King's Assent to these
 ' Bills be an Agreement for Peace, as we hope it
 ' cannot in Reason be denied, our Advice and Con-
 ' sent ought to be had therein before they be sent
 ' to the King, or otherwise the Treaty is violated.
 ' As we cannot agree to this Way of sending
 ' these four Bills to his Majesty for his Assent,
 ' before any Treaty upon the rest of the Proposi-
 ' tions;

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 December.

An. 25. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

tions; so we are extremely unsatisfied with the Matter of those new Propositions lately communicated unto us, for the Reasons expressed in our Answer unto them; which we shall presently deliver unto your Lordships, to be presented to both Houses of Parliament; and we desire that they will take the whole Business into their further Consideration, and that there may be a personal Treaty with his Majesty, here at London, upon such Propositions as shall be agreed on, with Advice and Consent of both Kingdoms, according to the Treaty.

By Command of the Commissioners for the Parliament of Scotland.

JO. CHIESLEY.

The next Day, Dec. 18, the *Scots* Commissioners presented to the Lords their Answer to the new Propositions, which we give from the same Authority as the former. Mr. *Rushworth* contents himself with saying, ^a 'That the *Scots* Commissioners presented a large Declaration to the Parliament in very high Language, pressing hard for a personal Treaty with his Majesty, and declaring their Protest against sending the four Bills.' He then proceeds to select a few Paragraphs out of the foregoing Remonstrance and the following Answer. Touching the Parliament's Reply thereto, he only observes, 'That it was answerable in Terms to the high Language of the *Scots*.' But this is not the first Instance, nor will be the last, of that Author's putting a Slight upon the *Scots* Nation, which may easily be accounted for by his being at that Time Secretary to the Army. However, it would be inconsistent with the Impartiality of our Collections to pass over so public-spirited a Memorial; we therefore give it at large: Observing only that the *Scots* Commissioners having caused it to be printed, the Parliament issued Orders for finding out the Printer, and seizing the whole Impression.

^a *Collections*, Vol. VII. p. 953, 9.

The ANSWER of the Commissioners of the Kingdom of Scotland to both Houses of Parliament, upon the new Propositions of Peace and the four Bills to be sent to his Majesty.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

December.

WE have, with much Patience, for divers Years together, in Pursuance of the Solemn League and Covenant, and Treaties betwixt the Kingdoms, used our best Endeavours for settling Religion and a happy Peace. Propositions were first agreed on, Anno 1644, and, with the Advice and Consent of the Parliaments of both Kingdoms, presented to his Majesty at Oxford, by Commissioners of both, and treated upon at Uxbridge, Anno 1645. We did earnestly and frequently press the sending of those Propositions again to his Majesty, wherein the Houses would not concur with us; but, on the contrary, after very long Delay, thought fit to make several Alterations therein, which were principally in Matters that did concern the near Union of the Kingdoms; yet were we so earnestly desirous of putting an End to those long continued Distractions and Troubles of these Kingdoms, as, waving what might be conceived for the particular Interest of the Kingdom of Scotland, we did join with the Houses of Parliament in presenting Propositions to his Majesty at Newcastle; tho', as we then declared, we had just Reason to be unsatisfied with divers Things contained in those Propositions.

Their Objection
to those Bills
and to the new
Propositions.

When it was agreed upon betwixt the Kingdoms, that the same Propositions should be again presented to his Majesty at his coming to Holdenby, the Performance thereof being delayed by the Houses for divers Months, we did patiently wait their Leisure; yet, upon a sudden, they did appoint a peremptory Day for sending the Propositions to his Majesty; and gave Orders to their Commissioners, in case we were not precisely upon that Day at Hampton-Court, that they should

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December.

present the Propositions to the King alone by themselves, contrary to the Treaty betwixt the Kingdoms; which was so strange and unequal a Way, as we might have justly denied our Concurrence, had not our Love to Peace prevailed with us to join in that Message: But after all this, finding no Success in that Way of sending Propositions to the King, and insisting upon his positive Assent thereunto, without giving any Reasons for the Justice of our Desires, or the having of any Propositions from his Majesty; we did, in *November* last, propose to the Honourable Houses, and did with much Earnestness desire, that there might be a personal Treaty with his Majesty here at *London*, it being in all Probability the best Means to obtain a Peace.

About the Time of his Majesty's withdrawing from *Hampton-Court*, the Houses did communicate unto us new Propositions, resolved upon by them, to be presented to his Majesty: After Receipt whereof we did, in our Paper of the 16th of *November*, insist on our former Desire for a personal Treaty with his Majesty; but receiving no Answer to that, nor to our Paper of the 5th, and our positive Answer being demanded to the new Propositions upon the 25th of *November*, we resolved once again to desire an Answer to our former Papers; a personal Treaty being, in our Judgment, a readier Way to compose all Differences, than the sending of these new Propositions, wherein there are so great and essential Differences from what was formerly agreed on by both Kingdoms: And to the end there might be no Lett or Delay on our Part, which might hinder the settling of a Peace, we desired a Conference with a Committee of both Houses concerning the Expediency of a personal Treaty with his Majesty, and the Alterations made in the Propositions; that so, according to the Treaty of the 29th of *November*, 1643, there might be, with the Advice and Consent of both Nations, a speedy Agreement in those Things

Things which are to be the Foundation of a Peace to both ; to all which the Houses have been pleased to return no Answer. However it is no small Satisfaction to us, that we leave no Means of Agreement unessay'd, and that the Retardment of the settling of the Peace of the Kingdom cannot be charged on us ; and lest our further Silence, in Expectation of an Answer, should be mistaken, we have thought fit to represent our Sense concerning a personal Treaty and the Propositions, to the Houses in Writing ; which, had our Desires been granted, we did intend to have done by a verbal Conference.

An. 27. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

There be some Things which properly concern the Kingdom of *England*, their Rights, Laws, and Liberties ; but there be also other Matters, which, in their own Nature, as being common to both, or by Covenant or Treaty, concern both Kingdoms ; wherein (unless we would forget our Duty to God, to the King's Majesty, to our native Kingdom, and to this Nation) our common Concernment and Interest cannot be denied ; for as *Scotland* was invited and engaged in this War upon Grounds and Reasons of common Interest, so we trust that it will not be offensive that, in making of Peace, we claim from the Houses an Improvement of the very same Principles, and a Performance of the Treaties they have made with us, that the same Measure of Conjunction of Interests be given to us which was had of us, and promised unto us ; wherein the very Law of Nations, and the very Rule of common Equity, doth plead for us ; yet, in the Application of this Rule, we shall not stretch ourselves beyond our Lines, the express Conditions of our Solemn League and Covenant, the Duty of our Allegiance, and the Treaties and Declarations between the Kingdoms ; which are so many strong Obligations, as all, who have any Honour or Conscience, must acknowledge should be inviolably observed.

Having

Ann. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December.

‘ Having laid this as a just and solid Ground of
 ‘ our Proceedings, we shall first speak of the best
 ‘ and most probable Means to procure a good
 ‘ Agreement with the King for settling Religion
 ‘ and a lasting Peace; and next of the Propositions
 ‘ which are to be the Foundations of the Peace
 ‘ and Safety of both Kingdoms. And it is still our
 ‘ Opinion and Judgment, that the most equal,
 ‘ fair, and just Way to obtain a well-grounded
 ‘ Peace, is by a personal Treaty with the King;
 ‘ and that his Majesty, for that End, be invited
 ‘ to come to *London* with Honour, Freedom, and
 ‘ Safety; for which we offer the Reasons follow-
 ‘ ing:

1. ‘ The sending of Propositions without a Tre-
 ‘ ty hath been often essayed without Success, and
 ‘ the new Propositions are less to the Advantage of
 ‘ the Crown than the former; therefore we have
 ‘ no Reason to expect better Satisfaction that Way
 ‘ than formerly we had.

2. ‘ The King’s Removal from his Parliament
 ‘ is acknowledged, by several Declarations of the
 ‘ Parliament, to be the chief Cause of all the War,
 ‘ Mischiefs, and Calamities of these Kingdoms;
 ‘ then his Majesty’s Presence with his Parliament
 ‘ must be the best, if not the only, Remedy to
 ‘ remove our Troubles.

3. ‘ In a personal Treaty, the Commissioners
 ‘ of both Kingdoms may give Reasons for the E-
 ‘ quity and Expediency of our Desires; but with-
 ‘ out a Treaty, or giving Reasons for asserting the
 ‘ Lawfulness and Expediency of the Propositions to
 ‘ be presented, they may be esteemed Impositions.

4. ‘ The King may have some Desires to move
 ‘ for the Crown and for himself; as that he may
 ‘ have his Revenues, and that he may be restored
 ‘ to his Royal Government; which may be done
 ‘ with greater Honour and Satisfaction to him by
 ‘ a personal Treaty than otherwise.

5. ‘ A personal Treaty with the King is the
 ‘ best Way to beget a mutual Confidence between
 ‘ him

him and his Parliament: It is the best Way to An. 25. Car. I.
clear his Doubts, and to remove all Difficulties, 1647.
and it is absolutely the best Way for giving and
receiving mutual Satisfaction. December.

6. We cannot expect that his Majesty will grant, *in Terminis*, whatsoever Propositions shall be sent unto him; nor can every Thing in the Propositions be of that Importance, as that the not granting of it ought to hinder a Peace; neither will the Houses of Parliament give full Power to their Commissioners to make Alterations in the said Propositions as they shall see Cause upon Debate; wherefore a personal Treaty with his Majesty, at *London*, is the most probable and expeditious Way to remove and reconcile all Differences.

There is one common Objection wherewith many are possessed and prejudiced against a personal Treaty with the King, and his Coming to *London*, viz. *That his Presence may breed Division and continue our Troubles; and that when his Majesty desired to come here from Oxford with Freedom and Safety, it was thought unfit, and denied by the Houses and the Commissioners from Scotland: But that Argument hath now no Force at all; for the State of Affairs, the King's Condition and ours (which were given for Reasons in that Answer to his Majesty) are quite altered from what they were then. Then the King had Armies in the Field, he had Garrisons and Strongholds to return to; now he hath none of these, and his Majesty offers a full Security against all Hostility or Danger that can be expected from him, by granting to the Houses the Power of the Militia by Sea and Land during his Reign, as is expressed in his late Message from Carisbrooke Castle. And for a further Answer, we desire the Houses to remember their Reply to his Majesty's Message of the 11th of September, 1642; where, after mention of their chief Grievances, they say, All this notwithstanding, as we never gave your Majesty any just Cause of withdrawing yourself from your*
Great

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

Great Council; so it hath ever been, and shall be, far from us to give any Impediment to your Return, or to neglect any proper Means of curing the Distempers of the Kingdom, and closing the dangerous Breaches betwixt your Majesty and your Parliament, according to the great Trust which lieth upon us: And if your Majesty shall now be pleased to come back to your Parliament without your Forces, we shall be ready to secure your Royal Person, Crown, and Dignity with our Lives and Fortunes; your Presence in this Great Council being the only Means of any Treaty betwixt your Majesty and them, with any Hope of Success. And if those were esteemed Enemies to the Parliament and the Peace of the Kingdoms, who advised the King to withdraw from the Parliament, what Estimation will the World have of them who, after such a Declaration, will not suffer him to return to his Parliament when he offers to cast himself into their Arms? If so kind an Offer shall be refused, and the King driven to Despair, it is to be feared these Kingdoms shall be involved in greater Difficulties than ever; and therefore we do hold that the admitting the King to come to London, with Honour, Freedom, and Safety, and granting of a personal Treaty with his Majesty upon such Propositions as shall be agreed on, by Advice and Consent of both Kingdoms, is the most probable and only best Means, with Hope of Success, for settling a well-grounded Peace.

Having spoken of the readiest Means to obtain a just and lasting Peace, we shall next fall upon the Consideration of the Propositions, which are to be the Foundation of our Peace; and the most compendious and succinct Way to a good Agreement and unanimous Resolution upon them is, in the first Place, to consider and remove our Differences, which are chiefly in Religion, the Interest of the Crown, and in the Union and joint Concernment of the Kingdoms.

W^c

‘ We shall begin with that of Religion, which, An. 23. Car. I.
 ‘ for the incomparable Excellency thereof, altho’ 1647.
 ‘ it be amongst the last of these new Propositions,
 ‘ deserves the Preference. It is the *primum quæ-*
 ‘ *rite*, the *unum necessarium*: We ought to build
 ‘ the House of God before our own; the Law of
 ‘ Piety and true Policy doth require that Religion,
 ‘ which rendereth to God his Due, have the Pre-
 ‘ cedency; and therefore, upon Debate, before we
 ‘ went to the Treaty at *Uxbridge*, it was agreed
 ‘ betwixt the Houses and us, that the Propositions
 ‘ of Religion should be in the first Place, and first
 ‘ treated and agreed upon, before any Agreement
 ‘ upon any other Propositions; and his Majesty,
 ‘ in his late Message from *Carisbrook* Castle, be-
 ‘ gins with Religion as the best and chiefest Foun-
 ‘ dation; wherefore, if this Changing of the for-
 ‘ mer Order and Method of the Propositions be
 ‘ only their Error to whom the reviling the Pro-
 ‘ positions was committed, and if the Houses have
 ‘ not fallen away from their just Zeal, we desire
 ‘ it may be rectified, and the former Method kept;
 ‘ and so we come to the Matter of the Proposi-
 ‘ tions.

‘ The material Differences and Alterations con-
 ‘ cerning Religion may be branched into the Error
 ‘ of Omission and Deficiency, and into that of
 ‘ Commission and Excess. That which is left out
 ‘ is no less than the Solemn League and Covenant:
 ‘ And shall the Covenant, which is as solemn a
 ‘ Vow as Creatures on Earth could make to God
 ‘ in Heaven, and the greatest Tie betwixt Men on
 ‘ Earth; to which the most high and dreadful Name
 ‘ of the Lord God Almighty was interposed, be
 ‘ offered up in Sacrifice, and buried in the Ashes
 ‘ of Oblivion? Shall our Covenant, for the Pre-
 ‘ servation and Reformation of Religion, for the
 ‘ Honour and Happiness of the King, and the
 ‘ Peace and Safety of the three Kingdoms, and for
 ‘ the Maintenance and Defence of the Laws and
 ‘ true publick Liberties of these Kingdoms; which
 ‘ was declared by both Kingdoms to be a most fit
 ‘ and

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

December.

and excellent Means to acquire the Favour of
 God towards both, and likewise to unite them;
 and, by uniting, to strengthen them against the
 common Enemies of the true Reformed Religion,
 and the Peace and Prosperity of these Kingdoms;
 and which, in all former Propositions, was de-
 sired to be established, be now deleted as unwor-
 thy to take Room amongst these new Proposi-
 tions? Shall the Covenant, which both Houses
 did recommend to the Assembly of Divines to
 make a Declaration to all Sorts of Persons to take
 it, as that which they judged not only lawful,
 but exceeding expedient and necessary for all that
 wish well to Religion, the King, and Kingdom,
 to join in, and to be a singular Pledge of God's
 gracious Goodness to all the three Kingdoms;
 we say, shall that Covenant be laid aside? Shall
 our mutual and Solemn League and Covenant,
 subscribed by the Parliaments of both Kingdoms,
 by the Assembly of Divines, and by the City of
 London; and which not only they, but all Scot-
 land, and many Thousands in England and Ire-
 land, with Hands lifted up to the Most High God,
 did swear that they shall not suffer themselves,
 directly or indirectly, by whatsoever Combina-
 tion, Persuasion, or Terror, to be divided and
 withdrawn from that blessed Union and Conjun-
 ction; whether to make Defection to the contrary
 Part, or to give themselves to a detestable Indif-
 ferency or Neutrality in this Cause, which so
 much concerneth the Glory of God, the Good
 of the Kingdoms, and the Honour of the King;
 but shall all the Days of their Lives, zealously
 and constantly, continue therein against all Op-
 position, and promote the same according to
 their Power, against all Lets and Impediments
 whatsoever; and that they shall do all this as in
 the Sight of God? Shall this Covenant, even
 with those that took it, be already out of Date,
 and not so much as remembered amongst the Pro-
 positions of Peace? Yea, it is not so much as
 mentioned in these new Propositions, except in
 the

the seventh Qualification of the twelfth Proposition, where it is only made a Hook to catch some into the Notion of Delinquency; but perhaps it escaped the Revisers of the Propositions, who in all other Places have exploded it.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
December.

It is answered by some, *That by the seventh Proposition it is desired, that an Act of Parliament be passed, declaring the King's Approbation of the making the Treaties between the Kingdoms of Scotland and England, in which Treaties there is Mention made of the Covenant; and therefore it is not necessary to desire a particular Confirmation and Establishment of the Covenant.*

To which it is briefly replied,

1st, That there is no Proposition for passing any Acts of Parliament to confirm the Treaties between the Kingdoms, as was desired in all former Propositions; but these Words are purposely changed, and, in place thereof, there is only desired an Act, declaring the King's Approbation of the making the Treaties; which, in effect, is no more than an Act of Indenture for making the Treaties, and not an Act for Confirmation and Establishing the Treaties themselves, and those Things which are expressed and transacted in them.

2^{dly}, Suppose there was an Act of Parliament passed for establishing the Treaties between the Kingdoms in general, (which is not in these Propositions) yet such a Generality would not be understood to be extended to the Confirmation of the Covenant, unless the particular Articles of the Treaty and the Covenant were expressly inserted; because there was an express Proposition amongst the former, that an Act of Parliament be passed in both Kingdoms for taking and confirming the Covenant; which being now left out of the new Propositions, without mentioning the Covenant, cannot but be interpreted as a receding from the Covenant; and the Approbation and Confirmation of the Treaties in general, after deleting the Covenant out of the Propositions, would

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December,

kept in their Power, to be carried whither they please, or forced to fly for Safety. If Scotland had apprehended that the least Injury or Violence would have been committed against his Majesty's Royal Person, or Monarchical Government; nay, if they had not received Assurance from the Houses to the contrary, certainly all the Threatenings and Allurements in the World could never have persuaded them to have parted with the King, till all Armies had been disbanded, and the Peace of the Kingdom settled. It was our brotherly Confidence in the Houses, who are our Fellow-Subjects, and the Assurance that we had from them, that made us leave the King with them; and their Care of him, and Duty to him, ought to be such as neither his Majesty nor we should have Cause to repent it. This we could not but declare, to assert the Truth and vindicate the Honour and Reputation of our Nation; for our Loyalty hath ever been, is, and shall be, dearer unto us than our Lives and Fortunes; and the Candour and Integrity of all our Actions is a sufficient Confutation of all the Calumnies and Aspersions, which Malice or Envy can forge against us.

We find also these Propositions omitted, viz. The Proposition for confirming the Ordinances concerning the Calling and Sitting of the Assembly of Divines; the Proposition for Reformation of Religion in *England* and *Ireland* according to the Covenant; and the Proposition for settling Uniformity and Unity in Matters of Religion between the Churches of God in both Kingdoms according to the Covenant; in place of which we find nothing but a meer Shadow of Presbyterian Government, an external Form of Discipline without Life or Power, and a Liberty granted to all Sorts of Service and Worship of God, and for the Exercise of all such religious Duties and Ordinances as every Person shall please, and his own erroneous Conscience shall dictate unto him (for there is no other Rule prescribed).

scribed); which opens a Door to Atheism, to all Religions, and to that which (by the Abuse of the Name) is called Liberty of Conscience, being indeed Liberty of Error, Scandal, Schism, Heresy, dishonouring God, opposing the Truth, hindering Reformation, and seducing others; so in place of Uniformity in Religion, which, by Covenant, both Kingdoms have sworn to endeavour, there is here desired to be settled a vast Deformity or Multiformity of Heresies and Sects; which, if the Lord in his Mercy shall not prevent, may produce the Ruin of Religion in both Kingdoms, which we have just Reason to fear; as for other Reasons, so when we consider the Declaration of both Houses of Parliament, in August, 1642, speaking of the Design of the Popish or Prelatical Faction to alter Religion in this Island, of whom they say, *They resolve to impose a Popish Service Book upon Scotland, for well they know the same Fate must attend both Kingdoms, and Religion could not be altered in the one without the other*; and in answer to the Scots Declaration, in September, 1642, *Whenever the Design to root out Religion shall be perfected in either Nation, it will easily be accomplished in the other, Religion being the Bond and Foundation of the Safety and Happiness of both*. And, in August 1643, the English Commissioners declare to the Kingdom of Scotland, *That they are commanded by their Instructions to put their Brethren of Scotland in mind that the Popish and Prelatical Faction, that began with them about the Years 1638 and 39, then intended to make Way to the Ruin of the Kingdom of England by theirs; and have not abated any Part of their Malice towards the Nation and Church of Scotland, nor at all departed from their Design of corrupting and altering Religion through the whole Island, though they have inverted the Manner of their Proceedings; conceiving now that they have an easier Way to destroy them, if they may first prevail over the Parliament and Kingdom of England; in which Respect it is the Desire of both*

An. 22. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

Houses, that the two Nations be strictly united together, &c.

And in another Paper it was declared, *That what Corruptions take Root in the Church and Kingdom of England, will quickly spread their Venom and Infection into the Neighbour Church of Scotland.* Wherefore we cannot but dissent to this Proposition, and, according to the Trust reposed in us, represent our just Exceptions against it: And,

1. We think it extremely strange, that the Houses of Parliament should desire an Act of Parliament to be made for establishing a Presbyterian Government; and, in the very same Proposition, desire that it may be enacted that none shall obey that Act of Parliament, but such as shall please to do it.

2. We observe that however it is pretended that Presbyterian Government is desired to be established as the Government of the Church of England; yet is only, in Effect, a Liberty granted to all such as, of their own Accord, will join in Presbyterian Government; and so amounts to no more than a Toleration of it.

3. That this Toleration of Presbyterian Government is many Ways limited, as in the Time for which it is to endure, being only to the End of the next Session of Parliament after the End of this present Session, which perhaps may not be above six Months; and the Ministers and Elders are appointed, by Ordinance of Parliament, to exclude from the Sacrament only such Persons as the Houses have thought fit, and no others, tho' it be against their Consciences so to do; they are bounded with several Restrictions in their Meetings and Assemblies, and are not allowed the Uses and Exercises of all the Ordinances appointed by the Word of God; so as the Liberty of Conscience is denied to them and granted to others. For,

4. An unlimited Toleration for the Time of Endurance, Matter of Worship, and Exercise of all

all Ordinances, is expressly granted to all the Sec-
taries of the Times, whether they be *Anabaptists*,
Antinomians, *Arminians*, *Familists*, *Erasians*,
Brownists, *Separatists*, *Libertines*, or *Independents*;
yea, it extends to those *Nulli-Fidians* the *Seekers*,
to the new Set of *Shakers*, and divers others; by
all which the very Foundation of Church and
State is shaken, and near to be overthrown.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
December.

5. The Toleration here desired to be establish-
ed is of that Capacity and Latitude, as it may
admit of many vile and gross Errors, which have
been condemned and cast out of the Church in
former Times, and may be revived in *England*;
as if Errors and Heresies were of so precious a
Nature, that Men should be encouraged by Law
to enquire after them, and invited to maintain
them.

6. This Toleration is not only to the Persons
of those Sectaries and their Families, but gives full
Liberty to set up their Professions in any fit and
convenient Places; that so Scandals, Heresies,
Schisms, and new Religions may grow in their
Kinds, and also multiply in the Number of Pro-
fessions and Disciples, as if there were not enough
already.

7. Tho' it seemeth that a Provision is made,
that this Indulgence shall not extend to the Toler-
ation of *Anti-Trinitarians*, *Arians*, and *Anti-Scrip-
turists*; yet there is no more expressed but that
this Indulgence shall not extend to the tolerating
the printing, publishing, or preaching such Blat-
phemies and Errors as they do maintain against
God, and the Holy Scriptures, and the Trinity;
and they are not made liable to any Penalty. But
suppose Penalties were imposed on them for
printing, publishing, or preaching those Errors,
yet they are, by this Proposition, left to a full Li-
berty to maintain them in private, to reason and
dispute that there is no God; that Christ is but
an Impostor; that there is no such Thing as the
Holy Ghost; that the Scriptures are but like o-
ther Writings; blaspheming at their Pleasure, and

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

seducing others to their Opinions in secret : All which, and much more, according to this Proposition, may not be questioned ; and so in Reality, tho' not in Pretext, they shall be tolerated as well as others.

8. All prophane and wicked Persons are left at Liberty, by this Toleration, to do what they please ; for they are not obliged to be subject to any Discipline or Government ; and so neither the Duties of the first nor the second Table of the Law of God shall be observed ; but all Sorts of Iniquity and Works of Darknes shall abound ; and such as hate the sincere Worship of God at Church may have their unlawful and wicked Meetings elsewhere, under Profession of religious Exercises and Ordinances.

We might add more Exceptions against this Proposition, but these we trust may suffice to make any that is but a little endued with the Light of the Gospel, and hath any Love to the Truth, to detest and abhor such a Toleration. And now we desire the Houses of Parliament to remember that Remonstrance of the State of the Kingdom of the 15th of December, 1641, where they resent it as a great Injury that they should be suspected of infusing into the People that they mean to leave every Man to his own Judgment and Fancy for the Service and Worship of God ; and do declare *That it is far from their Purpose or Desire to let loose the golden Rein of Discipline and Government in the Church ; to leave private Persons, or particular Congregations, to take up what Kind of Divine Service they please ; and hold it requisite that there should be, throughout the whole Realm, a Conformity to that Order which the Laws enjoin according to the Word of God.* How consonant this Toleration is to that Declaration, we leave it to the Houses of Parliament, and all wise Men, to consider ; and whether the Danger of the true Reformed Religion in these Kingdoms be not greater now than before the taking of the Covenant, yea, or since Christian Religion

Religion came first into this Island, when Toleration of all Religions (the Name of Popery only excepted) is desired by the Houses of Parliament to be established by Law; and the very Principles and Fundamentals of Faith, which, under Prelacy, yea, under Popery itself, were generally received as uncontroverted, are now, by many Secretaries of this Time, either oppugned or called in Question.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
December.

There are divers other Passages in the Declarations and Ordinances of both Houses to the same Purpose; but here we shall only mention one or two in particular. We would have the Houses call to mind their Declaration and Answer to the Lords of his Majesty's Secret Council of Scotland, and the General Assembly of the Church of that Kingdom, in September 1642; where, besides other Expressions, they use these Words: *We acknowledge it as an Act of Love to us, and Wisdom for the Good of both Churches, for which we are thankful both to God and them, that our Brethren of Scotland have bestowed their serious Thoughts and earnest Desires for Unity of Religion; that in all his Majesty's Dominions there might be one Confession of Faith, one Directory of Worship, one Public Catechism, and one Form of Church Government; and altho' it will hardly be obtained punctually and exactly, unless some Way might be found for a mutual Communication and Junction of Council and Debate in framing that one Form; yet both intending the same End, proceeding by the same Rule of God's Word, and guided by the same Spirit, we hope, by God's Assistance, to be so directed that we may cast out whatsoever is offensive to God, or justly displeasing to any neighbour Church; and so far agree with our Brethren of Scotland, and other Reformed Churches, in all substantial Parts of Doctrine, Worship, and Discipline, that both we and they may enjoy those Advantages and Conveniences which are mentioned by them in this their Answer, in the more strict Union of both*

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December.

Kingdoms; more safe, easy, and comfortable Government of his Majesty; and both to himself and People more free Communion in all holy Exercises and Duties of Worship, more constant Security of Religion against the bloody Practices of Papists, and deceitful Errors of other Sectaries. And having there made known their Resolution to take away the Government by Bishops, they desire some godly and learned Divines of that Church to be sent to the Assembly of Divines here, whereby an Uniformity in Form of Church Government may be obtained; and one Confession of Faith, one Directory, and one Catechism, may be settled in all the three Kingdoms. Which Desire was afterward renewed to their Commissioners sent to Scotland; and, in the End, the mutual and joint Desires of both Kingdoms were crowned with a Solemn League and Covenant; as for other Ends, so for endeavouring the nearest Conjunction and Uniformity in all these, and for Extirpation of Heresy and Schism. These four Years past the Labours of many learned and godly Divines of both Kingdoms, thereunto appointed, have been spent in framing a Directory for Worship, (which was long since approved and received in both Kingdoms) a Confession of Faith, a Form of Church Government and Catechising; all which have been presented to both Houses, and some Progress was made therein towards the Establishing of them, till of late they were laid aside.

The Houses, not many Months since, did appoint a solemn Fast and Day of Humiliation to be kept throughout the whole Kingdom, because of the Growth of Heresies, Blasphemies, and Schisms. The Words of the Ordinance are these: *We the Lords and Commons assembled in the Parliament of England, having entered into a Solemn League and Covenant to endeavour sincerely, really, and constantly, the Reformation of Religion in Doctrine, Discipline, and Worship, and the Extirpa-*
tion

tion of Popery, Superstition, Heresy, Schism, Prophanes, and whatsoever shall be found contrary to sound Doctrine and the Power of Godliness; and having found the Presence of God wonderfully assisting in this Cause, especially since our said Engagement, in Pursuance of the said Covenant, have thought fit (lest we partake in other Men's Sins, and thereby be in Danger to receive of their Plagues) to set forth this our deep Sense of the great Dishonour of God, and the perilous Condition that this Kingdom is in, thro' the horrible Blasphemies and damnable Heresies vented and spread abroad therein, tending to the Subversion of the Faith, Contempt of the Ministry and Ordinances of Jesus Christ; and as we are resolved to employ and improve, to the utmost of our Power, that nothing be done or said against the Truth, but for the Truth; so we desire that both ourselves and the whole Kingdom may be deeply humbled before the Lord for that great Reproach and Contempt which hath been cast upon his Name and saving Truth, and for that swift Destruction that we may justly fear will fall upon the immortal Souls of them who are, or may be, drawn away, by giving Heed to seducing Spirits; in the hearty and tender Compassion whereof, we the said Lords and Commons do order and ordain, That Wednesday, being the 10th Day of March next, be set a-part for a Day of public Humiliation for the Growth and Spreading of Errors, Heresies, and Blasphemies; to be observed in all Places within the Kingdom of England, Dominion of Wales, and Town of Berwick upon Tweed, and to seek God for his Direction and Assistance for the suppressing and preventing the same.

And are these the Ways and Means that the Houses of Parliament have thought upon for suppressing Heresies, Errors, and Blasphemies, to desire that a Toleration of them may be established by a Law? Is the laying of a Foundation to propagate Heresy and Schism the best Way to extirpate the same? Are these the Fruits and Effects

Pro-An. 22. Car. 1.
1647.
December,

of

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

December.

of their solemn Fast and Humiliation? Certainly
God will not be so mocked.

‘The Covenant doth also oblige us mutually to
preserve the Authority of the Supreme Magistrate,
the Privileges of Parliament, and firm Peace
and Union between the Kingdoms to all Poste-
rity; and is it not visible that many of those
Sectaries, with their Adherents and Abettors, do,
by their pernicious Doctrines and Actions, offer
Violence to the King’s Person and Authority, and
against the Rights and Privileges of Parliament,
so as there is not any one Article of the Solemn
League and Covenant which is not, in an high
Degree, violated by them; and shall a Tola-
ration be established for all such? The opposing
the Covenant and Reformation of Religion, the
dividing betwixt the King and his People, or
making any Faction among the People contrary
to this League and Covenant, were formerly the
Characters of our Enemies; and whosoever do
maintain and act these Things (tho’ they should
assume to themselves the Name of Saints) are still
to be accounted Incendiaries, Malignants, and
evil Instruments; and we are obliged by Cove-
nant, with Faithfulness, to endeavour the Discove-
ry of all such, that they may be brought to public
Trial, and receive condign Punishment.

‘And tho’ it be far from our Intentions that
pious and peaceable Men should be troubled, be-
cause in every Thing they cannot conform them-
selves to Presbyterian Government; (for we ne-
ver did oppose such an Indulgence to their Per-
sons as is agreeable to the Word of God, may
stand with the public Peace, and is not destructive
to the Order and Government of the Church)
yet we do from our very Souls abhor such a ge-
neral and vast Toleration as is expressed in this
Proposition. And if the Houses, which God
forbid, shall adhere thereunto, and insist that it
may be established, we do protest against it as
that which is expressly contrary to the Word of
God;

‘ God; utterly repugnant to the Solemn League
 ‘ and Covenant; destructive to Reformation and
 ‘ Uniformity in Religion; altogether inconsistent
 ‘ with the Declarations and Professions of the
 ‘ Houses; against the Treaty between the King-
 ‘ doms; directly opposite to the Example and Prac-
 ‘ tice of all the Reformed Churches; and as that
 ‘ which will unavoidably subvert all Order and
 ‘ Government, and introduce a World of Confu-
 ‘ sion. Our Minds are astonished, and our Bowels
 ‘ are moved within us, when we think of the bit-
 ‘ ter Fruits and sad Consequences of such a Tole-
 ‘ ration: What horrid Blasphemies against God!
 ‘ What vile Abominations! What pernicious Doc-
 ‘ trine to the Subversion and Perdition of Souls!
 ‘ What Disobedience to the Magistrates! What
 ‘ Violation of Duties between Persons of the nearest
 ‘ Relation! What Differences and Divisions in
 ‘ Families and Congregations it will bring forth!
 ‘ What bitter Heart-Burnings it will beget and
 ‘ perpetuate to Posterity! Nay, it is impossible for
 ‘ us to express what infinite Distraction, Disorder,
 ‘ and Confusion it will make, both in Church and
 ‘ State, throughout all the three Kingdoms; and
 ‘ therefore we do obtest the Houses of Parliament
 ‘ by the Solemn League and Covenant, (which
 ‘ they have made in the Presence of Almighty God,
 ‘ the Searcher of all Hearts, with a true Intention
 ‘ to perform the same, as they shall answer at that
 ‘ Great Day, when the Secrets of all Hearts shall
 ‘ be disclosed) and by all the Promises, Professions,
 ‘ and Declarations wherewith they induced the
 ‘ Kingdom of *Scotland* to an Engagement and Con-
 ‘ junction with them in this Cause, that they do
 ‘ not establish such an impious Toleration, as can-
 ‘ not but draw down the Judgment of God, and
 ‘ make a Rent between the two Kingdoms, united
 ‘ by so many Ties and Relations, which we desire
 ‘ to strengthen and cherish, and to continue to all
 ‘ Posterity.
 ‘ That next to Religion, wherein we differ in
 ‘ Judgment from the Propositions, is concerning
 ‘ the

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December.

the Power and Interest of the Crown. We are obliged by our Covenant, Allegiance, and the Duty of Subjects, not to diminish, but to support, the King's just Power and Greatness: The Question then is, Wherein his Royal Authority and just Power doth consist? And we affirm, and hope it cannot be denied, that Royal Power and Authority is chiefly in making and enacting Laws, and in protecting and defending their Subjects, which are the very Essence and Being of all Kings; and the Exercise of that Power is the chief Part and Duty of their Royal Office and Function, and the Sceptre and Sword are the Badges of that Power; yet the new Preface prepared, with other Parts of these new Propositions, takes away the King's Negative Voice, and cuts off all Royal Power and Right in the making of Laws, contrary to the former Practice of this and all other Kingdoms; for the Legislative Power in some Monarchies is *penes Principem solum*, and their Laws are called *Principum Placita*; which is the highest and most absolute Kind of Sovereignty: And in other Kingdoms and Monarchies, the Power of making Laws is by Compact between the Prince and People, or according to the Constitution, Practice, and Usage of the several Kingdoms; in the last the Power of the King is least, but best regulated, where neither the King alone without his Parliament, nor the Parliament without the King, can make Laws, and where nothing enacted by the one without the Consent of the other can have the Force of a Law: And altho' we will rather profess *Ignorantiam & Falsitatem Juris alieni*, than take upon us to judge of the Laws of another Kingdom; yet it seems to be very clear and evident by the Practice and Usage of all Times, by the Parliament's own Declarations, and to be consonant to Reason and Law, that the King without the Houses of Parliament, or the Houses of Parliament without the King, cannot enact any Laws, but both jointly; and therefore the Laws are some Times called

called the King's Laws, some Times the Laws
of the Land and Acts of Parliament; and the
Form of Acts of Parliament some Times begin
with the Word *Concessimus*, or *Statuit Rex*; and
of later Times, *Laws and Statutes*, as being en-
acted by the King, with the Consent and Advice
of the Lords and Commons. All which do im-
port the King's Power and Consent as to the
making of Laws; so that there can be no Law
made, and have the Force of a Law, without the
King; which likewise is clear by the Expressions
of the King's Answer, *Le Roy le veult, le Roy*
s'avisera; so as it is clear from the Words of
Assent when Statutes are made, and from the
Words of Dissent, that the King's Power in ma-
king of Laws is one of the chiefest Jewels of the
Crown, and an essential Part of Sovereignty; and
if the King had no Power nor Consent in making
of Laws he would be less than a Subject; some-
times the King's Denial had been better than
his Assent to the Desires of the Houses of Par-
liament, as when Kings have assented to the
taking away the reading of Scripture from the
Laity, as *Henry VIII.* did; or to introduce Pope-
ry, as *Queen Mary*: And since neither Kings
nor Parliaments have the Judgment of Infalli-
bility, it must certainly be the best where Laws
are made with the Consent both of the King and
Parliament, which is the strongest Bulwark of
the People's Liberty, and Supporter of the King's
Authority; and the King being King over divers
Nations, this Form of Constitution, where neither
the King without his Parliament, nor the Par-
liament without the King, can make Laws, is a
good and safe Security to preserve his Kingdoms
in Peace from injuring one another, and to pro-
tect his Subjects from Injury among themselves.
The Houses of Parliament, answering an Ar-
gument against the King's passing the Bill for
the Militia, make this Reply^a, *If we had said (as*
we

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

December.

^a In November, 1642. — *Husband's Collections*, 4to, p. 710,
and 727.

AN. 23. CAR. I.

1647.

December.

‘ we did not) that the King had been bound to pass
 ‘ all Bills that should be offered to him by both Houses
 ‘ of Parliament, without any Limitation or Quali-
 ‘ fication of Reason and Justice, yet such a Suppo-
 ‘ sition as this could not fall upon a Parliament,
 ‘ as if they could desire such a Thing; much
 ‘ less that a King were obliged for to grant it. And,
 ‘ We did and do say, That the Sovereign Power
 ‘ doth reside in the King and both Houses of Par-
 ‘ liament, and that his Majesty’s Negative Voice
 ‘ doth not import a Liberty for his Majesty to deny
 ‘ any Thing as he pleaseth, though never so requisite
 ‘ and necessary for the Kingdom; and yet we did not
 ‘ nor do say, That such Bills as his Majesty is bound,
 ‘ both in Conscience and Justice to pass, shall notwith-
 ‘ standing be Law without his Consent; so far are
 ‘ we from taking away his Negative Voice. Where-
 ‘ fore the Power in making Laws, even according
 ‘ to the Parliament’s own Declarations, cannot be
 ‘ taken away from the King, and he required to
 ‘ assent to all such Laws as the Houses shall think
 ‘ fit, according to the Preface of these new Propo-
 ‘ sitions, without a Change of the Constitution and
 ‘ Fundamental Government of the Kingdom.

‘ Concerning the Power of the Militia; we do
 ‘ desire, and shall be willing to agree, that it may
 ‘ be so settled as that neither the King, nor any
 ‘ other, be able to disturb or infringe the Peace
 ‘ now to be agreed upon; and we think that, in
 ‘ his Message from *Carisbrook* Castle, he hath of-
 ‘ fered that which should be very satisfactory; but
 ‘ that the King, his Posterity, and Crown, should
 ‘ for ever be divested of all Power and Right of the
 ‘ Militia, is different from our Judgments; for if
 ‘ the Crown have no Power of the Militia, how
 ‘ can they be able to resist their Enemies and the
 ‘ Enemies of the Kingdom, and protect their Sub-
 ‘ jects, or keep Friendship or Correspondence with
 ‘ their Allies? All Kings, by their Royal Office
 ‘ and Oath of Coronation, are obliged to protect
 ‘ their Laws and Subjects; it were strange then
 ‘ for ever to seclude the Crown from that Power
 ‘ which,

which, by the Oath of Coronation, they are obliged to perform, and the Obedience whereunto falleth within the Oath of Allegiance; and certainly, if the King and his Posterity shall have no Power in making Laws nor in the Militia, it roots up the strongest Foundation of Honour and Safety which the Crown affords; and will be interpreted, in the Eyes of the World, to be a Wrestring of the Sceptre and Sword out of their Hands.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

It is very far from our Desires that Monarchy should be at an absolute Height of arbitrary and tyrannical Power; neither desire we just monarchical Power to be wronged and rendered contemptible; but to have such a golden Moderity, as they may be able to protect their Subjects and oppose their Enemies, according to the fundamental Laws and antient Constitution of the Kingdom.

Before the last Propositions were sent to his Majesty at *Newcastle*, both in verbal Debates and in our Writings, we did shew that we were unsatisfied concerning several Particulars contained in those Propositions; particularly when we did consent, that the Power and Exercise of the Militia should be settled in the Houses of Parliament for a Time, we did it with this Provision, That it were understood to be without Prejudice to the Right and Interest of the Crown, and that the King and his Posterity be not totally excluded, and rendered incapable to protect their Subjects and oppose the Enemies of the Kingdom. And further, when we gave Way to the sending of those Propositions, we did declare it to be our Judgment, That divers Things craved therein were such as Peace or War ought not to depend upon the Grant or Refusal of them. We ever did, and must still, hold it as a good Rule in the making of a Peace, that the more moderate and reasonable our Desires be, we may expect the firmer Peace; wherefore, as in the Difference betwixt the King and the Parliament, we think it very unjust to exclude the King from his just Power

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

Power in the Militia; so, when we look upon the Liberty of the Subject, we think neither King nor Parliament ought to keep up an Army in the Field, when the War is ended, to the vast Expence and utter Impoverishment of the People; the Train'd Bands of the Kingdom, which may be made use of with little Charge, and the Forces which may be kept up in some chief Garrisons, being sufficient to suppress any Commotion or Disturbance that is likely to arise from the Occasion of the late Troubles: And we conceive an Army should be kept up only in the Case of a powerful Insurrection within the Kingdom, or of a foreign Invasion from without; but to maintain a perpetual Army in the Bowels of the Kingdom, upon the Expence of the Subject, when there is no Enemy to fight with, is but to enslave the King and Kingdom under a military Bondage.

When our Army returned to *Scotland* it was confidently expected that the Houses should have speedily disbanded their Army, (the War being at an End, and no visible Enemy in the Kingdom) and proceeded to the settling of a Peace here, and to the effectual Relief of *Ireland*; but now after a full Year's Delay, we do not find amongst all these Propositions any Thing concerning the Disbanding the Armies, or sending Relief to that distressed Kingdom; but, on the contrary, there is only Provision made for keeping up Armies and raising Money for their Maintenance; we must therefore declare to the Houses, That it is our Judgment and earnest Desire, that there may be a Proposition for disbanding Armies in both Kingdoms. Armies were raised in Defence of Religion, the King's Person and Authority, the Privileges of the Parliament, and the Liberty of the Subject; and when they are no more useful for these Ends, and the Houses may consult freely and act securely without any hostile Opposition, it is high Time to disband them, that the Laws of the Kingdom may take Place.

Some

Some of our Neighbour Nations are necessi-
tated to keep up Armies, because they have En-
emies that lie contiguous and adjoining to their
Borders, but the Sea is our Bulwark; and if we
study Amity and Peace amongst ourselves, and
entertain the Union between the Kingdoms un-
der his Majesty's Government, we need not fear
foreign Invasions. It is a Custom in other Na-
tions to keep up Armies to levy Money by Force;
but these are free Kingdoms, and when they have
been fighting for Liberty and Freedom, we trust
that it was not intended that War should be made
a Trade, or that their Wars shall end in Slavery.
The Continuance of Armies will certainly in-
crease Factions and Divisions, to the great weak-
ening of the Kingdom, and will, in the End,
expose us a Prey to our Enemies; neither is it
possible, so long as they are kept up, that there
can be a settled Peace. The Charge of enter-
taining Armies is needless when there is no Ene-
my, and extremely grievous to the People who
before were willing to bear it, when they saw a
Necessity for it; and now, after so great Suffer-
ings and vast Expence of Treasure to Soldiers for
many Years together, the Burthen is become in-
supportable. For these, and many other Rea-
sons which we could add, we hold it most neces-
sary that as there is a Proposition for Payment of
the Arrears of the Army, so also there be an Ad-
dition unto it for their Disbanding.

Touching conferring Titles of Honour; we
desire the King, who is the Fountain of Honour,
may not be deprived of that which, in all Ages
and Kingdoms, hath been held and esteemed a
Flower of the Crown, and wherewith Kings do
usually recompence the Virtue and Merits of such
as do memorable Services to the Crown or King-
dom.

And as to the disposing of the great Offices of
State, and naming of Privy Counsellors; we con-
ceive his Majesty's Offer in his late Message of
the

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

the 17th of *November* to be so reasonable, as may give Satisfaction to the Houses.

That which we are to speak of next in Order, is the Union and Joint Interest of the Kingdoms; where we wish we had not just Cause to expostulate, that the Houses have omitted the Covenant in these Propositions; rejected all that concerns Unity and Uniformity in Religion; have altered the former Proposition concerning Confirmation of the Treaties, and desired now only an Approbation of the making of them, which amounts to no more than an Act of Indenture. They have also, in that Proposition, omitted these Words, *With all other Ordinances and Proceedings passed betwixt the two Kingdoms, and whereunto they are obliged by the aforesaid Treaties*; which Words were inserted in the former Propositions after a serious Debate; and therefore if the Houses intend to make good and perform all Ordinances passed betwixt the Kingdoms, according to their manifold Professions, we desire that this Proposition may remain as before without any Alteration or Omission. The Proposition desiring his Majesty's Consent to what the two Kingdoms shall agree upon, in pursuance of the Articles of the Large Treaty, which are not yet finished, is omitted; the joint Declaration of both Kingdoms is likewise omitted; and generally, throughout these Propositions, all Expressions of *joint Interest* are left out.

And whereas formerly the Propositions of both Kingdoms were drawn up together in one Body; now, for separating the Interest of the Kingdoms, the Propositions for *England* are drawn up a-part; which new Way when we did observe, and what essential Alterations, Omissions, and Additions were made in the Matter of the Propositions, we desired a Conference for removing all Differences, and that we might the more speedily attain to an Agreement, but it was not granted; however we have herein discharged our Duty

'Duty, that we used all Means to prevent Differences; that we, for our Part, study to observe the Treaty betwixt the Kingdoms, where it is expressly provided in the eighth Article, *That no Cessation, Pacification, or Agreement for Peace whatsoever, shall be made by either Kingdom, or the Armies of either Kingdom, without the mutual Advice and Consent of both Kingdoms, or their Committees in that Behalf appointed.*

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December.

'And here we think it not amiss to remember the Houses of Parliament of their Expressions, in a Declaration to the Lords the States General of the United Provinces of the Low Countries, shewing why they did not admit of the Mediation of the *Dutch* Ambassador between the King and Parliament, in the Manner and Way as was desired, without Application to the Kingdom of Scotland. The Words of the Declaration are, *That both the Kingdoms are mutually engaged in the Propositions and Treaty thereupon, and that neither could admit of their Mediation without Consent of the other; because the two Kingdoms were united by Solemn League and Covenant made to Almighty God, and by League each to other, as one entire Body to prosecute this Cause; and that in pursuance thereof Propositions for a safe and well grounded Peace were then preparing, in a joint Way, by the Parliaments of both Kingdoms.* And whereas the *Dutch* Ambassadors had propounded, and offered from the King, the calling of a National Synod to correct and redress the Government of the Church by Bishops; one of the Answers which was given thereunto in the said Declaration was, *That not only the Kingdom of Scotland and the Members of both Houses of Parliament, but also many Thousands of others of his Majesty's Subjects of England and Ireland, stand bound by their late National Covenant to endeavour the Extirpation of Church-Government by Bishops, both in England and Ireland, and to hinder the setting of it up again in the Kingdom of Scotland.* All which being duly considered,

An. 21. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

we are extremely sorry that the Houses of Parliament should not only have given Way to, but countenanced the Army in, their meddling with the Settlement of the Peace of the Kingdom, and authorized Commissioners to treat with them upon Propositions of Peace, which we take to be the Reason that these Propositions are in so many Things agreeable to the Proposals of the Army, especially in Matters of Religion: And without all Question, it had been more agreeable to the Treaty betwixt the Kingdoms, and to former Professions and Proceedings, that the Propositions of Peace had been framed and agreed upon with Advice and Consent of both Kingdoms. We have known the Houses of Parliament, formerly, to look upon it as an Offence of an high Nature for any other than themselves to meddle in the Matters of Peace, especially the Commanders and Officers of the Army, though in prime Place, and of great and eminent Fidelity; making it only proper for them to be exercised in Matters of War, according as they should receive Directions from the Houses; and much more would the Houses have been offended if any Officers of their Army should have taken upon them to offer Proposals to the King for settling a Peace without Authority from the Houses, as we are informed some Officers of Sir Thomas Fairfax's Army have done. If the Houses of Parliament had, according to our earnest Desire of the third of *March*, 1647, when they modell'd their Army, made Choice of such Officers as were known to be zealous for the Reformation of Religion, and of that Uniformity which both Kingdoms are obliged to promote and maintain; and if they had also renewed their Declaration, made the 20th of *September*, 1643, that they could not confide in such Persons to have or execute Place or Authority in the Armies raised by them, who did not approve and consent to the Covenant; or if their Ordinance of the 15th of *February*, 1647, which appoint-

eth

eth all Officers to be employed in Sir Thomas Fairfax's Army to take the National League and Covenant of both Kingdoms, within twenty Days after they were approved of by both Houses, had been really put in Execution, we are very confident it would have prevented a World of Inconveniences and Evils which have ensued upon the Neglect thereof. We shall not further insist upon this Subject, neither shall we enlarge ourselves upon the Proceedings of the Army; but we must always put the Houses of Parliament in mind, that our greatest Strength is in a good Agreement with the King, and a firm Union between the Kingdoms.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
December.

There is left out of these Propositions the Proposition concerning the City of London; whereby they were to have the Government of their own Militia and the Tower, and Assurance that their Forces shall not be compelled to go out of the City, for Military Service, without their own Consent; also an Act of Parliament confirming their Charters, Customs, Liberties, &c. and an Act, that all the Bye-Laws and Ordinances of Common Council, made or to be made, should be as effectual, to all Intents and Purposes, as if they were enacted by Authority of Parliament; with Liberty also for them to repeal these Ordinances as they shall see Cause. These Things were formerly desired in the Propositions in behalf of the City, because of their Affection, Forwardness, Faithfulness, and Zeal in the common Cause of both Kingdoms; and we conceive ourselves in Duty obliged to desire that this Proposition may not be omitted, but presented to his Majesty for his Assent.

Concerning the Proposition for taking away the Court of Wards and Forest Lands from his Majesty; it cannot be expected, when the Houses of Parliament shall take into their Consideration the Glory and Greatness wherein their Kings have lived, that they will ever take away or diminish any Part of that Patrimony and Revenue,

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

which is necessary for supporting the Dignity of their Royal Palaces, without giving a full Recompence for the same.

Touching the Proposition for Sale and Disposal of the Lands of Deans and Chapters, &c. as the Houses shall think fit; we have only this to say, That we have always heard that those Lands were reserved by the Houses for the Maintenance of the Ministry; and if they should be otherwise disposed of, it will prove a great Discouragement to faithful Pastors, make their Subsistence to depend upon the Benevolence and Charity of their Hearers, and give Occasion to the People (where Ministers are wanting for Lack of Maintenance) to follow after the Sectaries and Tub Preachers.

We desire also to see the Ordinances and Indemnity mentioned in the Propositions.

And now to conclude; we shall here set down most of our Desires, which are,

1. That there may be a personal Treaty with his Majesty at *London*.

2. That the Preface may be the same as in the former Propositions.

3. That the Honourable Houses, according to the solemn Vows, Treaties, Declarations, and Engagements, between the two Kingdoms, would, after so very long Delay, establish the Solemn League and Covenant; and that his Majesty be desired to give his Royal Assent for confirming the same, by Act of Parliament, in both Kingdoms.

4. That the settling of Reformation of, and Uniformity in, Religion, according to the Covenant, in *England* and *Ireland*, be likewise desired in these new Propositions; and in particular, that the Confession of Faith, Directory of Worship, and Form of Church-Government and Catechism, agreed upon by the Assembly of Divines, and presented to the Houses, be established.

5. That, by Act of Parliament, effectual Course be taken for suppressing Blasphemy, Heresy, Schism

‘ Schism, and all such scandalous Doctrines and Practices as are contrary to the Light of Nature, or to the known Principles of Christianity; whether concerning Faith, Worship, or Conversation, or to the Power of Godliness; or which may be destructive to Order and Government, or to the Peace of the Church or the Kingdom.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
December.

6. ‘ That the Ordinance concerning the Calling and Sitting of the Assembly of Divines be desired to be confirmed by Act of Parliament, as in the former Propositions.

7. ‘ That the Proposition for Confirmation of the Treaties betwixt the Kingdoms, and all Ordinances and Proceedings betwixt them, be expressed as in the former Propositions; and that the Treaty for the Return of the *Scots* Army, of the Date of the 23d of *December* 1646, be inserted amongst the rest.

8. ‘ That his Majesty’s Assent be desired to what the two Kingdoms shall agree upon, in prosecution of the Articles of the Large Treaty, which are not yet finished; and that all other Things concerning joint Interest, or the Kingdom of *Scotland* in particular, which are omitted, be inserted and expressed as in the former Propositions.

9. ‘ That the Armies in both Kingdoms, which were raised for Reformation and Preservation of Religion and for the Defence of the King’s Person and Safety of the Kingdoms, be not kept up to hinder Reformation of Religion, and the King from his Government, or to be a Burthen to the Subjects since the War is ended; but that they may have due Satisfaction of their Arrears, and be disbanded, without which there can be no real nor lasting Peace: And that all Armies being disbanded here, speedy Relief may be sent to *Ireland*.

10. ‘ That an Act of Oblivion, which is the Bond of Peace, be agreed upon to be passed in the Parliaments of both Kingdoms.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

11. ' That the King be restored to his Rights
' and Revenues; and particularly that the Crown be
' not excluded from the Power of making Laws,
' (which is as essential to Kings, as to govern by
' Laws and sway the Sceptre) nor from the Power
' of the Militia; without which they can neither
' protect their Subjects, oppose their and the King-
' dom's Enemies, nor keep Friendship with their
' Allies.

12. ' That there be a Conclusion added to the
' Propositions, promising our real Endeavours (as
' was done in the Propositions treated upon at *Ux-*
' *bridge*) that his Majesty may live in the Splendor
' and Glory of his Royal Progenitors, as becometh
' his Royal Place and Dignity; and so all Difference
' and Troubles may end in mutual Confidence
' and Rejoicing; the King may enjoy the Com-
' fort of his Royal Consort the Queen, and his Chil-
' dren, with other Contentments; and we, after so
' great Distractions and long-continued Sufferings,
' may reap the blessed Fruits of Truth and Peace
' under his Government. And as it is very far from
' our Thoughts and Intentions, in expressing our
' Differences upon the Propositions, to provoke or
' give Offence; so we trust that our Freedom, in
' Discharge of the Trust committed to us, proceed-
' ing from our Zeal to Religion, Loyalty to the King,
' and Love to Peace, shall receive a candid Inter-
' pretation from the Honourable Houses; and that
' they will, in their Wisdom, not slight the Desires
' of a Kingdom, who, in the Time of *England's*
' greatest Danger, esteemed no Hazard too hard
' for their Assistance; and are now seeking nothing
' but the Performance of the mutual Obligements,
' Declarations, and Treaties between the two
' Kingdoms, and to prevent the Dangers which
' may ensue upon the Violation and Breach of so
' many solemn Engagements.

' The Houses of Parliament have frequently pro-
' fessed that the chief End of their War was the
' Reformation and Establishment of Religion ac-
' cording

According to the Covenant; and they have often promised and declared to the King and to all the World, (not without deep Attestations to the Name of God) that no Trouble or Success should ever make them wrong or diminish the Power of the Crown, which were the chief Motives and Arguments, that induced Scotland to engage with them in this War. *Let therefore that be given to God which is God's, and to Caesar what is Caesar's*; whereby it may be evident that you are not unmindful of the solemn Vows you made to God, in the Time of Distress, for the Reformation of Religion; and it may also really appear, that the Advantages and Power which Success hath put into your Hands, hath not lessened your Loyalty to the King; and, according to our many Professions and near Relations, let us really and cordially cherish and strengthen the Union between the two Kingdoms, under his Majesty, by all the Pledges of reciprocal Kindness; that so Religion and Righteousness may flourish, and both Kingdoms, languishing under the heavy Pressures and Calamities of an unnatural War, may live in Peace and Plenty.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
December.

By Command of the Commissioners for the Parliament of Scotland,

JO. CHIESLEY.

The Answer agreed on by both Houses to this long Remonstrance, was only this:

That the present Condition of the Affairs of this Kingdom will not admit of any long Delay in sending Commissioners of Parliament to the King, according to their Instructions lately communicated unto your Lordships; and therefore the Houses are resolved the Commissioners shall go on Monday next.

That the Papers from your Lordships to the Houses are so long, that a present Answer to them cannot be expected from the Houses: But the Houses will take them into Consideration with all convenient Speed; and do not doubt but to clear

The Parliament's
Answer.

Ap. 25. Car. I.
1647.

December.

‘ clear it to your Lordships, and all the World,
‘ that they have proceeded therein without any
‘ Violation of the Treaties; and, therefore, they
‘ are very sensible that such Aspersions should be
‘ laid upon the Houses; and desire they may be for-
‘ borne for the future; and, in the mean Time,
‘ they have now sent to offer it to your Lordships,
‘ if your Lordships have any Thing to present to
‘ the King, in behalf of the Kingdom of *Scotland*,
‘ that it may be ready to be sent at the same Time,
‘ when the Commissioners of both Houses are ap-
‘ pointed to go with those Things which are to
‘ be presented to his Majesty in the Behalf of the
‘ Kingdom of *England*.’

Dec. 20. The Commissioners appointed by the Parliament were now set out on their Journey to the Isle of *Wight*, to present the four Bills to the King; where we shall leave them some Time, and see what was doing at home. The Lords were busy, for some Days, in trying private Causes, on Writs of Error, &c. Only on the 23d the following Letter from the *Scots* Commissioners was presented to that House and read, but no Notice is taken of any Answer to it.

*For the Right Honourable the SPEAKER of the
House of PEERS pro Tempore,*

Worcester-House, Dec. 20, 1647.

Right Honourable,

Another Paper
from the Scots
Commissioners,
relating to the
Propositions of
Peace.

‘ WE have ever been so forward for settling
‘ of a Peace, as we have been always
‘ ready to lay hold on all Opportunities, and to
‘ make use of every Mean, which we conceived
‘ might further and advance it: And if the Houses
‘ had been pleased to consider our former Papers,
‘ or had hearkened to our Desires for a Conference,
‘ there had been Time sufficient both for Debate
‘ and Consideration of what is contained in our
‘ Paper of the 17th of this Instant; and therefore
‘ we are very sorry that so little Regard hath been
‘ had

had to our Desires, as not to take them into Consideration before the sending of their Commissioners to the King. We see no Reason why our expressing our Sense upon the Alterations made in these new Propositions, so essentially different from the former, and upon the Way now intended to send them to his Majesty, should be interpreted a laying of an Aspersions upon the Houses; but that our Zeal to Religion, Loyalty to the King, and our earnest Desire of Unity between the Kingdoms, all now in so great Danger, hath given just Cause that our Expressions should be more pathetic than ordinary; knowing how tender the Kingdom of Scotland hath been, and is, of the Covenant and Treaties between the Kingdoms, and how sensible they will be of the Violation thereof; and as for our former Judgment concerning Propositions to be sent to his Majesty, we have expressed it in our Papers delivered to the Houses on Friday; and so we rest

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

LOUDON, HEN. KENNEDY,
CHA. ERSKINE, RO. BARCLAY.

Dec. 24. A Letter from Sir Thomas Fairfax, with the Results of the General Council of the Army, addressed to the Speaker of the House of Peers, were read.

Windsor, Dec. 23, 1647.

My Lord,

AT a General Council, this Day held, the inclosed Particulars were agreed upon to be presented to your Lordships; which I humbly desire may be taken into Consideration, and I remain

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

T. FAIRFAX.

The

An. 23. Car. 1. *The RESULTS of the General Council of the Army, held at Windsor, Dec. 23, 1647.*

December,

A Declaration from General Fairfax and his Council of War, concerning an Ordinance preparing for taking away free Quarter, &c.

UPON the late Resolutions in Parliament, concerning the taking away of free Quarter and disbanding of Supernumeraries, we find divers Things which require a further Consideration, in order to the more secure and effectual Dispatch of the Work; wherein we shall shortly offer our humble Advice and Desire.

But at present we find an immediate Necessity to take Notice of what hath passed on *Tuesday* last the 21st Instant, in an Ordinance prepared for the bringing in of six Months Arrears of Assessments by the 15th of *January* next, and for the taking away of free Quarter thereupon, wherein we observe,

1st, It is provided and ordained, That no Officer nor Soldier shall enter the House of any Person or Persons, who shall duly pay their Assessments, without his Consent; except Inns, Taverns, Victualling-Houses, or Ale-Houses.

2^{dly}, Nor shall take any Provisions for Horse or Men without the Consent of the Owner, and due Satisfaction given to him for the same.

As to the first of these, we must desire the Houses to consider, that if the Soldiery must not have so much as Lodging or Stable Room, but at Inns and Ale-Houses, without the Owners Consent, it will follow,

1. That it is like to fall out at Times, and in many Towns, that there will be more Men and Horses to quarter than the Inns and Ale-Houses have Room for.

2. That the Soldiers must either pay for their Victuals or Horse-Meat at such Rate as the Inns where they quarter will reckon to other Guests, or else give large Satisfaction to the Inn-Keepers for their Lodging and Stable-Room, so as they may have Liberty to take their Victuals and Horse-Meat at other Places where they can agree for it cheaper; otherwise an Inn-Keeper, where

where the Lodgings or Stable-Room are taken up by Soldiers, will lose the whole Benefit of his Inn, which is his Livelihood: And if the Soldiers must pay the Inn-Keepers at the Rate of other Guests, or satisfy him for his Lodging or Stable-Room at such Rates as to countervail his ordinary Gain, it is most evident that the Soldiers whole Pay, nor scarce the Double of it, would satisfy at such Rates; and unless either the Pay or the Way of Quarter be such as that the Soldier may, above the Charges of his Victuals or Horse-Meat, save something for other Uses, we believe few Soldiers will be found to serve that intend to be honest.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December.

And we fear the Soldiery, that shall consider the Consequence of these Limitations of Quarter, may be too apt to misunderstand it as if those that shall not have the Benefit of disbanding now as Supernumeraries, should be left worse than to be disbanded, even to be necessitated to a sudden Dissolution, without any Benefit of Condition at all.

For our Parts (if it be found that the Safety and Quiet of the Kingdom will admit of it) we shall be as ready to disband all as any; but whilst the Parliament finds Cause to continue any Forces in the Kingdom, we must earnestly desire they may have that Allowance of necessary Billet, which is allowed in all Nations where any Soldiers are kept; and particularly that they may still be allowed Lodging and Stable-Room at such Houses where they shall, by Order, be duly and equally billeted.

To the second Particular in the Ordinance a-forementioned; we are well satisfied (and presume all Soldiers will be content, when they shall be duly supplied with Pay in Hand wherewithall) to pay for their Victuals and Horse-Meat at such Rates as they can agree upon; only we must desire these Cases may be provided for:

1. That for the first Fortnight after the Soldiery shall be drawn into Towns and Garrisons,

and

An. 25. Car. I.

1647.

December.

‘ and untill the Parliament shall there supply them
 ‘ with Pay, (as in our late Propositions to the
 ‘ Commissioners) they may have Horse-Meat and
 ‘ Man’s Meat at the Places where they shall be
 ‘ billeted, at the Rates allowed for the Army,
 ‘ which the Officers are to undertake to see paid.

2. ‘ That upon all Occasions of Marching,
 ‘ where any Soldiers shall, by Order, be billeted,
 ‘ (not lying above two Nights at a Place) they
 ‘ may have their Diet at the same Rate, and
 ‘ Horse-Meat also, if the Landlord have it of his
 ‘ own.

*By the Appointment of his Excellency Sir Thomas
 Fairfax and the General Council of the Army,*

J. RUSHWORTH.

Notwithstanding this Remonstrance, an Ordinance passed both Houses, for easing the Country from the Burden of free Quarter, by fixing the Soldiers only on Inns and Victualling Houses, &c. But another was made for the speedy Payment of the Arrears due to the Army; and for Payment of the Soldiery out of Bishops Lands remaining unengaged, and out of Delinquents Estates; with other Ordinances and Orders, all for the Satisfaction of the Parliament’s new Masters the Army.

At this Time also the House of Commons nominated three or four of their Members, of every County in *England*, to go down to their respective Shires, and observe the following Instructions:

INSTRUCTIONS to the Members of the House that are in their respective Counties, or are now appointed to repair thither, for the speedy bringing in of six Months Assessments of the Arrears upon the Ordinance of the 60,000 l. per Menssem, for preventing of free Quarter, by paying the Army and disbanding of supernumerary Forces.

Instructions to the Commissioners appointed to collect the Arrears owing upon an Assessment for Pay of the Army.

I. ‘ YOU are, with all Speed, to make your
 ‘ Repair unto the County to which you
 ‘ are appointed to go.

II. ‘ You

II. ' You are, immediately upon your coming into the said County, and upon Receipt of these Instructions, to give Notice unto the Commissioners, Assessors, and Collectors for the 60,000 *l.* Assessment, for their meeting and assembling together; and to communicate unto them the Ordinance passed for the speedy Payment of six Months of the Assessment Arrears upon the Ordinance of 60,000 *l. per Menssem*; and to press unto them the Necessity of the Dispatch of that Service, in order to the taking away of free Quarter; and to let them know the great Expectation that the Parliament hath of their Diligence in that Business.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
December.

III. You are to employ your best Labour and Diligence, at public Meetings, with the Gentlemen and others of your County, to satisfy them of the Necessity of the speedy Dispatch of this Business, according to the Times appointed by Ordinance of Parliament; and to let them know the Ease and Advantage that will accrue to their County, by their ready Payment of the said six Months Arrear; and the Inconvenience that will fall upon them, by the continuing or coming of Soldiers to free Quarter among them, if they do not speedily pay the same.

IV. ' You are, with all convenient Speed, to give Account unto the House of your Proceedings, and what Obstructions you shall meet with in the carrying on of this Work; and what Likelihood or Assurance you shall have for bringing in of the Money by the Time appointed by the Parliament; and that you return the Name or Names of every Person or Persons that you shall find to be Hinderers or Opposers of this important Service.

V. ' You are to communicate these Instructions unto all such Members of the House of Commons as you shall find resident or abiding in your County, and to the rest of the Commissioners for the 60,000 *l.* Assessment; and require them to act and join with you in the proceeding

AN. 23. CAR. 1. and *Royston's* Edition of the *King's Works*, from
1647. which Authorities we give it.

December.

May it please your Majesty,

The Scots Commissioners Protest, delivered to the King, against the Propositions of Peace.

THERE is nothing which we have more constantly endeavoured, and do more earnestly desire, than a good Agreement and happy Peace between your Majesty and your Parliaments of both Kingdoms; neither have we left any Means untried, that, by united Councils with the Houses of the Parliament of *England*, and by making joint Applications to your Majesty, there might be a Composition of all Differences: But the new Propositions communicated to us by the Houses, and the Bills therewith presented to your Majesty, are so prejudicial to Religion, the Crown, and the Union and Interest of the Kingdoms, and so far different from the former Proceedings and Engagements betwixt the Kingdoms, as we cannot concur therein: Therefore we do, in the Name of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, dissent from these Propositions and Bills now tendered to your Majesty.

LOUDON, HEN. KENNEDY,
LAUDERDALE, ROBERT BARCLAY.
CHA. ERSKINE,

Dec. 31. A third Letter from the Earl of *Denbigh* came to the Lords, and was read; intimating only, That he, with the rest of the Commissioners, were on their Return from the King, to attend the two Houses; and that if their Lordships and the House of Commons would sit that Afternoon, he might have Opportunity to give an Account of the Employment they were pleased to intrust him with. Dated at *Bagshot*, *Dec. 31*, Five in the Morning.

On the same Day a Letter from Sir *Thomas Fairfax* was brought up from the House of Commons, directed as follows:

To the Right Hon. WILLIAM LENTHALL, Esq; An. 23. Car. I.
Speaker of the Honourable House of COMMONS. 1647.

S I R, Windsor, Dec. 30, 1647.

December.

Having lately received a Desire from Colonel Hammond out of the Isle of Wight, General Fairfax's Letter, desiring that he may not be accountable for the Person Directions about the King's Person of the King, (which I perceive doth arise from his Apprehension of the too great Weight of such a Charge) unless he had more particular Order for his Warrant and Direction; I have sent Sir William Constable, Lieutenant-Colonel Salmon, and Lieutenant-Colonel Goffe, to be for the present assisting to him therein, untill the Houses take such further Course as to their Wisdoms shall seem meet. This Business being of so great Concernment to the Kingdom, and too much for me to give a Resolution in, I held it my Duty earnestly to beg the Signification of your Pleasure, and such particular Directions as may be a Rule and Warrant both to mine and their Obedience who are to serve you, which will be faithfully observed by

Your humble Servant,

T. FAIRFAX.

Both Houses sat in the Afternoon of this Day, expecting the Commissioners from the King; who being arrived, the first Thing read was the following Letter from Colonel Hammond, Governor of the Isle of Wight:

For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.

My Lord, Carisbrook-Castle, Dec. 28. 1647.

Being present this Day when the King communicated to the Commissioners of Parliament his Answer to the Bills and Propositions on the same Subject.

VOL. XVI.

H h

lately

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

December.

‘ lately presented to him from both Houses of Parliament; and finding it so contrary to my Expectation, I thought it my Duty to take a stricter Care than ordinary of the Security of the Person of the King, and for removing all from about him that are not there by Authority of Parliament; and to take all other effectual Ways and Means to preserve his Majesty’s Person from departing hence, untill I receive the further Commands of the Houses.

‘ By the Blessing of God I shall omit nothing wherein I can serve the Parliament in relation to this dangerous Trust; but yet, my Lord, I must humbly beg it from you, because I know it is impossible long to secure the King here, that his Person may be removed as soon as conveniently he may, or else that I may be discharged from my Employment, it being a Burthen insupportable for me. I have entreated my Lord of *Denbigh* to report my humble Desires to your Lordships at large concerning the same.

‘ My Lord, give me Leave also to acquaint you with the great Chearfulness and Readiness I find in the Gentry and Inhabitants of this Island to your Service; which is such as I should much injure, in case I should not communicate it to your Lordships. I shall pray and hope for the Guidance of God upon your Councils in this Juncture, and endeavour that my Actions, rather than my Tongue or Pen, speak that I am,

Your Lordships most faithful

and humble Servant,

RO. HAMMOND.

After reading of this Letter, the Earl of *Denbigh* gave the Lords an Account, That he and the rest of the Commissioners had presented the four Bills and the Propositions to his Majesty, and that he had given them this Answer in Writing,

‘ which

which his Lordship delivered to the House, and was read in *hæc Verba*:^b

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

December.

For the SPEAKER of the LORDS House *pro Tempore*, to be communicated to the Lords and Commons in the Parliament of England at Westminster, and the Commissioners of the Parliament of Scotland.

CHARLES R.

THE Necessity of complying with all engaged Interests in these great Distempers, for a perfect Settlement of Peace, his Majesty finds to be none of the least Difficulties he hath met with since the Time of his Afflictions; which is too visible, when at the same Time that the two Houses of the English Parliament do present to his Majesty several Bills and Propositions for his Consent, the Commissioners for Scotland do openly protest against them: So that were there nothing in the Case but the Consideration of that Difference, his Majesty cannot imagine how to give such an Answer to what is now proposed, as thereby to promise himself his great End, a perfect Peace.

His Majesty's Answer to the four Bills and Propositions presented to him in the Isle of Wight.

And when his Majesty farther considers how impossible it is, in the Condition he now stands, to fulfil the Desires of his two Houses; since the only ancient and known Ways of passing Laws are either by his Majesty's personal Assent in the House of Peers, or by Commission under his Great Seal of England, he cannot but wonder at such Failings in the Manner of Address, which is now made unto him; unless his two Houses intend that his Majesty shall allow of a Great Seal made without his Authority, before there be any Consideration had thereupon in a Treaty: Which as it may hereafter hazard the Security itself, so, for the present, it seems very unreasonable to his Majesty. And though his Majesty is willing to believe that the Intention of very many in both

H h 2

Houses,

^b From the original Edition, printed for Richard Royston, at the Angel in Ivy-Lane.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

December.

Houses, in sending these Bills before a Treaty, was only to obtain a Trust from him, and not to take any Advantage, by passing them, to force other Things from him, which are either against his Conscience or Honour; yet his Majesty believes it clear to all Understandings, that these Bills contain, as they are now penned, not only the divesting himself of all Sovereignty, and that without Possibility of recovering it, either to him or his Successors, except by Repeal of those Bills, but also the making his Concessions guilty of the greatest Pressures that can be made upon the Subject; as in other Particulars, so by giving an arbitrary and unlimited Power to the two Houses for ever, to raise and levy Forces, for Land or Sea Service, on what Persons, without Distinction or Quality, and to what Numbers, they please: And likewise, for the Payment of them, to levy what Monies, in such Sort and by such Ways and Means, and consequently upon the Estates of whatsoever Persons, they shall think fit and appoint; which is utterly inconsistent with the Liberty and Property of the Subject, and his Majesty's Trust in protecting them. So that, if the major Part of both Houses shall think it necessary to put the rest of the Propositions into Bills, his Majesty leaves all the World to judge how unsafe it would be for him to consent thereunto: And if not, what a strange Condition, after the passing of these four Bills, his Majesty and all his Subjects would be cast into?

And here his Majesty thinks it not unfit to wish his two Houses to consider well the Manner of their proceeding; that when his Majesty desires a Personal Treaty with them for the settling of a Peace, they, in Answer, propose the very Subject Matter of the most essential Parts thereof to be first granted: A Thing which will be hardly credible to Posterity. Wherefore his Majesty declares, That neither the Desire of being freed from this tedious and irksome Condition of Life his Majesty hath so long suffered, nor the Apprehension of what may befall him, in case his two Houses shall not afford him a Personal Treaty, shall make him change his Resolution of not

con-

consenting to any *Act* till the whole Peace be concluded. Yet then he intends not only to give just and reasonable Satisfaction in the Particulars presented to him, but also to make good all other Concessions mentioned in his Message of the 17th of November last; which he thought would have produced better Effects than what he finds in the Bills and Propositions now presented unto him.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
December.

And yet his Majesty cannot give over, but now again earnestly presseth for, a Personal Treaty, (so passionately is he affected with the Advantages which Peace will bring to his Majesty and all his Subjects) of which he will not at all despair, there being no other visible Way to obtain a well-grounded Peace; However, his Majesty is very much at Ease within himself, for having fulfilled the Offices both of a Christian and of a King; and will patiently wait the good Pleasure of Almighty God, to incline the Hearts of his two Houses to consider their King, and to compassionate their Fellow-Subjects Miseries.

Given at *Carisbrook-Castle* in the Isle of *Wight*,
December 28, 1647.

The Lords, after reading this Message, ordered that the Earl of *Denbigh* should have Thanks given him for his Prudence and Faithfulness in the Carriage of this Business; and desired that his Lordship would put down the Particulars he mentioned in Writing. Ordered also that the King's Message should be taken into Consideration the next Morning.

With this last Answer of the King to the Desires of the Parliament ends the Kalendar Year of 1647; a Circumstance that opens but a melancholy Prospect of the succeeding one. It is strange that Mr. *Rushworth* should so wholly omit this remarkable Answer of the King's, that he does not so much as give us an Abstract of it. He only says, 'That this Day the Parliament's Commissioners came back from his Majesty, but bring with them little Satisfaction in answer to the four Bills.'

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

January.

And, in another Place, he tells us, 'That it was reported that the King should declare, If the Parliament would grant him 50,000*l.* a-year for the Court of Wards, and restore his Revenue; would grant that some Divines might consult with some of the Parliament for settling of Religion at the End of three Years; declare a Period to this Parliament now, that it end in a reasonable Time; agree that the Militia remain as it stood before this Parliament; and that an Act of Oblivion should be passed for all Parties, that then he would grant the four Bills.'—But this Report not having the Sanction of the *Journals* of either House to confirm it, we judge Apocryphal.—To proceed :

The Lords order
a strict Guard to
be kept over the
King.

January. The Lords began the new Year with a Vote of Approbation of Sir *Thomas Fairfax's* Conduct in relation to the King; and that he be desired to take special Care, by his Orders, for securing the Person of his Majesty. They likewise ordered a Letter to be sent to Colonel *Hammond*, authorizing and requiring him to keep a strict Guard over the King, and that he do obey such Orders and Directions therein as he shall receive from the General or both Houses of Parliament.

Jan. 4. The Commons having voted and passed a very great Business in regard to the King, which does immediately follow, applied themselves to make some salutary Orders and Ordinances, in respect to the Public, and the general Good of the Nation. They first appointed a very great Committee of their House, to consider of such Grievances as had been promised to the People to be redressed; and to give such Ease to their Burdens, their Freedoms and Liberties, as was fitting. They were also to consider of reforming the Courts of Justice and Proceedings at Law, Matters of Trade, and all other Things of public Concernment, which they might hold fit to be done for the Good and Weal of the People. This Committee were ordered to prepare Bills or Ordinances on these
Matters

Matters, and present them to the House; and, in order to begin this good Work well and at a right End, they first made a Reformation in their own House, by passing the following Order concerning the Members of it laying down their Privileges:

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

January

‘ The Commons, in this present Parliament assembled, having a tender Regard to the general Good of this Kingdom, and considering the many weighty Affairs which have prolonged this present Session of Parliament; during which Time, by reason of the Privileges of Parliament, the Prosecution of just Suits may be too much delayed; for the present Remedy thereof, the said Commons, being willing to forbear, for some Time, their own Interest and Privilege, for the Public Good; do order, and be it ordered by the Commons in this present Parliament assembled, That no Person or Persons, under the Authority of the said House, except the Members thereof, shall, from the 20th Day of this Instant *January, Anno Dom. 1647*, during this present Session of Parliament, have any Protection or Immunity, by reason of any Privilege of the said House of Parliament, or derived from the Members thereof, or any of them, in any Action or Suit for Debt, or any Action or Suit grounded upon any Right or Title to any Lands, Tenements, or Hereditaments; or upon any Contract upon Borrowing or Lending, or Buying or Selling; or grounded upon any Security given, or to be given, by Lease, Mortgage, or otherwise, for any Sum or Sums of Money. And it is hereby further ordered, during this present Session of Parliament, in the Cases aforesaid, That the Members of the said House of Parliament, and every of them, their Lands, Tenements, Hereditaments, Goods and Chattels, shall be subject to any Action, Suit, Process, Execution, Decree, or other Demand whatsoever, in Law or Equity, (so that the same extend not to the Imprisonment or Arrest of the Person) or to Prosecution upon any Penal Law

A remarkable
Order of the
Commons for
laying down
their Privileges.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

January.

Law. And be it further ordered, That every Member of this House, having Process delivered him for Appearance in the Cases aforesaid, do accordingly make his Appearance; or, in Default, this House, on Complaint thereof, will take such Course therein, as to Justice shall appertain.'

The Lords take into Consideration some Votes of the Commons against any further Address to the King.

On the same Day the Lords received a Message from the Commons, by Mr. *Lisle* and others, along with some Votes that had passed their House, against any farther Address or Application to the King, which were read; but as these Votes were of the utmost Importance, their Lordships appointed *Saturday*, the 8th Instant, to take them into Consideration; and all the Lords, in and about the Town, were ordered to attend the Service of the House that Day, without any Excuse or Delay.

The Scots demand the Payment of the last 100,000*l.* due to their Army.

Jan. 6. The Lords had a Letter from the *Scotts* Commissioners, with a Sort of peremptory Demand for the Payment of the last 100,000*l.* due to them upon their Army's withdrawing out of *England*; which, they said, the Kingdom of *Scotland* did expect due Performance of, according to the Engagement of the Public Faith of this Kingdom. Next, That if the Parliament would pay the three Years Arrears due to the *Scotts* Army in *Ireland*, which also was upon the Public Faith, the Commissioners would engage that their Army there should forthwith disband and return home. The Lords ordered this to be communicated to the House of Commons, and to refer the Matter to their speedy Consideration.

Jan. 7. The Lords ordered that Mr. *Marshall* and Mr. *Calany* do attend that House the next Morning, at Nine o'Clock, to seek God by Prayer, before their Lordships begin with the great Business of the Day: But there not then being such an Appearance of Lords as was expected, the Affair

fair was again put off to the 13th; and an Order An. 23. Car. I.
 was made for summoning the absent Peers to at-
 tend on that Day, and not to depart without
 Leave. Accordingly 1647.
 January.

Jan. 13. The last Votes of the Commons were again taken into Consideration, and they were first read in gross, and then each Vote distinctly. The House being adjourned into a Committee during Pleasure, so long a Debate ensued thereon that the Lords could not conclude the Matter on this Day, but ordered it to be renewed the first Business the next Morning.

Jan. 14. The Lords went again upon this Affair; and the first Vote being read, the House adjourned into a Committee, when another Debate arose upon it, which continued so long that all the Lords could determine this Day also, was to appoint a Committee to consider of, and offer something to the House upon, these Debates. This Committee consisted of the Earls of *Northumberland, Manchester, Denbigh, Salisbury, Pembroke, Mulgrave, and Warwick*, with other Lords, who were, any seven of them, to meet in the Prince's Lodgings that Afternoon. The Lords consent to the Votes against the King, and add a Preamble.

Jan. 15. The Lords being met, and some other Business done, the Earl of *Denbigh* reported a Paper from the Committee appointed the Day before, containing this Preamble to the Votes brought up from the House of Commons:

‘ The Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, after many Addresses to his Majesty for the preventing and ending of this unnatural War raised by him against his Parliament and Kingdom, having lately sent four Bills to his Majesty, which did contain only Matter of Safety and Security to the Parliament and Kingdom, referring the Composure of all other Differences to a Personal Treaty with his Majesty; and having received

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

January.

ved an absolute Negative, do hold themselves obliged to use their utmost Endeavours speedily to settle the present Government in such a Way as may bring the greatest Security to this Kingdom in the Enjoyment of the Laws and Liberties thereof; and in order thereunto, and that the Houses may receive no Delays nor Interruptions in so great and necessary a Work, they have taken these Resolutions, and passed these Votes, viz.

1. ' That the Lords and Commons do declare that they will make no further Addresses or Application to the King.

2. ' That no Application or Addresses be made to the King, by any Person whatsoever, without the Leave of both Houses.

3. ' That the Person or Persons that shall make Breach of this Order, shall incur the Penalties of High Treason.

4. ' That the two Houses declare they will receive no more any Message from the King; and do enjoin that no Person whatsoever do presume to receive or bring any Message from the King to both or either of the Houses of Parliament, or to any other Person.'

It is remarkable that there were but two Lords, the Earls of *Warwick* and *Manchester*, that enter'd their Protest against concurring with the House of Commons in these Votes: And this they did without assigning any Reasons for their Dissent; but only, as the Custom then and more antiently was, to ask Leave of the House, before the putting of the Question, to enter their Dissent if the Question was carried against them.

The same Day the Commons agreed to the foregoing Preamble, as drawn up by the Lords, and sent to them two Orders in consequence of the former Votes, which their Lordships read and agreed to.

Orders in consequence thereof.

Ordered, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, ' That this Declaration and these Resolutions shall be forthwith printed and published

lished; and that the several Knights of Shires, and Burgeses that serve for the several Towns and Places, do send Copies of the same to their several Counties and Places.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
January,

It was further ordered, 'That whatsoever Person shall act contrary to this Declaration and Resolutions of Parliament, or shall incite or encourage other Persons so to do, shall, upon due Proof thereof, be imprisoned, and his Estate sequestred; and the Offenders in the Premises, after Publication hereof, shall be within the several Ordinances for Sequestrations; and all Commissioners and Committees of Sequestrations are hereby authorised and required to take Notice hereof, and proceed to Sequestration accordingly.'

Notwithstanding the several Days Debate in the House of Lords, upon the Votes against any further Addressees or Application to the King, we do not meet with any Account of the Arguments urged in that House, *pro* or *con*, upon this most important Question: But a contemporary Writer[†], and a Member of the House of Commons at this Time, informs us, That when the King's Answer to the four Bills and Propositions of Peace was debated in that House on the third Instant, Sir Thomas Wroth spoke to this Purpose: 'That Bedlam was appointed for Mad-men, and Tophet for Kings: That our Kings of late had carried themselves as if they were fit for no Place but Bedlam: That his humble Motion should consist of three Parts:

Account of the
Debate on the
foregoing Votes
in the House of
Commons,

1. 'To secure the King, and keep him close in some inland Castle with sure Guards.
2. 'To draw up Articles of Impeachment against him.
3. 'To lay him by, and settle the Kingdom without him: He cared not what Form of Government

[†] Clement Walker, Esq; Member for Wells, in his *History of Independency*.—See also Lord Clarendon's *History*, Vol. V. p. 91. et seq.

An. 23. Car. 1. 1647. Government they set up, so it were not by Kings and Devils.*

January.

Then Commissary *Ireton* (seeming to speak the Sense of the Army, under the Notion of many Thousand godly Men, who had ventured their Lives to subdue their Enemies) said after this Manner, 'The King had denied Safety and Protection to his People by denying the four Bills: That Subjection to him was but in lieu of his Protection to his People; this being denied, they might well deny any more Subjection to him, and settle the Kingdom without him: That it was now expected, after so long Patience, they should shew their Resolution, and not desert those valiant Men who had engaged for them beyond all Possibility of Retreat; and would never forsake the Parliament, unless the Parliament forsook them first.'

After some more Debate, when the House was ready for the Question, *Cromwell* brought up the Rear: And, giving an ample Character of the Valour, good Affections, and Godliness of the Army, argued, 'That it was now expected the Parliament should govern and defend the Kingdom by their own Power and Resolution, and not teach the People any longer to expect Safety and Government from an obstinate Man, whose Heart God had hardened: That those Men, who had defended the Parliament from so many Dangers with the Expence of their Blood, would defend them herein with Fidelity and Courage against all Opposition. Teach them not by neglecting your own and the Kingdom's Safety, in which their own is involved, to think themselves betrayed, and left hereafter to the Rage and Malice of an irreconcilable Enemy, whom they have subdued for your Sake; and therefore are likely to find his future Government of them insupportable, and fuller of Revenge than Justice; lest Despair teach them to seek their Safety by some other Means than adhering to you who will not stick to yourselves, And how destructive such a Resolution in them will

will be to you all, I tremble to think, and leave you to judge.' An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

Our Author adds, That *Cromwell* laid his Hand upon his Sword at the latter End of his Speech, which having something of Menace in it, was thought very prevalent with that House : And accordingly we find by the *Journals*, That the first of the four Resolutions being carried in the Affirmative by 141 Voices against 92, the rest were pass'd without any Division. The same Writer imputes the Concurrence of the Lords in these Votes against the King, on the 15th, to a Letter sent the Day before to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, by Order of the House of Commons, requiring him to send a convenient Number of Foot to garrison *Whitehall*, and a Party of Horse to quarter in the *Mews*.

January.

After all this, the Commons carried their Blow still further against the King : They passed a Vote to give Power to Col. *Hammond* and Sir *William Constable*, to require and injoin them to remove, from their Attendance on the Person of the King, all such Persons as they, in their Judgments, had Suspicion of to be prejudicial to the Safety and Security of his Person, or to the Discharge of that Trust which was laid upon them ; notwithstanding such Persons were appointed to attend the King by Order of both Houses of Parliament. The House also ordered, That it be referred to the Committee of the Revenue to consider what Persons are fit and necessary to attend on the King's Person, and which Way the Expences might be conveniently retrenched. An Ordinance for taking away and utterly abolishing all the First Fruits and Tenths payable to the Crown, and discharging all Arrears due to it on that Score, was put to the Question, Whether to reject it or not ? and carried in the Negative, by 44 against 36.

Who order all
suspicious Per-
sons to be remo-
ved from about
the King, &c.

These vigorous Resolutions of the Parliament against the King gave so great Satisfaction to the Army, as to produce two Declarations from that Body. The first was address'd to the House of Com-

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

January.

Commons, and presented on the 11th of this Month by Sir *Hardress Waller*, with this submissive Introduction, 'That the General had commanded seven Colonels of them, with other Officers of Rank and Quality, in the Name of the whole Army, to make their humble Addresses, and represent their Intentions in Writing, under the Title of a Declaration; with this Reference, that it should either have Name or Life, and be exposed to View, according as it should receive Approbation and Direction from the House of Commons.'

The Officers being withdrawn, the Paper by them delivered in was read, intitled, *A Declaration from his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax and the General Council of the Army, of their Resolutions to adhere to the Parliament in their Proceedings concerning the King*; and signified at the End, that it was resolved on *Nemine Contradicente*.

Windsor, Jan. 9, 1647.

Whereupon the Army promise to adhere to the Commons in their Proceedings against his Majesty;

Notwithstanding the high Violation of the Kingdom's Rights and Liberties, and the Endeavours to swallow up the whole Interest of the Kingdom into the Power and Will of a King, which the present King's Reign hath afforded; we have observed that this Parliament was, through his Necessities and against his declared Intentions to the contrary, called and put into a Condition of vindicating the Kingdom in those Things; and hath yet acted with great Tenderness towards the King, (as to any Thing of Right that might be in him, or Duty towards him) as appears by the Protestation, Covenant, and many Declarations published by them: They have held forth a careful Regard to the Preservation of the King's Person and just Rights, with and in the Preservation and Vindication of the Public Interests and Safety of the Kingdom; and, by the whole Service of their Actions, and their manifold humble Addresses to him for the Preservation and Settlement of all, they have, we conceive, abundantly demonstrated the Reality

ality and Innocency of their Intentions towards him: In all which we have still understood the Sense and Intention to be no other, than that the Preservation of the King's Person and particular Rights should be so endeavoured as it might be consistent with, and not destructive to, those great and more obliging Public Interests of Religion, and the Rights, Liberties, and Safety of the Kingdom; and not otherwise.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
January.

And accordingly in the late Declarations and Papers that have occasionally passed from this Army, as to our Desires of Settlement to the Kingdom, we have expressed our real Wishes, that if the King would, in Things necessary and essential to the clearing, settling, and securing of those Public Interests, give his Concurrence to put them past future Dispute; then his Rights should be considered and settled, so far as might be consistent with those superior Interests of the Public, and the Security thereof for the future.

And that by an Address to the King, upon Things so purely essential to those public Ends, it might once more come to a clear Trial, whether we could, with the Preservation of the King's Person and particular Interests, have a Security to the other, it hath been our earnest Desire, our great Expectation, and our Endeavour, that we and others might be in a patient Waiting for such an Issue.

Now in the Parliament's last Address to the King, we find they have insisted only upon some few Things, so essential to that Interest of the Kingdom which they have hitherto engaged for, as that, without betraying the Safety of the Kingdom and themselves, and all that engaged with them in that Cause; without denying that which God in the Issue of this War hath borne such a Testimony unto, they could not go lower; and (those Things granted) they have offered to treat for all the rest.

Thus we account that great Business of a Settlement to the Kingdom, and Security to the public

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

January.

‘ public Interest thereof, by and with the King’s
 ‘ Concurrence, to be brought to so clear a Trial,
 ‘ as that (upon the King’s Denial of those Things)
 ‘ we can see no further Hopes of Settlement or Se-
 ‘ curity that Way.

‘ And, therefore, understanding that, upon the
 ‘ Consideration of that Denial added to so many
 ‘ others, the Honourable House of Commons, by
 ‘ several Votes upon the third Instant, have resolved
 ‘ to make no further Address or Application to
 ‘ the King, nor receive any from him, nor to suf-
 ‘ fer either in others; we do freely and unanimously
 ‘ declare, for ourselves and the Army, That we
 ‘ are resolved, through the Grace of God, firmly
 ‘ to adhere to, join with, and stand by, the Par-
 ‘ liament in the Things voted, on *Monday* last,
 ‘ concerning the King, and in what shall be fur-
 ‘ ther necessary for Prosecution thereof; and for
 ‘ the settling and securing of the Parliament and
 ‘ Kingdom without the King, and against him, or
 ‘ any other that shall hereafter partake with him.

*By the Appointment of his Excellency Sir Thomas
 Fairfax and his Council of War,*

JO. RUSHWORTH, *Secretary.*

This Declaration being read a second Time,
 the Commons voted their Approbation thereof;
 ordered their Thanks to be returned to the Gene-
 ral and the Army for it; and that the same be
 forthwith printed and published.

It has been already observed that the Lords spent
 several Days in debating the Votes of the Com-
 mons against any further Application or Address
 to the King; but after their Lordships had given
 their Concurrence, the following Declaration was
 presented to them by the same Officers that had at-
 tended the House of Commons with the foregoing.

And to support
 the Peerage.

‘ **T**HE General and his Council of War taking
 ‘ Notice of some unworthy Endeavours to
 ‘ asperse the Integrity of their Proceedings, as aim-
 ‘ ing

‘ ing at the overthrowing of Peerage, and under-
 ‘ mining of the Rights and Privileges of the House
 ‘ of Peers, do unanimously declare, That they
 ‘ hold themselves obliged, in Justice and Honour,
 ‘ to endeavour to preserve the Peerage of this
 ‘ Kingdom, with the just Rights belonging to the
 ‘ House of Peers; and will really, in their Places
 ‘ and Calling, perform the same.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 January.

‘ And as, in the first Place, they look upon the
 ‘ carrying on this great common Cause, wherein
 ‘ both Houses of Parliament stand engaged, (which
 ‘ they hope no Respects shall make them to desert)
 ‘ so shall they, to and in Prosecution of those pub-
 ‘ lic Ends, be very careful to preserve and maintain
 ‘ the Right and Honour belonging to the Places
 ‘ and Persons of the Peers of England.

*By the Appointment of his Excellency Sir Thomas
 Fairfax and his Council of War,*

JO. RUSHWORTH, *Secretary.* *

The Officers that presented this Declaration,
 being called in, received the following Answer :

Gentlemen,

‘ **T**HE Lords receive, with great Satisfaction,
 ‘ this Declaration which you have presented
 ‘ unto them, as the unanimous Engagement of the
 ‘ Council of War : And they have commanded me
 ‘ to return particular Thanks to the General and
 ‘ yourselves; and by you they desire their Thanks
 ‘ may be returned to the Council of War and the
 ‘ whole Army.

‘ And they further have commanded me to as-
 ‘ sure you, that as they have hazarded their Lives
 ‘ and Fortunes in the Maintenance of the true Re-
 ‘ ligion, the Liberties of the Kingdom, and Privi-
 ‘ leges of Parliament, according to their former
 ‘ Engagements, and for procuring a just and safe

VOL. XVI.

I i

‘ Peace

* It is remarkable that tho’ Mr. Rushworth, in his *Collections*,
 has given both these Declarations from the Army, to whom he was
 Secretary, yet his Name is subscribed only to this presented to the
 House of Lords.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

January.

Peace to this distracted and distressed Kingdom;
 so they shall still pursue those Ends, from which
 no Respects whatsoever shall either alienate their
 Hearts, or lessen their Endeavours.'

After which it was ordered by the Lords, That this Declaration, with the Answer to it, should be printed and published.—How far the Army kept their Words with their Lordships will appear in the Sequel.

Jan. 17. A Letter from the *Scots Commissioners* in *London*, dated this Day, directed to the Speaker of the House of Peers, was read, to this Effect:

The Scots Commissioners take Leave of the House of Lords.

THAT having been here several Years, employed in Pursuance of the Ends of the Solemn League and Covenant, and of the Treaty between the two Kingdoms; where, according to their mutual Engagements, they had constantly endeavoured to preserve a right Understanding betwixt them: They had, in Discharge of the Trust committed to them, given in to both Houses what they were warranted to offer unto them. And now, that they might give an Account to the Parliament of *Scotland*, they were to begin their Journey within two or three Days, of which they thought fit to give Notice to both the Honourable Houses of Parliament; and if they were pleased to address any Thing by them to that Kingdom, it should be represented with all Fidelity and Respect.'

Upon this Letter the Lords appointed a Committee to consider what Papers and Letters of the *Scots Commissioners* did remain unanswered, and to report the same to the House.

Jan. 18. It was ordered that the Earls of *Warwick* and *Manchester*, the two last protesting Lords, should go to the Chancellor of *Scotland*, and the rest

rest of the *Scots* Commissioners, from that House, An. 23. Car. I. 1647.
to wish them a good Journey; and to let them know
that, in regard of their speedy Departure, the Lords
could not give any present Answer to their Desires
concerning their Monies, and the other Particulars
mentioned in their last Papers; yet the Lords do
hope that there will be a real Care taken to give
just Satisfaction unto the Kingdom of *Scotland*;
and that the House desired the Continuance of the
brotherly Union and good Correspondency between
the two Nations, which the Lords would be al-
ways ready to use their best Endeavours to pre-
serve.

January.

Jan. 19. A Letter directed to the Speaker, from
the Earl of *Lincoln* and the other Lords under
Restraint, except the Lord *Hunsdon*, was read:

My Lords,

Jan. 19, 1647.

‘ **A**fter so long a Restraint, by your Lordships
‘ Order, and no Prosecution against us, we
‘ may expect, from your Justice, our Liberties;
‘ the which we shall enjoy with the more Satis-
‘ faction, as it will appear a Right to your Lord-
‘ ships Quality, as well as a Freedom to the pre-
‘ sent Condition of

Your Lordships humble Servants,

BERKELEY,
WILLOUGHBY,
MAYNARD,

LINCOLN,
SUFFOLK,
MIDDLESEX.

It was then ordered that these six Lords, that
have subscribed this Letter, shall have their Li-
berty from the Restraint they lie under, in the
Custody of the Gentleman-Usher of the Black
Rod attending that House; and it was referred
to a Committee to consider of some Declaration,
to be entered in the *Journal* Book, concerning the
Commitment of Peers of this Realm upon Im-
peachments. The Lord *Hunsdon* was also released
the next Day, on his Application, by Letter, to

The impeached
Peers demand,
and obtain, their
Liberty.

An. 23. Car. I. the House. Nothing material occurring, we pass
1647. on to

January.

Jan. 28, When we find that the Commons sent up a Message to impeach *Francis Lord Willoughby of Parham*, and *Sir John Maynard*, Knight of the *Bath*, of High Treason and other high Crimes and Misdemeanors, and exhibited Articles of Impeachment at the same Time against them both. But nothing was done further about it on this Day by the Lords.

Upon the reading the Articles against the Lord *Willoughby*, the Day before, in the House of Commons; the House divided on the Question, Whether these Articles, &c. should be sent up to the Lords? and it was carried for sending of them by 82 against 65. *Sir John Maynard's* passed without any Division.

The Commons next proceeded to examine one of their Serjeant's Officers, concerning the Delivery of the Summons, ordered by the House some Time since, for the Appearance of the Members impeached by the Army; and the Messenger did affirm, That he did deliver each particular Order of Summons, according as he was directed. It was afterwards moved that Candles might be brought in, and this Question was put; on which the House divided, and it was carried in the Affirmative, by 71 against 50.

Here follows an *Hiatus*, marked by *Asterisks* in the *Journals*; and, by a Note of Reference, the Editor tells us, That in the Margin of the Original, where several Entries are erased, is wrote *Obliterated by Order of March 2, 1659.* To which Time we refer for a further Explanation: But it appears from Mr. *Whitlocke's Memorials*, that the Business the Commons were now upon, was that of their own impeached Members, and the seven Lords; and the next Paragraph which stands in the *Journals*, alludes to an Order for going on with this latter Affair on a short Day to come.

Jan.

Jan. 29. The Scots Commissioners having now left London, and gone into their own Country, both Houses thought proper to send some Commissioners of their own after them; in order, as may be supposed, to take off any sinister Impressions or Misrepresentations that might be made to the Scots Parliament by the former; and so prevent a Rupture, at this critical Conjunction, between the two Nations. Accordingly a Committee of two Lords and four Commoners were appointed for this Business, who were to act by the following Instructions:

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
January.

INSTRUCTIONS for the Right Honourable Charles Earl of Nottingham and Henry Earl of Stamford, Bryan Stapylton, Robert Goodwin, William Ashurst, and John Birch, Esqrs. appointed Commissioners for the Kingdom of Scotland.

Whereas both Houses of Parliament have appointed you, Charles Earl of Nottingham, Henry Earl of Stamford, Bryan Stapylton, Robert Goodwin, William Ashurst, and John Birch, Esqrs; Commissioners to go into the Kingdom of Scotland, to preserve and keep a good Correspondence and right Understanding between the Kingdoms; and further to do and transact such Things as you shall, from Time to Time, receive Instructions for from both Houses of Parliament; you, or any two of you, are therefore first to make your speedy Repair into that Kingdom, to the City of *Edinburgh*, or any other Place where the Committee of Estates, Convention of Estates, or the Parliament, shall sit; and shall let them know the earnest and unfeigned Desires of the two Houses of Parliament of *England* to maintain and preserve a good and brotherly Correspondence, and right Understanding, and perpetual Agreement between the two Kingdoms; and, in pursuance thereof, you, or any two of you, are to endeavour, by declaring the Since-

Instructions for Commissioners appointed by both Houses to go into Scotland.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

January.

city of the Intentions of the Houses of Parliament,
 to remove all Misapprehensions or Impressions
 that may have arisen in, or been made upon, our
 Brethren of *Scotland*; and for that we are in-
 formed there is a Meeting of the Committee of
 Estates the 10th of *February* next, you, or any
 two of you, are therefore to use such Diligence
 and Expedition in your Journey, as you may be
 there at or before the said Day, if you possibly
 may.

And in case the Parliament of *Scotland*, Con-
 vention or Committee of Estates, shall desire to
 send any Persons to the King about the Affairs of
 the Kingdom of *Scotland*, you, or any two of
 you, shall let them know, that when they shall
 signify that they will send, and whom they will
 employ, the two Houses of Parliament will do
 therein what shall be fit to manifest their Desire
 of a brotherly Union with the Kingdom of *Scot-*
land.

As to the Business of the *Scots Army* in *Ulster*;
 you, or any two of you, are to offer them, that,
 if they desire it, Commissioners shall be sent
 into *Ulster* to state the Accounts of the said Ar-
 my; or, if they shall rather desire to agree by
 way of general Estimate for the whole, that they
 will then speedily represent that Estimate to the
 two Houses of Parliament.

As to the 100,000*l.* that is to be paid unto our
 Brethren of *Scotland* on the third of *February*;
 you have herewith the Resolutions of both Houses
 concerning the Satisfaction of the same, which
 you, or any two of you, are to offer unto them.

You, or any two of you, are likewise fre-
 quently, from Time to Time, to advertise us of
 all your Proceedings, and to put in Execution
 such further Instructions as you shall receive from
 both Houses of Parliament.

About this Time the following Ordinance was
 passed for Payment of 50,000*l.* to the Kingdom of
Scotland:

THE

THE Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament do declare, that their Intention is fully and really to perform with our Brethren of *Scotland*, to the uttermost of their Powers, in the due Payment of 100,000*l.* Money assigned to be paid unto them the third Day of *February* next; and, in order thereunto, do require the Committee at *Goldsmiths-Hall* to employ their best Endeavours that 50,000*l.* part thereof, charged upon those Receipts, may be complied with, and paid to the Persons named in the Ordinance; appointing the Payment of the said 50,000*l.* in Course, as is directed by the said Ordinance: And in case the several Sums cannot be paid in Time to the said several Persons, that Interest, after the Rate of 8*l. per Cent.* be allowed and paid to the said Persons, during the Time the said Sums, or any of them, shall be unpaid.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

January.

An Ordinance
for Payment of
50,000*l.* to that
Kingdom, upon
Account.

The said Committee is further required, from Time to Time, to represent any such Obstructions as they shall meet with, to the end they may be removed, and due Payment of the said Monies may be made, according to the Intentions and Orders of this House.

It is further ordered, That the Interest of the whole 100,000*l.* be charged upon the Receipts of *Goldsmiths-Hall*, and paid by the Committee there from Time to Time, for so long Time as the same, or any Part thereof, shall be unpaid.

It is likewise ordered, That Power be, and is hereby, given to the Committee to treat with such Persons, Citizens, or others, as they shall think fit, for the present borrowing of the said 50,000*l.* charged upon the Credit and Receipts of *Goldsmiths-Hall*.

Both Houses likewise agreed to the following Order, for the farther Satisfaction of the *Scots*:

Ordered, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, That the Committee at *Haberdashers-*

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

January.

dashers-Hall be hereby required and enjoined to take the most effectual Course they can for bringing in from the several Counties the Arrears of the 100,000*l.* Loan, for Payment of the *Scots Army*; and also the Arrears of the two Months Assessments for the said Army; and that they do prepare Letters to be sent to the respective Committees in the several Counties where any of these Arrears are due, to be signed by the Speakers of both Houses, to satisfy them with the Necessity of bringing in the said Money, and to quicken them in the bringing in of the same.

The Commons
send up Articles
of Impeachment
against the seven
Lords lately set
at Liberty:

Jan. 31. The Commons sent up to the Lords Articles of Impeachment against the Earls of *Lincoln* and *Suffolk*, with the rest of the seven Lords formerly impeached by them of High Treason, for levying War against the King, Parliament, and Kingdom; and desired that such further Proceedings might be had thereupon as to Justice and the Course of Parliament did appertain, and then the House of Commons would be ready with their Evidence to support the said Charge.

Ordered, by the Lords, 'That all the Articles of Impeachment of High Treason against the seven Lords, should be read the next Morning.'

The Commons had made a long Day of it, on the 29th, in reading and voting all these Articles, *separatim*, on each particular Lord; and, after five Divisions of the House, concluded them, and ordered them to be sent up to the Lords as above. Here appears another Erasure in the *Journals*, in several subsequent Entries, which are struck out by the afore-mentioned Order of *March 2*, 1659. This being soon after the secluded Members of the House of Commons were restored to their Seats, it is probable that House would not then suffer such Proceedings, so highly reflecting on the Honour of so many Noble Lords and Gentlemen, to continue on Record in their *Journals*.

Et-

February 1. The separate Articles against the seven impeached Lords were read, tho' not as yet entered in the *Journals*; but those against Sir *John Maynard* being also read, they are inserted; and since Mr. *Rushworth* has wholly omitted them, we give them from the aforesaid Authority.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
February.

ARTICLES of IMPEACHMENT of the Commons in Parliament assembled, against Sir John Maynard, Knight of the Bath, whereby he stands charged of High Treason, and other high Crimes and Misdemeanors.

I. ' THAT the said Sir *John Maynard* hath, And also against Sir John Maynard, one of the Eleven Members formerly charg'd by the Army.
' maliciously and traiterously, endeavour-
' ed, combined, and conspired to subvert the Free-
' dom of Parliament.

II. ' That, upon the 30th Day of *July* last, and
' divers Days before and since, he, the said Sir
' *John Maynard*, at the *Guildhall*, and other Places
' within the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and
' County of *Middlesex*, hath, maliciously and trai-
' terously, plotted and endeavoured to raise and
' levy War; and accordingly, then and there, hath,
' maliciously and traiterously, raised and levied
' War against the Parliament, King, and King-
' dom.

III. ' That whereas, on the 26th Day of *July*
' last past, a great Company of Reformado Offi-
' cers, Soldiers, Apprentices, and other dissolute
' and desperate Persons, (many whereof have been
' in Arms against the Parliament) being tumultu-
' ously assembled at *Westminster-Hall*, and Parts
' adjacent, within the City of *Westminster* and Li-
' berties thereof, did, by a most horrid Force and
' Violence, possess themselves of the Doors and
' Passages of the Houses of Parliament in *West-*
' *minster* aforesaid, (the Members of the said Houses
' then sitting in Parliament) and did then and there,
' contrary to the Honour and Freedom of Parlia-
' ment, threaten, and, for divers Hours, impri-
' son, the said Members so sitting in Parliament;
' and,

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

February.

and, by the said Menacing, Imprisonment, and Violence, did force the said Houses to pass an Ordinance of Parliament, for the revoking and making void an Ordinance made the 23d Day of July above said, concerning the Militia of London, and for the constituting of Sir John Gayer, Knt. Thomas Adams, James Bunce, Aldermen, and others, Citizens of the City of London, a Committee of the Militia of the said City, and Parts adjacent within the Lines of Communication: And did likewise, then and there, forcibly enter into the said Houses of Parliament, and forced the Members of the said Houses to pass such Votes as they, the said tumultuous Persons, then and there required; and did then and there violently assault the Persons of the Speakers, and divers Members of both Houses then attending on the Parliament; and, by their violent Menacings and Assaults, did force the said Speakers, and divers Members, from their Attendance in Parliament. And whereas Sir Thomas Fairfax, Knt. and the Army under his Command, was formerly, by both Houses of Parliament, raised and maintained, and is still continued, for the Safety and Defence of the Parliament and the Kingdom; and the said Sir Thomas Fairfax and the said Army, hearing of the said horrid Force and Violence offered to the said Houses of Parliament as aforesaid, did march towards the Cities of London and Westminster to suppress the said Tumults, and to restore the said Houses of Parliament, and the Members thereof, to their just Freedom, Safety, and Honour; and to secure the said Houses of Parliament from the like Violence and traiterous Attempts for the future, he, the said Sir John Maynard, knowing of the said horrid Force and Violence, and that the said Ordinance for the Militia of London, so by Force obtained as aforesaid, was void and null, and that the said Sir Thomas Fairfax, and the Army under his Command, were marching towards the Cities of London and Westminster, for the Intents and Purposes aforesaid, he, the said Sir

‘ Sir *John Maynard*, for the better advancing of An. 23. Car. I.
 ‘ his traiterous Purposes, Designs, and Actions as 1647.
 ‘ aforesaid, did, on the 30th Day of *July* afore-
 ‘ said, and divers Days since, with *Denzill Holles*,
 ‘ and *Walter Long*, Esqrs. *Francis Lord Willoughby*
 ‘ of *Parham*, Col. *Edward Massy*, Col. *Sydenham*
 ‘ *Pointz*, and divers others, meet at the *Guildhall*
 ‘ aforesaid, and other Places within the Cities of
 ‘ *London* and *Westminster* and County of *Middle-*
 ‘ *sex*; and did, then and there, sit with, and trait-
 ‘ terously consult, abet, and maintain the said Sir
 ‘ *John Gayer*, Alderman *James Bunce*, and others
 ‘ of the said pretended Militia, in putting in Exec-
 ‘ ution the said pretended Ordinance for the said
 ‘ pretended Militia of *London*, so by Force obtained
 ‘ as aforesaid; and, together with the said *Denzill*
 ‘ *Holles*, *Walter Long*, *Francis Lord Willoughby*
 ‘ of *Parham*, Sir *John Gayer*, Alderman *James*
 ‘ *Bunce*, and others, did traiterously and malici-
 ‘ ously plot, contrive, and order the raising of
 ‘ another Army to embroil the Kingdom in a new
 ‘ and bloody War; and did, traiterously and ma-
 ‘ liciously, at the Time and Place, and with the
 ‘ Persons aforesaid, plot, contrive, and order the le-
 ‘ vying, raising, listing, arming and arraying several
 ‘ Forces, both of Horse and Foot, for the Main-
 ‘ tenance of the said new and bloody War against
 ‘ the King, Parliament, and Kingdom, and to ruin
 ‘ and destroy the said Army under the Command
 ‘ of the said Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, raised for the
 ‘ Defence of the Parliament and Kingdom as afore-
 ‘ said, and to prevent and hinder them from vindi-
 ‘ cating the Honour and Safety of Parliament as
 ‘ aforesaid; and the said several Forces, both of
 ‘ Horse and Foot as above said, were listed, raised,
 ‘ and levied accordingly; sundry of them having
 ‘ been aiding and abetting to the above said horrid
 ‘ Force and Violence amongst the said Soldiers,
 ‘ Officers, and tumultuous Persons as above said,
 ‘ upon the said 26th of *July* last past, against the
 ‘ said Houses of Parliament as above said.

February.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

February.

IV. ‘ And, in further Pursuance of the said trait-
 ‘ terous Purposes and Designs, he the said Sir *John*
 ‘ *Maynard*, knowing of the said horrid Force and
 ‘ Violence, did, together with the said *Denzill*
 ‘ *Holles*, *Walter Long*, and *Francis Lord Willough-*
 ‘ *by of Parham*, on the 30th Day of *July* afore-
 ‘ said, at the *Guildhall*, and other Places aforesaid,
 ‘ traiterously order and appoint the Reformado
 ‘ Officers, which, by former Ordinance of Par-
 ‘ liament, were commanded to depart forth of the
 ‘ Lines of Communication, to rendezvous in a
 ‘ certain Place in *Westminster*, and Liberties there-
 ‘ of, commonly called *St. James’s Fields*, to be
 ‘ listed, and put into a Regimental Way; to the
 ‘ Intent to be arrayed, armed, and employed
 ‘ for the Destruction of the Army under the Com-
 ‘ mand of Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, and all such as did
 ‘ adhere to them; and did, then and there, traiter-
 ‘ ously order, direct, and cause to be raised and
 ‘ levied eighteen Regiments of the Train’d Bands
 ‘ of the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and the
 ‘ Auxiliary Bands, and all other Forces of the said
 ‘ Cities, and the Sailors, Watermen, and Seamen
 ‘ within or near the River *Thames*, to be mustered,
 ‘ arrayed, armed, and put into a warlike Po-
 ‘ stance, to be employed in the said War, traiter-
 ‘ ously contrived, levied, and raised by him, the
 ‘ said Sir *John Maynard*, and the Persons above-
 ‘ named, against the King, Parliament, and King-
 ‘ dom, and the said Army of the Parliament, un-
 ‘ der the Command of Sir *Thomas Fairfax*.

V. ‘ That, on the said 30th Day of *July* last,
 ‘ he the said Sir *John Maynard*, at the *Guildhall*
 ‘ aforesaid, together with the said *Denzill Holles*,
 ‘ *Walter Long*, Esqrs. *Francis Lord Willoughby* of
 ‘ *Parham*, and others, in Pursuance of his said
 ‘ traiterous Plots and Contrivances, did traiterously
 ‘ order, command, and appoint the raising, seiz-
 ‘ ing, and listing of all Horses, Geldings, and
 ‘ Mares within the Cities of *London* and *West-*
 ‘ *minster*, and Lines of Communication, and ten
 ‘ Miles distant, to be employed in the said new
 ‘ and

and bloody War, so as aforesaid traiterously raised and levied by him, and the Persons in this Article afore-mentioned, against the King, Parliament, and Kingdom.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
February.

VI. The said Sir *John Maynard*, with other the Persons aforesaid, at the *Guildhall* aforesaid, upon the third Day of *August* last, and divers Days before and since, did traiterously order and command the Officers of the Ordnance within the *Tower of London*, to issue 400 Barrels of Powder, and 4000 Muskets and other Arms, Ammunition, and Provisions for War, formerly provided by the said Houses of Parliament for the Defence of the Kingdom, and to furnish the said Army of the Parliament under the Command of Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, and the Navy at Sea appointed for the Safety and Defence of the Kingdom, to be employed and used for the arming and arraying of the said Reformed Officers and Soldiers, raised and listed as aforesaid for the Maintenance of the said new and bloody War, so as aforesaid traiterously plotted, contrived, and fomented by him and the Persons aforesaid, and to be employed for the Destruction of the said Parliament's Army under the Command of Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, and the Subjects of the Kingdom adhering to, and joining with, the said Army of the King, Parliament, and Kingdom.

VII. That whereas Sir *John Maynard*, with others afore-named, in Pursuance of their said traitorous and malicious Designs to embroil the Kingdom in a new and bloody War, and to fight against the Parliament's Army, then marching up towards *London* for the Purposes before recited, did, at the Time and Place aforesaid, cause a Declaration, (framed by some Person within the City of *London*, containing Matter of Reproach and Scandal of the Army doing their Duty in the Service of the Parliament; and reflecting on the Authority and Freedom of Parliament in several of their Ordinances, lawfully and duly passed; and abetting the Engagement declared against by the

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

February.

the said Houses of Parliament the 23d of July then Instant, as a traitorous and seditious Design of divers ill-affected Persons in and about *London*, and Parts adjacent; and to bring in the King, without Security and Satisfaction first given to both Kingdoms, as was insisted on by the Parliaments of both Kingdoms; and tending to engage the rest of the Kingdom with them in the said War against the Parliament and Army) to be published in all or most of the Churches and Chapels within *London* and Lines of Communication, in or upon the first Day of *August* last past.

By all which Designs, Endeavours, and Actions, he, the said Sir *John Maynard*, hath traiterously laboured to ruin and destroy the King, Parliament, and Kingdom; for all which they do impeach him of High Treason against the King, his Crown and Dignity.

And the said Commons, by Protestation, saving to themselves a Liberty of exhibiting, at any Time hereafter, any further Accusation or Impeachment against the said Sir *John Maynard*, and also of replying to the Answers that the said Sir *John Maynard* shall make to the said Articles, or to any of them, and of offering further Proof of the Premises, or any of them, or of any other Impeachment or Accusation that shall be exhibited by them, as the Cause shall, according to the Course of Parliament, require, do pray that the said Sir *John Maynard* may be put to answer all and every of the Premises; and that such Proceedings, Examinations, Trial, and Judgment may be upon every of them had and used, as is agreeable to Law and Justice.

The Lords take into Consideration the Articles of Impeachment against the seven impeach'd Peers.

Feb. 2. The Lords took into Consideration the Articles of Impeachment against the seven Lords, of High Treason, and high Crimes and Misdemeanors, brought from the House of Commons; and it was moved that it might be considered, Whether the releasing of the said Lords, and giving them their

their Liberty on the 19th of *January* last, be not a discharging and acquitting them of the general Accusation of High Treason; and whether the releasing of their Persons be a discharging of that Accusation? Then the general Accusation of the 8th of *September* last was read, and the Order for their Commitment, with the several Messages sent to the House of Commons concerning them^d: And the Question being put, Whether, upon what hath been now read, the general Impeachment against the Seven Lords is dismissed? it was resolved in the Negative.

An. 23. Car. 1.

2647.

February.

Next it was taken into Consideration, Whether, in the particular Articles against the Seven Lords, there be not a Contrariety in the Averment of the House of Commons; because the Articles make mention, That they are in Maintenance of a former Charge brought up from the House of Commons against them, of High Treason, and high Crimes and Misdemeanors; and it was moved to have a Conference with the House of Commons about it; and the Question being put, Whether to send to the seven Lords Copies of their several and respective Articles, and appoint them a Day to put in their Answers to the same, before such Time as a Conference be had with the House of Commons concerning this Business, it was resolved in the Affirmative; and ordered, That the Earls of *Lincoln*, *Suffolk*, and *Middlesex*, the Lords *Berkeley*, *Hunsdon*, *Willoughby*, and *Maynard*, shall attend at the Bar on *Friday* Morning, and receive their several and respective Articles of Impeachment of High Treason and other high Crimes and Misdemeanors, brought from the House of Commons against them; and that they put in their several and respective Answers thereunto by To-morrow Fortnight. And it was further ordered, That the aforesaid Lords be sequestered from the House, upon this Charge; and that they shall put in Bail of 4000*l.* a-piece, and 2000*l.* by Sureties for each Lord, on *Friday* next.

Feb.

^d See before, p. 271, 300, 317, 363.

An. 23: Car. 1.

1647.

February.

Feb. 3. A Conference was held between the two Houses, at the Desire of the Commons, which *John Glynne*, Esq; Recorder of London, was charged by them in the following Manner.

Mr. Lisle began thus :

‘ My Lords, The Occasion of this Conference concerning the Recorder of *London*. Yourships may please to call to Mind the Judgment of Parliament, of the 6th of *July* 1647, against that horrid and actual Force upon the Parliament, the 26th of *July* foregoing; and the Votes, Orders, and Ordinances of Parliament from the 26th of *July*, 1647, to the 6th of *February* following, are declared null and void, and were so at the Making thereof.

A Conference on the Occasion of the Proceedings of the Commons against Mr. *Glynne*, another of the Eleven Members.

‘ And although in that Declaration a general Proviso^d, That no Person shall be punished for acting upon those Votes or Ordinances; yet that general Proviso, others, is with this special Qualification, less they were present, or, knowing the Force upon the Houses, did, notwithstanding upon those Votes obtained by Force as

‘ *Mr. Glynne*, then Recorder of *London*, knowing of that visible, insolent, horrid actual Force upon the Parliament, and using what Orders and Ordinances of Parliament were thereby forced and extorted from the next Day after, being present at the Council in *London*, when a Petition was presented from some who had been active in the use of that terrible Force upon the Parliament, and Mention being made of those Votes for the Recorder of *London* did, in the Name of the Common Council, give Thanks to the Petitioners for those Orders got by their Endeavour.

‘ I am likewise to inform your Lordships, that *Mr. Glynne* was present with the Militia when the Votes were acted upon, and was also present at the Common Council when Subscripti

c In this Volume, p. 183, et seq. — *2d* ed. p.

d for raising 100,000*l.* for the carrying on An. 23. Car. I.
1647. these Designs; which were no less than the raising of a new War, and the levying of Forces to enter with the Army, who was then advancing by Way to defend the Houses from those traitorous most insolent Rioters. Your Lordships cannot be exceeding sensible that this new War have inevitably brought the City, Parliament, Kingdom into certain Ruin and Confusion, if it had not been prevented by the great Mercy of God. It was Mr. *Glynne's* Duty, as he was then a Member of the House of Commons, to have opposed these most violent Proceedings against the Liberty and Being of the Parliament. He was bound to this as he was a Subject of the Kingdom, and it was his Duty, as Recorder of *London*, to have advised against those Proposals, which have brought the City to the greatest Misery and Part of the Kingdom: But he was so far from opposing them, that those Noble Lords, who were the close Committee for examining that Matter, are able to inform you he did advance it. Your Lords, the Offence being of this Nature, so he gave to the City, Parliament, and Kingdom; Mr. *Glynne* having been thus discovered, the House of Commons do not think fit that he should any longer continued to be Recorder of *London*, as of greater Concernment than to be so exposed, for as the continuing of this Gentleman may be dangerous, so it doth concern the Peace of the Kingdom and the Safety of the Parliament, especially at this Time, to have a Person of Ability and Integrity chosen into his Place; and the House of Commons having received full Satisfaction concerning Mr. *Steele*, of his good Affections to the Parliament, have ordered that he may be recommended to the City of *London* to be their Recorder in the Place of Mr. *Glynne*; and thereupon they passed a Vote, wherein they desire the Confirmation of your Lordships.

After having ended, Mr. *Scot* began; and after the clearer Evidence of those two Assertions

An. 252 Car. 1.
1647.

February.

Feb. 3. A Conference was held between the two Houses, at the Desire of the Commons, in which *John Glynne*, Esq; Recorder of *London*, was charged by them in the following Manner:

Mr. *Lisle* began thus:

‘My Lords, The Occasion of this Conference is concerning the Recorder of *London*. Your Lordships may please to call to Mind the Judgment and Declaration of Parliament, of the 6th of *August* last, against that horrid and actual Force upon the Parliament, the 26th of *July* foregoing^c; wherein all Votes, Orders, and Ordinances of Parliament, from the 26th of *July*, 1647, to the 6th of *August* following, are declared null and void, and that they were so at the Making thereof.

A Conference on
Occasion of the
Proceedings of
the Commons
against Mr.
Glynne, another
of the Eleven
Members.

‘And although in that Declaration there is a general Proviso^d, That no Person shall be impeached or punished for acting upon those Votes, Orders, or Ordinances; yet that general Proviso, among others, is with this special Qualification, viz. Unless they were present, or, knowing of the said Force upon the Houses, did, notwithstanding, act upon those Votes obtained by Force as aforesaid.

‘Mr. *Glynne*, then Recorder of *London*, well knowing of that visible, insolent, horrid, and actual Force upon the Parliament, and well knowing what Orders and Ordinances of Parliament were thereby forced and extorted from the Houses, the next Day after, being present at the Common Council in *London*, when a Petition was there presented from some who had been active in that horrible Force upon the Parliament, and thereupon Mention being made of those Votes so obtained, the Recorder of *London* did, in the Name of the Common Council, give Thanks to those Petitioners for those Orders got by their Endeavours.

‘I am likewise to inform your Lordships, that Mr. *Glynne* was present with the Militia when those Votes were acted upon, and was also present at the Common Council when Subscriptions were pressed

^c In this Volume, p. 183, et seq. and *ibid.* p. 171.

pressed for raising 100,000*l.* for the carrying on of those Designs; which were no less than the raising of a new War, and the levying of Forces to encounter with the Army, who was then advancing this Way to defend the Houses from those traitorous and most insolent Rioters. Your Lordships cannot but be exceeding sensible that this new War must have inevitably brought the City, Parliament, and Kingdom into certain Ruin and Confusion, if it had not been prevented by the great Mercy of God.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
February.

‘ It was Mr. *Glynne’s* Duty, as he was then a Member of the House of Commons, to have opposed these most violent Proceedings against the Safety and Being of the Parliament. He was obliged to this as he was a Subject of the Kingdom; and it was his Duty, as Recorder of *London*, to have advised against those Proposals, which would have brought the City to the greatest Misery of any Part of the Kingdom: But he was so far from opposing them, that those Noble Lords, who were of the close Committee for examining that Business, are able to inform you he did advance it.

‘ My Lords, the Offence being of this Nature, so destructive to the City, Parliament, and Kingdom; and Mr. *Glynne* having been thus discovered, the House of Commons do not think fit that he should be any longer continued to be Recorder of *London*, a Place of greater Concernment than to be so executed; for as the continuing of this Gentleman may be dangerous, so it doth concern the Peace of the City, and the Safety of the Parliament, especially at this Time, to have a Person of Ability and Integrity chosen into his Place; and the House of Commons having received full Satisfaction concerning Mr. *Steele*, of his good Affections to the Parliament, have ordered that he may be recommended to the City of *London* to be their Recorder in the Place of Mr. *Glynne*; and thereupon they have passed a Vote, wherein they desire the Concurrence of your Lordships.’

Mr. *Lisle* having ended, Mr. *Scot* began; and said, ‘ For the clearer Evidence of those two Af-

An. 23: Car. 1.

1647.

February,

Feb. 3. A Conference was held between the two Houses, at the Desire of the Commons, in which *John Glynne*, Esq; Recorder of *London*, was charged by them in the following Manner:

Mr. *Lisle* began thus:

‘My Lords, The Occasion of this Conference is concerning the Recorder of *London*. Your Lordships may please to call to Mind the Judgment and Declaration of Parliament, of the 6th of *August* last, against that horrid and actual Force upon the Parliament, the 26th of *July* foregoing^c; wherein all Votes, Orders, and Ordinances of Parliament, from the 26th of *July*, 1647, to the 6th of *August* following, are declared null and void, and that they were so at the Making thereof.

A Conference on Occasion of the Proceedings of the Commons against Mr. *Glynne*, another of the Eleven Members.

‘And although in that Declaration there is a general Proviso^d, That no Person shall be impeached or punished for acting upon those Votes, Orders, or Ordinances; yet that general Proviso, among others, is with this special Qualification, *viz.* Unless they were present, or, knowing of the said Force upon the Houses, did, notwithstanding, act upon those Votes obtained by Force as *aforsaid*.

‘Mr. *Glynne*, then Recorder of *London*, well knowing of that visible, insolent, horrid, and actual Force upon the Parliament, and well knowing what Orders and Ordinances of Parliament were thereby forced and extorted from the Houses, the next Day after, being present at the Common Council in *London*, when a Petition was there presented from some who had been active in that horrible Force upon the Parliament, and thereupon Mention being made of those Votes so obtained, the Recorder of *London* did, in the Name of the Common Council, give Thanks to those Petitioners for those Orders got by their Endeavours.

‘I am likewise to inform your Lordships, that Mr. *Glynne* was present with the Militia when those Votes were acted upon, and was also present at the Common Council when Subscriptions were pressed

^c In this Volume, p. 187, *et seq.*—^d *Ibid.* p. 274.

pressed for raising 100,000*l.* for the carrying on of those Designs; which were no less than the raising of a new War, and the levying of Forces to encounter with the Army, who was then advancing this Way to defend the Houses from those traitorous and most insolent Rioters. Your Lordships cannot but be exceeding sensible that this new War must have inevitably brought the City, Parliament, and Kingdom into certain Ruin and Confusion, if it had not been prevented by the great Mercy of God.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
February.

‘ It was Mr. *Glynne*’s Duty, as he was then a Member of the House of Commons, to have opposed these most violent Proceedings against the Safety and Being of the Parliament. He was obliged to this as he was a Subject of the Kingdom; and it was his Duty, as Recorder of *London*, to have advised against those Proposals, which would have brought the City to the greatest Misery of any Part of the Kingdom: But he was so far from opposing them, that those Noble Lords, who were of the close Committee for examining that Business, are able to inform you he did advance it.

‘ My Lords, the Offence being of this Nature, so destructive to the City, Parliament, and Kingdom; and Mr. *Glynne* having been thus discovered, the House of Commons do not think fit that he should be any longer continued to be Recorder of *London*, a Place of greater Concernment than to be so executed; for as the continuing of this Gentleman may be dangerous, so it doth concern the Peace of the City, and the Safety of the Parliament, especially at this Time, to have a Person of Ability and Integrity chosen into his Place; and the House of Commons having received full Satisfaction concerning Mr. *Steele*, of his good Affections to the Parliament, have ordered that he may be recommended to the City of *London* to be their Recorder in the Place of Mr. *Glynne*; and thereupon they have passed a Vote, wherein they desire the Concurrence of your Lordships.’

Mr. *Lisle* having ended, Mr. *Scot* began; and said, ‘ For the clearer Evidence of those two As-

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

February.

1. *sermons, viz. That Mr. Recorder was knowing of the Force, and that he acted upon the Vote gained by the said Force, he would offer and represent,*

1. ' That Mr. Recorder was seen walking in *Westminster-Hall* on the 26th of *July*, at the Time that the tumultuous Persons that assaulted and forced the Houses were there, and at and about the Houses.

2. ' That his House being under the Commons House, and some of his Family having taken such Notice of the Force upon the House, and the Restraint of the Members, as to convey in at the Windows Bottles of Drink and other Supplies, he could not reasonably pretend Ignorance of the Force.

3. ' That, for the fuller clearing of his Knowledge of the Premises, and to leave him without Excuse or Possibility of Denial, Mr. *Scot* exhibited the original Petition of those Apprentices and others, presented to the Common Council on *Tuesday*, the Day after the Tumult; wherein they set forth, That, upon their Applications, and by their Desires, the Houses had, the Day before, recalled their Ordinance for the Militia, and resettled the same as by the Ordinance of the 4th of *May*; and that some of those very Hands, that signed and presented that Petition to the House of Commons the Day before, did sign and present this to the Common Council; notwithstanding which clear and undeniable Evidence, Mr. Recorder, then present, in the Name of the Common Council, did give the said Petitioners Thanks for their good Affections.

4. ' That Mr. Recorder was present with the Militia, though no Member of that Committee, when they (contrary to the Engagement of the Common Council made to the City Commissioners then resident at the Army) went about to nominate and elect a Commander in Chief; and that when it was objected by some amongst them, that the Ordinance by which they sat, giving them Power to appoint Colonels, Captains, and other Officers, did

did not warrant them to proceed *offendendo*, and to chuse Major-Generals, or other Commanders above Colonels; and one of them appealing to Mr. Recorder for his Judgment therein, he was pleased to be silent, and to give no Opinion; whereby, probably, the Election of Major-General *Massey* to command their Forces, which could be raised for no other End than to abet and maintain the Force upon the Houses, and the Votes so gained, were so suddenly proceeded in.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
February.

‘ Mr. Recorder was also present with the Lord Mayor and Militia, when Endeavours were used to engage the Watermen to lift themselves for this Service; whereupon afterwards Account was given of 4000 so lifted.

He said further, ‘ That it was observed that Mr. Recorder was oftener present with the Militia and Common Council, in the six or seven Days that the Speakers and Members were absent from the Houses, than in six Months before.

1. ‘ And in special, that he was present at the Common Council when there was a Proposition, and some Progress made, for the raising, by Subscription and otherwise, 100,000*l.* for Maintenance of their Forces, and for carrying on this new War; and that he, the said Mr. Recorder, did not discountenance the Subscriptions and intended Levies.

2. ‘ That he was also present at the Common Council when they passed their Declaration of the first of *August*, which was also that Day commanded to be published in all the Churches and Chapels within the City, Lines, and Parishes within the Weekly Bills of Mortality; in which Declaration the Force upon the Houses was justified; the Engagement, if not absolutely approved, yet much extenuated and countenanced; a Resolution zealously undertaken to bring the King up to *London*, without such Satisfaction or Security, as both Houses and both Kingdoms had judged necessary to proceed upon; and this not even on his own Terms, or the Conditions in his Message of

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

February.

the 12th of *May*, but without any Terms or Conditions at all; the Parliament's Army declared their Enemy, not meerly for desiring the Houses to translate the Militia to the old approved Hands, or for marching towards *London* to restore the Parliament to their Freedom, Safety, and Honour; but for their taking free Quarter, though disabled to pay their Quarters, the City being themselves more in Arrear of Pay to the Army than any Part of the Kingdom beside.

In Proof of all this Mr. *Lisle* recited several Parts of the City's Declaration; and then proceeded thus:

'Now, in that Mr. Recorder did not oppose or discountenance such a Declaration, which the Reverence of his Parts, as well as the Interest of his Place, might have gone far to have prevented, and for the fore-recited Reasons, the House of Commons have disabled him to be any longer a Member of their House; and have thought it not fit that he should continue his Interest and Place in the City, where his Influence is so potent, that the Effect of it may be so dangerous; and having voted him to be removed from that Place, desire the Concurrence of their Lordships therein.'

The Conference being over, it was ordered, That the Lords that are of the Close Committee do make a Report concerning the Evidence against Mr. Recorder.

Orders made by the Lords relating to the foregoing Impeachments.

The same Day the Lords made the following Orders:

1. 'That the seven impeach'd Lords be allowed till *Tuesday* next for coming to receive their Charges and bringing in their Bail.

2. 'That the Lieutenant of the *Tower* do bring Sir *John Maynard* to the Bar, on *Saturday* Morning next, to receive his Charge of High Treason, and other high Crimes and Misdemeanors, brought up from the House of Commons against him.'

The

* This Declaration of the City of *London*, which they instantly revoked, upon the near Approach of the Army, is given at large in *Rushworth's Collections*, Vol. VI. p. 648.

The Lords also gave their Concurrence to the following Resolutions, sent up by the Commons for that Purpose :

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

February.

Resolved upon the Question, by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, 1. 'That all the Servants, appointed by both Houses to attend on the King, be discharged from their Attendance.

Both Houses resolve to reduce the Number of Servants about the King to thirty Persons.

2. 'That all those Servants that shall be appointed to attend the King, and their Servants, shall not exceed the Number of thirty.

3. 'That the Governor of the Isle of *Wight* be hereby enjoined not to admit of any greater Number than this of thirty, to come within the Castle, to attend as Servants upon the King, or as Servants upon the King's Servants.

4. 'That it be referred to Sir *Thomas Fairfax* the General, to appoint such Persons as shall attend the King, not exceeding the Number of thirty, to continue in the said Service during the Pleasure of both Houses.'

Feb. 5. The Lieutenant of the *Tower* having brought Sir *John Maynard* to the Bar, the Speaker told him, 'That the Lords did send for him to appear this Day to receive his Articles of High Treason, and other high Crimes and Misdemeanors, brought up from the House of Commons against him; and commanded him to kneel at the Bar as a Delinquent.

Sir John Maynard refuses to submit to the Proceedings of the House of Lords against him,

Sir *John Maynard* refused; but desired that the Doors of the House might be set open for any Body to come in that would, and this House not be made private, as the Council Table was: And he said, This Way of Articles was not a Way of proceeding of this Kingdom; therefore he, being a Commoner of *England*, and a free-born Subject, ought to be tried as a Commoner, by Bill or Indictment in the inferior Courts of Justice; and desired Counsel to speak to it.

He also, being again commanded to kneel as a Delinquent, refused, saying, 'He did not come to make Bargains.'

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

February.

Who thereupon
inflict a Fine of
500 l. upon him
for a Contempt.

Upon this the House commanded Sir *John Maynard* to withdraw, and the Lords ordered that he should be fined 500*l.* for his Refusal, in not submitting himself to the usual and ordinary Way of proceeding of their House, upon Articles brought from the House of Commons against him.

Then the Lords commanded Sir *John Maynard* to be brought in again, and the Speaker told him, 'That their Lordships had fined him 500*l.* for his Refusal, in not submitting himself to the usual and ordinary Way of proceeding of that House, upon Articles brought up from the House of Commons against him; and let him know that the Lords had ordered, That the Articles brought up from the House of Commons, the 28th of *January* last, should be read.'

He refused to hear them read. However the Articles being read, the Speaker told him, 'Now his Articles having been read, he might have a Copy of them if he would; and that he is to put in his Answer to them within fourteen Days.'

He replied, 'He did not hear them read, and protested against the reading of them; and that these Articles brought up against him were not believed by them that drew them up: And he said (comparing this Proceeding against him with the Proceedings of the Council Table) that he did admire the Justice of the Council Table, in regard of the arbitrary Proceedings against him here.'

After this he was commanded to withdraw, and the Lords ordered that the said Sir *John Maynard*, being impeached by Articles of the Commons assembled in Parliament, whereby he stands charged of High Treason, and other high Crimes, Misdemeanors, and Offences, shall stand committed to the Prison of the *Tower of London*, there to be kept in safe Custody untill the Pleasure of their House be further signified.

A Warrant was immediately issued in that Behalf; and it was ordered that the Fine of 500*l.* imposed upon him, be presently estreated into the Exchequer.

Next,

Next, a Committee, consisting of the Earls of *Northumberland, Kent, Denbigh, Mulgrave, and Salisbury*, with the Lords *North* and *Wharton*, were appointed to consider which Way to vindicate the Honour of the House; and to prevent, for the future, the like Contempt which Sir *John Maynard* had now offered at their Bar. Mr. Baron *Atkins* and Mr. Justice *Rolle* were appointed to attend this Committee.

An. 27. Car. I.
1647.
February.

Feb. 8. This being the Day appointed for the seven Lords that were impeached by the House of Commons of High Treason, &c. to hear and receive the said Charge, they were called in one by one; and, after they had kneeled at the Bar, the Speaker told them, severally, That this being the Day ordered for them to receive the Charge brought up from the House of Commons against them, and to put in Bail, the Lords commanded the several Charges to be distinctly read to each Lord; after which they all gave in Bail, themselves in 4000*l.* and their Sureties for 2000*l.* to appear, upon Summons, whenever the Lords please to call for them. Only the Lord *Willoughby*, instead of appearing at this Time, sent the following Letter, which was read:

Six of the impeach'd Lords admitted to Bail:

For the Right Honourable the SPEAKER of the House of Peers pro Tempore, to be communicated to the Lords assembled in Parliament.

My Lords,

Feb. 6, 1647.

‘ **W**ITH how much Zeal, and how disinterestedly, I have served the Public, since the very Beginning of this Parliament, as well with the Hazard of my Person as with the Expence of my Fortune, is so well known to your Lordships, the Parliament, and the Kingdom, as I need not wear out more Time on that Subject; knowing my Integrity to the Principles your Lordships went upon to be such as I need not
‘ make

But Lord Willoughby sends his Reasons for not appearing.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

February.

make a Recital of my past Actions to justify my Proceedings; for I (who know myself best) know I am still upon the same Foundation I ever was, and am as positively resolved, by God's Assistance, not to vary from it, what Aspersions forever my Enemies endeavour to blemish me with, or what Success my Constancy to those Grounds in the Conclusion may meet with. I shall look no farther backwards than to my late Restraint, under which I continued four Months, patiently expecting what could be proved against me by them upon whose Impeachment I was by your Lordships committed; but, finding their Delays very much to exceed the usual Time of Proceedings in Affairs of this Nature, upon Address to your Lordships I had my Liberty; resolving to have made no other use of it than retire myself to Privacy, not being, by some, thought longer fit for public Employment; but, whilst I was in Preparation for this my Intention, I find myself interrupted by a fresh Prosecution of the former Impeachment; and apprehending the Restraint which may consequently follow, hath enforced me to use such Means for my Liberty, which I desire may admit of an honourable Interpretation from your Lordships to

Your faithful Servant,

FR. WILLOUGHBY:

Nothing was done at present upon this Letter, but it was ordered, That those Lords who had their Charges read this Day, should put in their respective Answers according to a former Order: And that the Committee, which examined the Business concerning the Force put upon the Parliament, shall make Report of the said Examinations on Friday Morning next.

Feb. 9. Another Letter from Col. *Hammond*, brought to the House of Lords, was read:

For

For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER, An. 23. Car. I.
Speaker of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.

1647.

Carisbrook-Castle, Feb. 2,

February.

My Lord,

1647.

I Shall acquaint your Lordships that, in pursuance of your Commands, in order to the Security of the Person of the King, I have, by the Approbation of the General, appointed four Gentlemen of approved Fidelity, viz. Mr. Herbert, Mr. Mildmay, Capt. Titus, and Capt. Preston, constantly to attend the Person of the King in their Course, by two at a Time; who are always to be in his Presence, except when he retires himself into his Bed-Chamber; and then they are to repair, the one to the one Door, and the other to the other, and there to continue untill the King come forth again.

A Letter from Colonel Hammond, relating to the Guard he had set upon the King's Person.

In this I thought good to make my Address to your Lordship, that I may also know your Lordship's Pleasure; and, in case your Lordship please to approve what is done, I desire, if you shall think fit, in order to the End aforesaid, and for the quickening their Care and Diligence, of which indeed I cannot yet complain, that your strict Commands may be laid upon them in this their Duty; and that you will please to consider them in some Way answerable to the great Care and Burthen that lieth upon them in such an Employment.

What Commands your Lordship shall further please to lay upon me shall be most chearfully observed by,

My Lord,

Your Lordship's

most faithful humble Servant,

RO. HAMMOND.

A List of the Parliament's Ships, to be set forth for next Summer's Guard, was sent up from the House

An. 23: Car. 1.

1647.

February,

Feb. 3. A Conference was held between the two Houses, at the Desire of the Commons, in which *John Glynne, Esq;* Recorder of *London*, was charged by them in the following Manner:

Mr. Lisle began thus:

‘My Lords, The Occasion of this Conference is concerning the Recorder of *London*. Your Lordships may please to call to Mind the Judgment and Declaration of Parliament, of the 6th of *August* last, against that horrid and actual Force upon the Parliament, the 26th of *July* foregoing^c; wherein all Votes, Orders, and Ordinances of Parliament, from the 26th of *July*, 1647, to the 6th of *August* following, are declared null and void, and that they were so at the Making thereof.

A Conference on
Occasion of the
Proceedings of
the Commons
against Mr.
Glynne, another
of the Eleven
Members.

‘And although in that Declaration there is a general Proviso^d, That no Person shall be impeached or punished for acting upon those Votes, Orders, or Ordinances; yet that general Proviso, among others, is with this special Qualification, *viz.* Unless they were present, or, knowing of the said Force upon the Houses, did, notwithstanding, act upon those Votes obtained by Force as *aforesaid*.

‘*Mr. Glynne*, then Recorder of *London*, well knowing of that visible, insolent, horrid, and actual Force upon the Parliament, and well knowing what Orders and Ordinances of Parliament were thereby forced and extorted from the Houses, the next Day after, being present at the Common Council in *London*, when a Petition was there presented from some who had been active in that horrible Force upon the Parliament, and thereupon Mention being made of those Votes so obtained, the Recorder of *London* did, in the Name of the Common Council, give Thanks to those Petitioners for those Orders got by their Endeavours.

‘I am likewise to inform your Lordships, that *Mr. Glynne* was present with the Militia when those Votes were acted upon, and was also present at the Common Council when Subscriptions were pressed

^c In this Volume, p. 187, *et seq.*—^d *Ibid.* p. 274.

pressed for raising 100,000*l.* for the carrying on An. 23. Car. I.
of those Designs; which were no less than the raising of a new War, and the levying of Forces to encounter with the Army, who was then advancing this Way to defend the Houses from those traitorous and most insolent Rioters. Your Lordships cannot but be exceeding sensible that this new War must have inevitably brought the City, Parliament, and Kingdom into certain Ruin and Confusion, if it had not been prevented by the great Mercy of God.

1647.
February,

‘ It was Mr. *Glynne*’s Duty, as he was then a Member of the House of Commons, to have opposed these most violent Proceedings against the Safety and Being of the Parliament. He was obliged to this as he was a Subject of the Kingdom; and it was his Duty, as Recorder of *London*, to have advised against those Proposals, which would have brought the City to the greatest Misery of any Part of the Kingdom: But he was so far from opposing them, that those Noble Lords, who were of the close Committee for examining that Business, are able to inform you he did advance it.

‘ My Lords, the Offence being of this Nature, so destructive to the City, Parliament, and Kingdom; and Mr. *Glynne* having been thus discovered, the House of Commons do not think fit that he should be any longer continued to be Recorder of *London*, a Place of greater Concernment than to be so executed; for as the continuing of this Gentleman may be dangerous, so it doth concern the Peace of the City, and the Safety of the Parliament, especially at this Time, to have a Person of Ability and Integrity chosen into his Place; and the House of Commons having received full Satisfaction concerning Mr. *Steele*, of his good Affections to the Parliament, have ordered that he may be recommended to the City of *London* to be their Recorder in the Place of Mr. *Glynne*; and thereupon they have passed a Vote, wherein they desire the Concurrence of your Lordships.’

Mr. *Lisle* having ended, Mr. *Scot* began; and said, ‘ For the clearer Evidence of those two Af-

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

February.

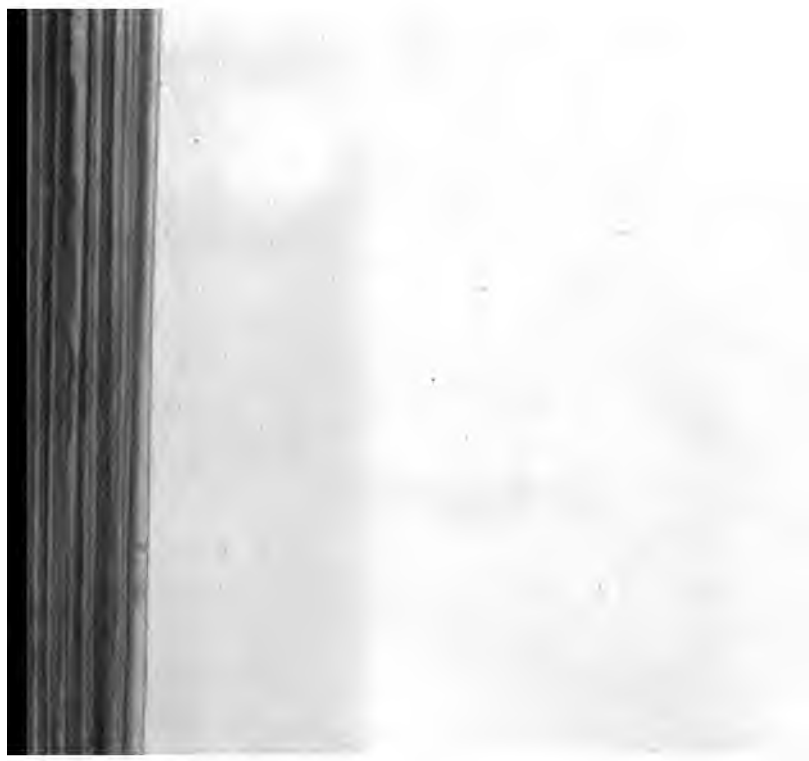
Then the Ordinance proceeds to enact, 'That all Stage Players, Players of Interludes, and common Players, shall be taken to be Rogues, and punishable within the Statutes of the thirty-ninth Year of the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, and the seventh Year of the Reign of King *James*, and liable unto the Pains and Penalties therein contained; and proceeded against according to the said Statutes, notwithstanding any Licence whatsoever from the King, or any other Person for that Purpose.'—By this Ordinance also the Lord Mayor, Justices of the Peace, and Sheriffs of *London* and *Westminster*, and of the Counties of *Middlesex* and *Surry*, or any two of them, were authorized to pull down all Stage-Galleries, Seats, and Boxes used for the Acting of Stage Plays or Interludes within their several Jurisdictions; and all such common Players and Actors were to be proceeded against as Rogues, if they still persisted to act.—Every Person present as a Spectator at any Stage Play or Interlude hereby prohibited, was, for every Time he should be so present, to forfeit five Shillings to the Use of the Poor of the Parish, being convicted thereof by his own Confession, or Proof of one Witness upon Oath, before one Justice of the Peace.—And all Mayors, Bailiffs, Constables, Soldiers, &c. to be aiding and assisting in the Execution of this Ordinance, upon Pain of being fined for their Neglect or Refusal.

The Proceedings
on the foregoing
Impeachments
adjourned.

Several Days now passed without any considerable Business done in the House of Lords, except an Order on the 10th that Sir *John Maynard* should put in his Answer to the Charge against him at their Bar in four Days Time; but the Answer from the six Lords was respited for three Weeks.

The END of the SIXTEENTH VOLUME.









UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN



3 9015 06302 6994

